### DEVELOPMENT

OF

# Hindu Polity and Political Theories

### BY

NARAYAN CHANDRA BANDYOPADHYAYA, MA, BI, PHD
Lecturer in the Depirtments of History and Anthropology, Calcutta University
Author of the Linglish Translation of Cānakya Sūtras, Kātyāyanamata-Sangraha, Economic Life and Progress in Ancient India,
Kautilya—His Social Ideal and Political Theory, etc. etc.

COMPLETE IN TWO PARTS

C O BOOK AGENCY

9, PANCHANAN GHOSE LANE,

CALCUTTA

1938

Printed
Formes 1-15 Cotton Press
16--26 Karim Box & Sons Press
27--54 Calcutta Oriental Press Ltd

### To

# THE SACRLD MEMORY

OF

the heroes that have won immortality in their battles for Hindu Social and Political regeneration, whose glories will awaken future generations to their sense of duty, whose spirit will dispel fear and bring hope for the future and will guide all in the path of justice, humanity and progress.

(

### PREFACE

Since joining the Post Graduate teaching staff, I have had to devote my time to the study of the constitutional history of Hindu India, a subject in which my interest was created by the Das Gupta, B.A (Oxon), who was our teacher in the Ţ  $\mathbf{N}$ classes of the Presidency College Since then, I had associate myself with the Caimichæl Piofessor of Ancient Indian History, and had to work with him in connection with the flist series of lectures he delivered I had also the good fortune of making the acquaintance of Mr. K. P Jayaswal of Paina whose lectures on Hindu Polity marked practically a new era in the study of the political evolution of Ancient India

While lecturing to my students, I prepared the manuscript of this book by an elaboration of a synopsis of lectures prepared for their guidance, in which I proposed to give them a brief outline of the political evolution of India, marking the different phases of development, along with the causes and circumstances that contributed to A number of such phases of evolution are clearly discernible The earliest of these was one in which tribal democracy prevailed, and this was pre-eminently so for the Vedic period Later on, there was a distinct tendency towards centialisation of authority and the growth of regal power, accompanied by a corresponding decay of popular authority This tendency became stronger every day till from the VIth Century B C, a movement for the unification of India was inaugurated The movement for unity culminated in Maurya Empire which after a time underwent dismemberment owing to various causes After centuries of disruption there was the rise of the Gupta Empire Since its downfall, a spirit of local separatism counteracted any further attempt at union and the struggle for dominion continued for ages After the fall of the Guijarapratīhāias, this came to be reduced to mere squabbles for dynastic pretensions and ultimately, the period of chivalic anarchy ended with the Mahomedan conquest.

In constructing an account of all these I have started with a consideration of the primitive institutions of the Aryan race and then passed to the age of the Brahmanas and of the succeeding one immediately before the rise of the Maurya Empire Next I have discussed the downfall of that Empire together with the effects of the foreign inroads which disturbed the normal evolution of political life and brought along with it the germs of new ideals and institu The reaction which followed and resulted in the rise of the Gupta Empire has been next discussed and then the other succeeding changes and modifications all these being brought up to the eve of the Moslem conquest of India Subsequent to that I have attempted to prove the survival of Hindu institutions during the age of Mussalman rule as well as their modification at the hands of the conquerors Properly speaking an account of Hindu political life ought to end here, but as that will not be complete without an account of the structles against the foreign conquerors which led to the subsequent resurrection of the Hindus several chapters have been added with a view to give an account of the successive revivals the nature of the Hindu Moslem problem during the earlier age of Turko-Afghan rule the ideals of the religious reformers like Nanak and Kavir who looked to the problems of politics from the humanistic and universal point of view and the dream of Chagatai Imperia lism which manifested itself in the political principles of Akbar This has been supplemented by a brief account of the policy of Aurungseb and the subsequent revolt and revival of the Hindus till their dream of restoring the Empire was shattered by a new foreign conquerer

My original intention was to discuss the evolution of political theories quite separately from the account of successive phases of political life but as this stands in the way of realising the interrelation between political movements and theories fostered by them and as it often makes us underrate the influence of one on the other. I have made it a point to discuss the lines of evolution during a particular period and to give an account of the political ideas of the period just after it. This I hope will be a better exposition and more helpful to all interested in the subject.

Both in connection with the survey of political development as well as that of political theories, I have laid emphasis on the evolutionary aspect of the subject matter. I have tried to make my own ideas clear by giving parallel illustrations from the history of other nations and these have been as a rule added at the end of chapters, separated from the general narrative. This has been done with the purpose that our ideas may not be confused by the analogy of developments elsewhere in which we find some elements of similarity but which owing to divergences of time, environment, or political instinct, nevertally with one another. It is the more so in India where social and political development has been on lines quite different from those of the West and only a careful enquity brings home to us the nature of this divergence,—so much so, that it is often difficult to render the ideas expressed by words of Indian vocabulary by using similar ones from the terminology of the West The word Polity, for instance, nover connotes the ideas contained in the word Rastra and it is doubtful whether the word Rajya can be safely rendered into English by the word State

In regard to political theories—if we are permitted to use that word with reference to Indian speculations—our difficulties are even greater. We are liable not only to be misguided by the analogies of the West but suffer also from the error of rendering. Indian words by common European equivalents. Western analogies often make us forget fundamental differences in our system and stand in the way of our representing ideas and concepts which gained ground in this country. As a result of this, it is very often difficult to be conscious of our own peculiarities and most Indian workers in this subject do nothing but read Western ideas into our history.

In undertaking the preparation of this work, I have had the advantage of being preceded by a number of previous workers Prominent among the works which have already appeared on this subject must be mentioned Mr. Jayaswal's Hindu Polity, a similar work by Dr Narendra Nath Law, and the First Series of Carmichael Lectures by Dr D R Bhandarkar Mr Jayaswal's book is a pioneer work on the subject and a store-house of valuable information for future workers On many points there is room for difference of

opinion, yet the work will hold its place for the amount of erudition displayed and the inspiring narrative of an idealistic historian Dr Liny's book is also of great value especially the chapters on Royalty and the fine retrospect appended towards the close. The First Series of Carmichael Lectures, will also be of great interest, for the sobriety of judgment displayed in it. In regard to Political Theories we have the works of Mr B K Sarkar and Dr U N Ghosal but it is unfortunate that I could not go through the more recent work by Dr Hillebrandt on the subject.

For this publication, I am deeply indebted to my old friend Mr P C Sen M So, who not only encouraged the idea of publishing it but did everything possible to enable me to do the same. In spite of all this, however the work has been delayed by the press and I regret to offer only the first part of it to my readers. The work had to meet with unforeseen difficulties and it will not be possible to offer the second part before the lapse of another six months. This part which has already been taken in hand will contain chapters on the Hindu concept of the state as well as on the principles of Indian social evolution and on Hindu political ideals. A number of chapters and footnotes will be added discussing important points regarding ancient Indian chronology, the principles of public administration and other allied matters.

NARAYAN CHANDRA BANDYOPADHYAYA

July 1927

### PREFACE TO PART II

Before offering the second part of Hindu Polity, to the public I must apologise to them for the rather unusual delay in its publication. Almost a decade has passed since the first part was issued The fault is not wholly mine since a train of adverse circumstances retaided the progress of the book through the press. I had not only to contend with a failing health but also to face the repeated breakdown of the first two printing establishments which were entrusted with the mining of the work. At times the difficulties almost appeared insurmountable, and I was tempted to give up the idea of completing it at all. But the kind encouragement of Kumai Dr Narendra Nath Law, M.A., PRS, PhD who has almost devoted his life to the cause of education and literary patronage, infused hope in me and enabled me to bring out the book before the public Some other friends of mine have also rendered valuable assistance by giving me their suggestions and going through the proof-sheets and in this connection I must mention the names of professors Amiya Kumar Sen, MA, Dr Sukumar Sen, M.A, Ph.D and Surendra Nath Goswami, M A. all belonging to the post-graduate teaching They have rendered me invaluable assistance and I cannot forget the help which I have received from them I regiet, however, that in spite of my best efforts there remain may typographical eriors and for these I crave the forgiveness of my readers

My difficulties in compiling the volume has been very great. The data and the material had to be gleaned partly from a large number of original inscriptions and partly from innumerable Sanskrit and Pali works while with regard to Southern India I had to rely on translations and the works of modern historians. In regard to certain topics like the different types of village community or the local administrative machinery of the different provinces and subdivisions of India, I am conscious that I have not been able to do full justice to the subject, The topics are very important and for their proper handling the collaboration of Indian scholars from diffe-

rent provinces is absolutely essential. Many authors and among them we find some of the greatest names—very often commit the blunder of making sweeping statements regarding India as a whole. They often neglect the time scale and the space scale and try to formulate theories not always based on reliable data but more often the product of their own imagination highly tinctured with the ideas and ideals of their own country.

Conscious of my own limitations I have made an effort to avoid all these and striven hard to come to a more rational interpretation of facts and phenomens Though I have centred my attention upon the institutional aspect of things I have made it a point to give an account of these with special reference to the innumerable political happenings and changes and from the chronological point of view as well In each chapter I have given a chronology of political events and then added a section devoted to political speculations and ideals. Having traced the causes of the political downfall of the Hindus I have referred to the conflict between them and the Muslim conquerors and incidentally I have shown how the Muslims themselves came to be subjected to almost the same political forces which had in fluenced their predecessors in India The Hindu Muslim rapproachement in the midst of the Hindu struggle for the recovery of in dependence engages my attention next though I must confess that the subject has not received the attention which it deserves more especially in an age when an acute though artificial tension exists between the followers of the two religions in India I have then attempted to give a broad outline of the political history of India upto the period of the establishment of the British as the suzernin power

Regarding the socio-political evolution of India I have emphasised the forces and factors which contributed to give it a peculiar stamp and I have tried to show that the motif was to bring harmony and social equilibrium in the midst of insuperable diversities. This interpretation though not palatable to many writers is well supported by the evidence of history. I have taken care not to be influenced by any patriotic bias nor by a desire to vindicate the social system as it now exists. Perhaps in course of time it will

change like all human institutions but with all its faults nobody can deny that it has contributed much to the peace and prosperity of the country As to the future, I am not lacking in optimism but lament the present tendencies towards discord and disruption But there are rays of hope and it is a sign of the times that the leaders of public opinion in India are doing their best to bring unity and harmony in the country while many of the Indian ruling princes like their Highnesses the Maharajas of Mysore, Baroda, Travancoie and the Maharaja of Nepal are manifesting a keen desire for the uplift of the Indian people, for the removal of social abuses and for the regeneration of India's economic life Let us hope that the combined efforts of the princes and peoples of India will succeed in creating that great common-wealth which had been the dream of the great rulers of India in the past and which in future will give her her true place in inter-national society. Be it so and be her destiny fulfilled

NARAYAN CHANDRA BANDYOPADHYAYA

P 290, Russa Road Calcutta, 25th December, 1938

## CONTENTS

## Part J

### Book One

# Preliminary

	Page
Indian Political Evolution compared with that of the West	1
Sources of Indian Political History or of Thought	9
Considerations as to the Early History of the Vedic Aryans	18
The Indo-Iranian Contact and Settlement in India	24
The Aryans and their Ethnic Environment	27
Aryan vs. Dravidian Ideals and Institutions	35
Constitution of Aryan Society and Socio-economic	
Organisation	38
Socio-Political Divisions of the Aryans .	52
Highest Political Organisation—the Jana or the Tribe	60
The Aiyan Tribes and their Early History .	65
Book Two	
Political Institutions	
Early Lingship .	83
Royal Functions and the Incidents of Regal Authority	
The Sabhā, different views criticised and its nature	
determined	108
The Samiti	115
Imperialism and Conquest	121
Book Three	
The Later Vedic Age	
The Brāhmanic Evidence, New kingdoms	125
The Rājasūya—The Vājapeya—the Aśvamedha	143
Political Evolution, Constitutionalism	156

### Book Four

### Vedic History from Epics

The Mahābharata Evidence History of the Kuru Royal Line Ramayanic Evidence	Page 177 180 210
Book Live	
Prelude to Imperialism Political Divisions Monarchies and Republics Republics and Republicanism Great Events and Movements of the 6th cen B C	215 239 255
Book 81x	
Speculations and Ideals	
Larly Political Thought	269
Social and Legal Theory of Hindu Kingship	300
Theory of Taxation	302
The Concept of the Rastra and its Ends	308
Leonomic Considerations	309
Part II	
Book Seven	
Consolidation of Empire	
Rise and Fall of the Nandas	1
Republican Life in the Western Border	5
The Maurya Empire	12
Political Ideals and Administrative System of Empire	21
Political Speculations in Kautilya	54
Note on the Kautiliya	68
Book Light	
Foreign Invasions and Resurrection (2nd Cen B C to 3rd Cen A D)	
The Polity of the Age of Conflict and Resurrection	106

	Page
Political Speculations of the Reaction .	124
Political Thought of the Buddhists	142
Book Nine	
Political Developments From Revival to Downfall	
IVth Cen A D to XIIIth Cen A D	146
	110
Book Ten	
Politics and Public Life in Mediaeval Hindu India	
The People and the Provinces	179
Kingship	184
$M_{1}$ nistry	211
Administrative Officials and Divisions	219
North India after the Guptas	227
Administrative Systems of the Deccan and	
Central India	238
Administrative System of Tamil India	243
Provincial Government .	252
Revenue and Taxation	292
Army	309
Diplomacy and Inter-state Dealings	315
Justice and Judiciary in the Hindu States	319
Police Administration	325
History of the Kingdom of Kashmir	327
· Book Eleven	
<u>.</u>	333
Political Speculation and Ideals on the eve of Downfall	999
Book Twelve	
Social and Political Evolution	
Political Decline and Fall	371
Political Downfall and its causes	373
Muslim State system	381
Hindu-Muslim Rapprochement	384
Socio-Political Evolution of India	389

#### Book Four

The Mahabharata Evidence

History of the Knen Royal Jane

### Vedic History from Epics

Page

177

History of the Kuru Royal Line Rumayanic Evidence	
Prelude to Imperialism	
Political Divisions Monarchies and Republics	215
Republics and Republicanism	239
Great Events and Movements of the 6th can B C	205
Book Six	
Speculations and Ideals	
Early Political Thought	200
Social and Legal Theory of Hindu Kingship	300
Theory of Taxation	302
The Concept of the Rastra and its Ends	308
Leonomic Considerations	309
Part II	
Book Seven	
Consolidation of Empire	
Rise and Fall of the Nandas	1
Republican Life in the Western Border	5
The Maurya Empire	12
Political Ideals and Administrative System of Lupire	21 54
Political Speculations in Kautilya	
Note on the Kautiliya	68
Book Eight	
Foreign Invasions and Resurrection	
(2nd Cen BC to 3rd Cen AD)	
The Polity of the Age of Conflict and Resurrection	106

Political Speculations of the Reaction .	Page 124	
Political Thought of the Buddhists	142	
Book Nine		
Political Developments From Revival to Downfall		
IVth Cen AD to XIIIth Cen. AD .	146	
Book Ten		
Politics and Public Life in Mediaeval Hindu India		
The People and the Provinces	179	
Kingship .	184	
Ministry	211	
Administrative Officials and Divisions	219	
North India after the Guptas	227	
Administrative Systems of the Deccan and		
Central India	238	
Administrative System of Tamil India	243	
Provincial Government .	252	
Revenue and Taxation	292	
Army .	309	
Diplomacy and Inter-state Dealings	315	
Justice and Judiciary in the Hindu States	319	
Police Administration	325	
History of the Kingdom of Kashmir	327	
Book Eleven		
Political Speculation and Ideals on the eve of Downfall	333	
Book Twelve		
Social and Political Evolution		
Political Decline and Fall	371	
Political Downfall and its causes		
Muslim State system		
Hindu-Muslim Rapprochement	384	
Socio-Political Evolution of India	389	

#### X V I

	Pag
Social Evolution	391
Class war Averted	898
Absence of Equality	401
Individual in Society	402
1 conomic Aspect	407
Political Machinery	411
Scope of State Action	414
State not an End	416
Forces in the Evolution of the State Religion	418
Nature and limits of the functions of the State	420
Influence of Social and Spiritual instincts of the Race	422
Greek Ideals Contrasted	423
Type of State Organisation and Government	425
Fpilogue	429

### Rise and Fall of Nandas.

From the sixth century BC, the chief interest in Indian History centres round the Imperialistic movement, of which we have discussed only the preliminaries Bimbisara of Magadha, who lived to a good old age, left an extensive dominion comprising Kāsi and Anga in addition to his Magadhan kingdom Towards the close of his life, he was supplanted on the throne by his son Ajātaśatru, who according to monkish accounts starved his father to death \* According to Buddhist tradition. he defeated his uncle, the Kośala king, and forced him only to confirm his possession of Kasi, but made him give his daughter Vajirā in marriage to him† Next, he waged war on the republicans of Vaiśāli, who had remained a thorn in the flesh of expanding Magadha The war, of which the prelude only is narrated in the Mahā-parinibbāna Sutta, lasted for sixteen years The Licchavis, who, according to the Nirayāvalī Sutta, were helped by the Gana-rajas of Kası and Kosala, held out for a long time. But, ultimately, the victory lay with the Magadha king, whose

† As to the war with Pasenadi of Kosala, it is described in the Samyutta-Nikāya, and in the preambles of the Bhaddasāla, Vaddhakisukara and the Haritimāta Jātakas

<sup>\*</sup> According to Buddhist accounts, Ajātaśatru, even when in the womb, was actuated by lust and greed — It is said that, when in the womb, he used to gnaw the entrails of his mother, and the latter, too, owing to the presence of the devilish embryo, used to suck the blood of her husband — The name Ajātaśatru has been derived as meaning one who is an enemy even when unborn—"Ajāta eva śatruh"

success was due to the use of new implements of war like the Mahāsilakanṭaha, and Raha musala (catapults and heavy battering rams?) The political importance of the Licchavis was broken and their prestige humbled \* (See Uvāsagadasao App pp 7 60)

According to the Purānas Ajātaśatru was succeeded by four princes of his line e.g. Darśaka Udāyin Nandivardhana and Mahānandin. According to some, Udāyin succeeded Ajātaśatru and he in his turn was followed by Darśaka, who is identified by many with the despot Nāgadasaka of Ceylon tradition deposed by his people. According to another Ceylonese Buddhist tradition this prince was succeeded by Amātya Siśunāga of whose line, his ten sons and some princes e.g. Kākavarņa ruled according to the Purānas. This theory receives support from the evidence of the Harşa-carita.

Leaving aside these disputes regarding the order or chronology of these princes we find that their reigns witnessed great political events. Probably it was during their time that the struggle with Avanti ended in favour of Magadha. The power and prestige of Avanti had been maintained for a time by some of the Pradyotas and probably they had absorbed the Vatsa kingdom Sisunaga or his immediate successors put an end to this kingdom and thus practically the whole of North India was brought under the sway of Magadha. The kingdom of Kosala had also declined with the accession of Prasenajits son, Virudhaka who had exterminated the Sākyas and probably soon after his death

As to the cames of the Vaiddian war there is difference between Buddhist and Jain traditions. According to some Buddhist account, these was a dispute over a mine of precious gens. According to the Jains the war was due to the Licensei, barbourien Ajdudaistre a step-brother Vehalls who to except from Ajdudaistra, ind taken relege with his materna grandlather Cejako, along with some clephants and a pearl meckines which Ajdudaistre overteen

Kośala came to form part of the Magadha Empire. Bud Ind p. 11)

The Saisunāga dynasty was supplanted by the Nandas. Then founder, according to the Purānas, was Mahāpadma, son of the last king of the preceding dynasty by a Sūdra woman. According to the Mahābodhi-vainsa, his name was Ugrasena, while according to a Jam tradition, this man was a barber of comely appearance who won over the affections of the queen and then usurped the throne by murdering the king and the royal children. This tradition is supported by the historian Curtius who gives his name as Argammes. (V. Smith—Early His. p. 37)

The Puranas describe the founder of the Nandas as the externinator of all Ksattriyas, like a second Parasurama and the founder of lines of Sudra kings (महानन्दिसुतवापि शूद्रायां कलिकांशज: । सहापद्य: According to the same books. he was to 25) the world and its "sole rulei" the master of This tradition of the low origin of the Nandas ekacchatra) is not, however, confirmed by the Mudrā-rāksasa account, which contrasts the high birth of the Nandas with the low origin of Candra-gupta

The Nandas figure prominently in Indian and Ceylonese tradition and their name is surrounded by a mass of fables and legends. All accounts speak of their avariciousness and their hoarded wealth If we believe in the Mahāvaṃsa tradition (Turnour, Mahāvaṃsa trkā. p xxxix), this wealth was accumulated by a great fiscal rapacity and the imposition of new taxes on skins, gums, trees and

<sup>\*</sup> Branded as a puricide almost equally with Ajātaśatru, he had signalised his vengeance on his maternal relations by massacring them to a man. The monkish accounts make his retribution proportional to his crime and attribute his end to a sudden lightning stroke. D. L. P. Atthakathā Vol. I pt. 2

stones This may be taken to mean that the Nandas imposed their ownership on mines and forests which, as we have shown, were regarded previously as having been res nullius, enjoyable by all (cf नदीयमधेशोधोगा निवास छ — Vasistha Dh. St.) They seem also to have regulated weights and measures

According to the Purāṇas, Mahāpadma ruled for 88 years and was succeeded by his sons who ruled conjointly (see Cāṇakya kathā, published by Dr N Law, v 7) One of these princes was annually selected by lot to act as the ruler while the sovereign authority was vested in all This rule for two generations lasted according to the Purāṇas for 100 years but this has been rejected by European scholars as being too long.\*

The Nanda Empire evidently comprised the whole of Northern India. The Nandas were very powerful rulers as would appear from the evidence of the Greeks who invaded the Punjab under Alexander According to Curtius, their army (of Agrammes of Prasu and Gangaridae) consisted of 200,000 infantry, 20,000 cavalry, 2000 war-chariots and elephants the number of which varied from 3000 to 4000

The closing years of the Nanda dynasty saw the invesion of Western India by Alexander Details of the campaigns of this conqueror are not of so much importance for us as the information we derive from the Greeks about the monarchical and non monarchical states which were as yet free from the influence of the Imperialistic movement in Northern India The Greek accounts open to us a remarkable and glorious chapter of Indian history masmuch as they supply us with reliable foreign testimony on the existence of a vigorous republican life in the north western border

The rejection of this hundred years duration simply on the ground of being to leag is rather unmerited. For we have at least one inctance in modern history where the reigns of two petones, father and son extended over 100 years, e.g. Louis XIII and Louis XII.—1610. 1715—48 105 years

# Republican Life in the Western Border.

From the time of Alexander's advance on the borderland of India and his entrance into the upper Kabul valley to the end of his Indian campaigns, the Greeks found a large number of Indian frontier states both monarchical and non-monarchical The following list of them gives us an insight into the political life of the border region which was as yet free from the influence of the Imperialistic movement: e. g

- (1) The Aspasioi (the Aśvakas?) in the valley of the Kunar. Its king resisted but was routed with the loss of 40,000 prisoners and 250,000 cattle.
- (2) The Guraioi.

1

- (3) South of the Aspasioi was the small non-Indian (Greek ?) city-state of Nysa
- (4) The kingdom of Assakenoi (Aśmaka ?) between the Swat and Panjkora rivers. Its capital was Massaga. Its king had an army of 50,000 horse and foot. His fortress was stormed and the garrison of Massaga put to the sword.
- (5) To the south of the Assakenoi was the state of Peucolaites (Skt Puskalāvatī) Its king Astes (Hasti?) resisted and was defeated and killed by Hephaistion

Then after their crossing of the Indus at Ohind or Und, 16 miles to the north of Attock, there were the

- (6) Kingdom of Taxla (Takṣasılā)—Its king readily joined the conqueror
- (7) The kingdom of Abhisares (Abhisare) Its king joined Alexander after some hesitation. It lay to the north of Taxila and on the eastern side of the Indus.
- (8) The kingdom of Arsakes identified with Urasa.
- (9) The kingdom of Poros (senior)—On the other side of of the Jhelum and between that river and the Chenab This king resisted Alexander but was defeated. His gallant conduct made the conqueror restore him his kingdom.
- (10) The Kathaior—(Kathas?)—Who were a confederacy of tribes and clans with headquarters at Sangala They were reputed to have been the most powerful in war They defended but were defeated and Sangala was razed to the ground

(11) The Glauganikor—a non-monarchical tribe near the Kathaioi

(12) The Gandarioi-ruled by a Poros

(13) The Adraistar—on the east of the Ravi Their capi tal was the city of Pimprama

(14) The kingdom of Sophytes—(Skt. Saubhūti) The strange customs about marriage and the killing of deformed children in this kingdom are mentioned by the Greeks Some coins of the Sophytes have been found

(15) The kingdom of the Phegelas.

- (16) The Siboi—a race of rude warriors. (R.v Sivas or Skt. Sibi.?)
- (17) The Agalasson—whose force of 45000 horse and foot resisted Alexander. They were put to the sword or sold into slavery. In the central city, they cast their women and children in to fire and rushed to death. A few thousands only were saved
- (18) The Oxydrakaı—between the Sutlej and the Chenab, identified with the republican tribe of Ksudrakas by the late Sir R G Bhandarkar
- (15) The Molloi—(Skt. Mālavas) —who were in close relations with the former The confederacy had 90,000 foot, 10,000 cavalry and 900 chariots They were defeated and their country ravaged. They were devoted to freedom and had fine very physique
- (20) The Abastanoi—(or the Ambasthas?)—whom we have already seen as a non-monarchical fighting tribe
- (21) The Xathroı—(Ksatrıyas?)
- (22) The Ossadioi—Cunningham identified them with the Yaudheyas, but St Martin identified them with the Vasāti of the Mahābhārata (Sabha Ch II 15) They are mentioned by Kātyāyana and Patañjali (for details, see, Jayaswal H Polity P 75)
- (23) The Sodrai (Sogdai?)—May be identified with the Sūdras living on the Indus already mentioned in the Mahābhārata (?)
- (24) The Massanoi occupying northern Sind
- (25) The kingdom of Mousikanos—identified with the Mucukarna of the grammarians by Mr Jayaswal (p 76). Like the Spartans, they took their meals in common,

pursued the study of Medicine and employed youths in public service instead of slaves

- (20) The kingdom of Sambos, on the western side of the Indus
- (27) The kingdom of the Presti
- (28) The Brachmanoi or the settlement of Brähmanas (Arrian VI 16 Diodoros XVII cu) Mr Jayaswal rightly identifies them with Patanjah's Brähamanako nāma Janapada (II) In the Mahābharata we find Brāhmana gaṇas like the Bāṭādhānas and Mādhyamakeyas They gave much trouble to Alexander and incited others against him. They suffered much for their patriotism

(29) The Principality of Oxykanos

(30) The State of Patala—According to the Greeks this was situated at the head of the lower Indus delta. The people had a constitution like that of Sparta with dual kings.

In addition to these there were other such states. For, Greek historians have left on record the existence of a great state on the other side of the Hapion or the Beas which was exceedingly fertile and peopled by men brave in war and living under an excellent internal government. The country was under an aristocratical form of government, consisting of five thousand councillors each of whom furnished an elephant to the State'. The story of this state (which was probably an aristocratic republic and which has been identified by Mr. Jayaswal with the Yaudheyas) and its great fighting force struck terror to the hearts of the followers of the Macedonian conqueror who were already too uneasy from the accounts of the military strength of the Nandas

No more details are necessary for our purpose, since, what we have is more than sufficient to prove the existence of an organised republican life on the north-western frontier. But for the advent of the Greeks, this scanty account would have been lost, for, with the classical tradition of monarchy as the highest political ideal, nobody would have doubted or cared to put in record the existence of popular sovereignty and of pluralistic political discipline. Unfortunate as the Indians are, the Greek evidence was explained by earlier authorities on Indian history in a quite different way. Even Mr. Mc Crindle, who had done so much in this respect, took them to mean Indian village-communities in that quarter. But gradually, they came to be properly explained. Some of the states and tribes were recognized and identified by European scholars who by their labours discovered their Sanskrit names.

Earlier indologists suggested some of the Sanskrit names of which the Greek forms were given. Jolly identified the Kathaioi with the Kathas, while the late Sir R. G. Bhandarkar explained the Oxydiachoi and Molloi as meaning the Ksudiakas and the Mālavas (Ind. Ant Vol. I. p. 29). The Sophytes were identified by M. Sylvain Lévi (Jouinal Asiatique VIII. p. 237).

In more recent times, the subject of these Indian Republics has been taken up in right earnest by Mr Jayaswal, whose articles on Hindu Polity published in the Modern Review (1913) marked practically a new era in the study of the history of Hindu political life. Since then, his work on Hindu Polity has been published and in it, the account of Indian Republics must be regarded as one of the best chapters on Indian History ever written by an Indian We refer our more inquisitive readers to go through his great work

When we come to analyse the political condition in the states, we find that—

(a) the influence of the topography of the Punjab still kept the country divided into many states

(b) monarchy of the ordinary type had become established in some states which were very close to the Madhyadeśa e.g. in Taxila the kingdoms of Poros senior and Poros younger the kingdom of Saubhtuti, the kingdom of Abhisares and in those of Monarkanos and Sambos in the south

(c) in some states, e.g. those of the Kathain Molloi, Oxy drachoi or Abastanoi republican life was still in its full vigour

(d) in the state of Patala a dual monarchy like that of Sparta was established but the kings who held command in war were controlled by the Council of Edders

The constitutions of these states varied Republics were not of the same type but show rather different phases and types of evolution. Thus the Kathaioi had an elected king The Ambasthas had three elected generals and a Council of Elders, while the Molloi and Oxydrachoi (the Malavas and Kaudrakas) sent a hundred ambassadors showing that they had no King or Consul solely vested with executive authority. Lastly in that unnamed republic, government was vested in a body so big as comprising five thousand Elders.

From all these accounts, it would appear that these states were survivals of older Vedic institutions in the outer fringe. In some of these, the original limited authority of the ruling tribe leader had given rise to hereditary monarchy through a process similar to that

in the states of the Madhyadeśa In other states, monarchy had been displaced and the principle of election had not only survived but the scope of election having been widened, a true republic had come into existence. The Dvairājya at Patala probably arose out of the political union of two ruling tribes with different reigning houses and with the act of union, joint-rule by the two houses was established

What the nature of these states was is not yet clearly known There was undoubtedly territorial sovereignty, but probably, in some of these the ruling authority was vested in a class or caste. The mention of the Sudroi or the Brachmanoi points to the same conclusion But, men of other castes were probably affiliated and were given civic rights

What the result of the Greek invasion was, we do not exactly know Some scholars have supposed that the republics ceased to exist But this is not true, for, the names of many of these occur in inscriptions and monuments for a long time. The Ksudrakas and Mālavas existed for a long time, as is borne out by Patañjali and other grammarians. We shall discuss their later history in its proper place.

#### The Maurya Empire.

Hardly had the Conqueror left the Indian soil when a great political change took place in Magadha A dynastic revolution occurred at Pataliputra and the throne of the Nandas passed to Candragupta Maurya who founded a new line of princes bearing his surname We have no detailed account of this event except the tradition in the Puranas, that the Nandas were uprooted by a Brahmana Kautilya, and he placed Candragupta on the Imperial Indian tradition regards this prince as a scion of the Nandas \* but Ceylonese accounts describe him as a prince of the Moriva clan of Pippalivana In the face of almost unanimous Indian traditions this latter story may be totally rejected. The evidence furnished by Indian tradition which regards Candragupta as a scion of the Nandas through a low-caste woman is also confirmed by the statement of Roman historians like Justin who preserves the account that Sandrocottus was low born and this goes a long way to explain the epithet Vṛṣala applied to him by Kauṭilya in The Greek account gives us the story of his the Mudra Raksasa advent to the camp of Alexander to induce the conqueror to help him in winning the Magadha throne Whether there is any truth in it we do not know, but if we believe in our own accounts, his elevation was due to the genius of Kautilya he had allied with a view to the destruction of the Nandas their common enemy The story of Kautilya's anger and

marvellous diplomacy which won over a number of hill-chiefs to the side of his protege is too well-known to be repeated here.

On the fall of the Nandas Candiagupta took then place. With the advice and help of his remarkable adviser, the traditions and governmental principles of his predecessors were not only maintained, but these formed the foundations of the greatest Imperial structure of the day. The process of conquest which had begun two centuries earlier now almost attained its completion

To the mighty Nanda Empire, Candragupta added practically the whole of western India which had as yet maintained its separate political existence. The small hill-states and republican clans of the narrow Punjab-valleys or the maccessible fastnesses came to form part of the great Empire Candiagupta's task in this quarter easy by the Macedonian invasion Alexander's made exploits did what it had already done in the Hellenic world in Greece, so in India the death-knell of tribal independence and of republican city-life was sounded. The provinces Arachosia Gedrosia and Paropanisadai (e.g. the districts Herat, Kandahar and Kabul with the Mckran coastal region) which had passed to the hands of Seleucos came to be part of the Magadha Empire Properly speaking, we have no account of the war which took place The garbled versions of Greek historians which do not preserve the story of defeat of the Seleukidan forces simply tell us of a matrimonial alliance between Seleucos and Seleucos, we are told, married his daughter to the Candragupta Hindu king and, in lieu of 500 elephants, handed over these provinces to the Maurya.

In addition to these provinces, a large part of Western India including Guzerat-Kathiawad came to be a part of the Maurya Empire. This is proved beyond doubt by the Junagadh Rock

inscription of Rudradaman executed in the second century A.D. In the East Kalinga remained independent and in regard to Bengal proper, we have but little evidence. The extreme south probably retained its independence. There is no positive evidence of its conquest except certain Tamil traditions (See Kṛṣṇasvāmy Ayengar—Beginnings of South Indian History Ch. II.) According to the Greek accounts, the Pāṇdyas and Andhras remained very powerful even in Megasthenes time

Candragupta ruled for twenty four years according to the Purāṇas and was succeeded by his son Bindusāra (son of his queen Durdharā according to the Jains), more familiar to the Greek historians by his surname of Amitrachates\* or Allitra chadas which, rendered into Sanskrit, becomes Amitra khāda or Amitrāghāta, 'devourer of enemies' Of his reign we have no authentic account except some traditions regarding his conquests (Jain Parisista parvan, Jacobi p 62 Indian Antiquary 1875, p 364) or the story of a revolt in Taxila (Divyāvadāna, p 371) The Greek accounts tell ins something about his diplomatic relations with Greek princes of Egypt and Syria and we are informed that these two kings sent two ambassadors named Deimachos and Dionysias to the court of the Hindu Emperor

After twenty five or twenty-eight years of reign, Bindusara was succeeded by his son Asoka who ascended the throne about the year 273 B C (See V Smith Asoka, p. 73) According to Indian traditions recorded in the Divyavadana and the Ceylonese chronicles his accession was preceded by a sanguinary war of succession in which he killed almost all his brothers including the eldest Sushima as well as the minister

Rādhagupta This story, though disbelieved by many European historians (V Smith, Early History, pp 155), is probably a sound one and shows how these succession disputes were one of the prominent sources of weakness to the Empire which was otherwise founded on a stronger basis. Aśoka did not venture to crown himself, probably, in view of possible rivals and of wars which probably went on, for the next four years. According to Mr Jayaswal, this delay was due to his not attaining the twenty-fifth year which was the minimum age qualification for the royal office.

Eight years after his coronation, Aśoka who styles himself "Devānām-priya" (a title assumed by his predecessors in imitation probably of Alexander who was regarded as the "favoured of the gods") conquered the powerful state of Kalinga which had maintained its independence and a strong army in spite of the rise of Magadha. In this sanguinary war, about a quarter of a million lost their lives. He also suppressed a revolt at Taxila, where probably the newly conquered tribes and princes continually strove to throw off the Magadhan yoke

From this period of his life, a reaction set in He repented of his past, his violence of conduct, his fratricidal wars, and his sanguinary conquests. He came under the influence of pacific teachings which made him look more to the welfare of humanity than any further aggrandisement or bloody conquest. The edicts which he issued for the mental and moral welfare of his subjects show his changed mentality. He became a religious devotee,

<sup>\*</sup> Alexander became a god in the eyes of his followers and his divinity was recognized by the Greeks The Egyptians regarded him as the son of Ammon (See Bury History of Greece PP 773, and 828) A similar idea that the king was the friend of Indra, existed in India and is found in some of the Coronation Hymns (See supra P 97 A V IV 22) Probably, with the influence of the Greeks, these older ideas in the epithets Indra sakhā and Indra-priya, were revived and gave rise to the title Devānām Priya

an admirer of the pacific teachings of traditional Indian morality, and, according to monkish accounts, joined the Buddhist Order There are great doubts as to whether he became a Buddhist out and out, but this much is certain that the flood tide of repentance swept away his faith in the Imperial traditions of his forefathers. Henceforth, he came to devote his life to a new type of conquest which he describes as Dhamma vijaya, hazy ideas of which had floated in the minds of preceding generations (See Kautilya Arthasastra—ch. on Abaliyasam Kautilya mentions three types of conquerors e g Dharma vijaya, Asura vijaya and Lobha vijaya.)

With Dhammavijaya a new era dawned in politics. Repentance killed the Empire. Its meaning and purpose was forgotten and henceforth the vast resources at the disposal of the most powerful autocrat of that age came to be devoted to the cause of the moral regeneration of mankind. The claims of world love predominated, and the political necessity of a vigorous policy at home and abroad was entirely forgotten. Political authority henceforth directed itself towards the furtherance of a cosmopolitan and humanistic ideal of happiness. The ideals of paternal despotism became pre-eminent and the other aspects of political existence were forgotten. The king posed as the father of his subjects and devoted his life to their moral elevation, interfered in their religion and spont the resources of the Empire in founding Stüpus and Vihäras in dedicating caves and in raising monuments to the memory of great teachers.

All these entailed undoubtedly an expenditure of vast sums of money and thereby caused a curtailment of expenditure on other items. Probably the army and the other branches of civil administration were neglected and thereby weakened the state. At the same time many of his measures which aimed at the moral

as unpopular as stringent licensing acts or the prohibition of slave labour in the nineteenth century in Europe or as the stoppage of music, pilgrimage or religious fairs, under Aurungzeb. His extravagant patronage and veneration for the Buddhist monks might have also roused the jealousy of the priesthood or exasperated the royal ministers and advisers, if we are to believe in the traditional accounts \*

Whatever might have been the causes, the Empire certainly became weak and its greatness did not survive Aśoka. On his death, (232 BC) he was succeeded by a number of princes of the Maurya line † Probably, the Empire was divided amongst his sons and this receives support from the Rājataranginī, which mentions the accession of Jalauka in Kashmira. This spirit of division was probably also accentuated by the separatist tendencies in the more recent conquests of Candragupta or the conquered principality of Kalinga ‡. The western provinces with their

<sup>\*</sup>In one of the legends, we find the account of Aśoka's gift of his empire to the Sangha which we may reject altogether We find also the high-handed though justifiable action of the minister in stopping payments for the maintenance of idling monks. We have also the story of Aśoka's gift of an āmalaka when all his treasures were taken away

<sup>†</sup> The proper order of succession after Aśoka's death is but little known. Aśoka had many sons some of whom acted as viceroys in the great provincial capitals. Prince Tivara's name occurs in the inscriptions while we find Kuṇāla or Suyaśaḥ, and Jalauka mentioned in Indian literature. Another prince, Mahendra, and a princess, Sanghamitrā, are named but in regard to the former it is difficult to ascertain whether he was a son or brother. According to Buddhist tradition, the two spread Buddhism in Ceylon.

The names of Aśoka's successors vary in the different purāṇas and in other accounts. According to the Matsya, the names are Daśaratha, Samprāti, Śatadhanvan and Bṛhadratha, while according to the Viṣṇu, the kings were Suyaśah, Daśaratha, Sangata, Sālisuka, Somaśarman Śatadhanvan and Bṛhadratha The Divyāvadāna mentions Samprati, Bṛhaspati, Vṛṣasena, Puṣyadharman and Puṣhyamitra. The Rājatarangini mentions Jalauka as king of Kashmira. Samprati is extolled by the Jains while only one King's name occurs in the inscriptions e.g. Devānām-priya Daśaratha (see V. Smith's History, second edition pp. 179-83).

<sup>†</sup> The extreme west with its centre at Taxila never became completely loyal to the Magadha Emperors They looked upon the governors and officials of the Empire as intruders and the centralised administrative system was odious to them The spirit of tribal independence was very strong All this would appear from the evidence of the Divyāvadāna We have stones of repeated revolts at Taxila both under Bindusāra and Asoka

ethnic and political differences provided a constant source of trouble to the Emperors Probably, the West was separated from the Empire under a prince of the Maurya line and the princes of Kalinga raised their head. Ambitious provincial governors also might have raised standards of revolt. The Greeks on the Indian frontier began their inroads and the Empire became weaker every day. In such a state of affairs, the last Maurya was murdered by his General Pusyamitra who founded a new line e.g. that of the Mitras or Sungas. (प्रशाद्धकेस स बस्द्र्यं विषय स्वामिन्यार्थ स्वामिन्य स्वामिन्य स्वामिन्यार्थ स्वामिन्य स्व

Pusyamitra Sunga † who became king after murdering his master, did not most probably inherit the vast domains which Aśoka held. The west most probably passed into other hands and the limits of the Sunga Empire did not pass beyond Jalandham, if we believe Tārānātha. Yājnasena probably another official of the last Maurya, raised the standard of revolt in Vidarbla‡ and Kalinga kings declared their independence though as yet they did not attain that superiority as in the time of Khāravela Ceta. A number of scholars has made this king contemporary with Pusyamitra but considerable doubts still exist. Furthermore, taking advantage of the weak condition of the Empire the

By an irony of fate this prince bore the same name as that of the founder of the dynasty which inaugurated the policy of conquest is the Bärhadrathan.

<sup>†</sup> The origin of the Sungas is rather obscure From the termination Mitte MM.H.P Estit tried to prove that they were Iranians (J.A.B.B. 100) but a few months later he revised his opinion and tried to outsiblin the fact that they were Brahmins. Their Brahmanical origin has found favour with some other scholars (see H.C. Raichaudhurf P.H. 1991. The Brahms and their descendants the Sandigayanis were brahmin tescherts undoubtedly but, there is gave doubt as to whether this princely line sasumed merely the Privarus of their spiritual (eachers as was the custom among Kestifyas.

<sup>†</sup> This would appear from the account of the Malavil Ignimitra which describes a war between the Sunga king and the rebelleader at Vidarbha. Bee V bmith a History ch. VIII

Yavanas on the Indian border began to make their inroads, and, if we believe Patañjah, they were bold enough to advance as far as Mādhyamika (Rajaputana) and farther east to Sāketa \*

This audacious leader of the Yavanas has been identified with Menander or Milinda, the hero of the Milinda-pañha or with Demitrios. We shall discuss the history of the Greeks later on, but this much appears certain that though they established themselves in Bactria and the western provinces, their inroads into Madhyadeśa were checked Probably, it was to commemorate his victory over the avanas that Pusyamitra performed an Aśvamedha ceremony

After Pusyamitra, who juled for thirty-six years, nine of his coessors ruled.† They had their capital at Pātaliputra and probably continued the Mauryan administrative system in those parts of the Empire that still remained under them. The last Sunga, Devabhūti, was murdered by his minister the Brāhmana Vāsudeva Kānva, who usurped royal power. He with his four successors ruled for forty-five years at the end of which their power ended and the last vestiges of Imperial rule were swept away ‡ The chief interest in the subsequent political history of India.

<sup>\*</sup> This Yayana invasion mentioned in the bhāsya of Patañjali was first pointed out by the late Dr Goldstücker, perhaps the best and most crudite sanskritist which the west has produced. In connection with Pānini's date, he had to investigate that of the author of the Mahābhāska and he fixed the date of the latter by showing that Patañjali was posterior to the Mauryas (P. 176 of his Pānini—where the bhāsya on V. 3. 99 is quoted) and that the invasions of the Yayanas who advanced to Mādhyamika and Sāketa and besieged these places, took place in Patañjali's time (177-180). See also V. Smith's History of India. Ch. VIII appendix

The for the names of the successors of Pusyamitra see Pargiter PP 70-71, also V Smith's Early History of India, Ch VIII The kings in succession to the founder of the line were Agnimitra whose name occurs in h erature and also on coins, Vasuyestha, Vasumitra Andhraka, Puhindaka, Ghosa, Vajramitra, Bhägavata and Devabhümi Mitra coins have been found in many places in north India but the names do not always tally with those in the Purānas Mi Jayaswal has identified some of these (J B O R S 1917 P 479) One prince Bhäga-bhadra's reign saw a Greek embassy from king Antialkidas under Heliodorus sent to the Sunga king (Besnagar Inscription)

<sup>‡</sup> The chronology of the Sungas and Känvas is rather disputed According to Sir R G Bhandarker (E H Deccan) the Sungas were reduced to the condition of "Rois faineants"

centres round the dynasties of invading foreigners who overran nearly the whole of the west and the rising power of the Andhra rulers who not only maintained their integrity in the South but checked the foreigners for a long time

by the Brähmin Känvas who acted like the Peshwas in the 18th century Hence according to him the 113 years assigned to the Sungas included the 45 years attributed to the latter This view does not find favour with historians like V Smith and they assign to the Känvas the period from 73 to 28 B C.

## Political ideals and Administrative System of Empire

The administrative system of the Empire which grew out of the process of conquest and unification was characterised by high A detailed or systematic account of the Imperial centralisation administrative machinery is lacking, but this deficiency is made good by the informations furnished by authentic indigenous and foreign accounts of the period. The main sources of such information are the Arthasastra of Kautilya and the accounts of Megasthenes and other Greek visitors of which fragments have reached us evidence obtained from both these sources, it is certain that a highly centralised Empire had arisen out of the process which had been At the present time, we have no means of deciding as to who was the real founder of the system, but it is almost beyond doubt that centralisation came as the result of the process which had begun with the VIth cen BC To this natural process, finishing touch was given by Mahāpadma, the founder of that powerful dynasty which held sway in the land of the Prasii when the bold Hellenic conqueror made his famous inroad into the Punjab This Mahā. padma, if we are to believe in the Pauranic or Buddhistic tradition, pursued a consistent policy with the object of adding to his material resources and also to remove all the remnants of local Ksattriya This would receive confirmation tribes or dynasties statement of the Puranas that he exterminated the Ksattriyas like a second Paraśurāma, and also from the almost unanimous Indian tradition that he was avaricious and created new sources of taxation (See Mahāvamsa commentary—Turnour, already referred to) Circumstances also helped him in his objectives. Thus conquest brought in wealth. The crown domains were augmented by the accession of the lands belonging to the uprooted dynasties as well as that of forest tracts or hill regions subsisting so long as no man's land between the boundaries of two independent states. Rivers too became sources of income as well as the sea when the boundaries of the Empire extended to its borders. This vast income freed the rulers of the Imperial Dominions from all popular control, which also was reduced to a nullity in view of the vast extent of the Empire and its vast military resources.

The Emperor The main responsibility of governing this vast Empire which in the days of Candragupta extended from the borders of the Persian gulf to the Bay of Bengal and included the whole of India with the exception of Kahnga and the states of the extreme south devolved on the Emperor He was if we are to believe in the Arthaéistra or the Greek accounts the sole repository of all powers and political functions. He was the supreme executive head the head of the armed forces and also the fountain head of justice (dharma-pravariaka). So far as the public administration was concerned the sole authority rested in him. The officers of government took directions from him and communicated directly with him. For his own information he had spies employed throughout the country not only to watch over the opinions of the people but to examine the conduct of all officers of the realm.

The Emperor thus was the pivot of the whole system. His life was hard and precarious. He had no moments to lose no time to while away in enjoyment. Like Medieval monarchs of the type of Philip II of Spain, or Aurungzeb of India, he was the hardest worked

man in his empire The Emperor's daily routine of which we have a sample in the Arthaśastra (See Ch on Raja-pranidh)\* shows the hard discipline of regal life and the amount of labour and care the king had to spend for his own safety or the prosperity of the Empire rose early and having finished his ablutions, purifications or devotions to the gods set to work, which absorbed the major part of the day except the few hours reserved for dinner, rest and sleep. Multifarious duties rested on his shoulder He had to consider the business of all departments, attend to the army, consult ministers, receive information from spies, and last of all, hear the complaints of his subjects or decide cases in appeal brought to his durbart Hard-worked as he was, he had no opportunity for relaxation Constant dangers awaited His hard work or ease His life was always in peril Assassins roved around, rebellious sons or concubines intrigued against him, his food was not secure from poisoning, nor was the house he rested in or the woman he confided in safe for him ‡. Constantly beset with dangers, with life always in risk, surrounded by armed troopers or female-guards, he had to devote his life to the cause of his subjects for the realisation

<sup>\*</sup> तच पूर्व दिवसवाष्टभागे रचाविषानमायवायी च भृणु यान्। दितीये पीरजानपदानी कार्याण पश्चेत्। वृतीये सानभोजन सेवेत। खाध्यायं च कुर्वीत। चतुर्थे चिरणप्रतिग्रह-मध्यचाच कुर्वीत। पद्ममे मन्त्रपरिषदा पत्रस प्रेषण न मन्त्रवेत। चारगुच्चवोषनीयानि च बुद्धात। षष्ठे खेरिवहारं मन्त्र वा सेवेत। सत्रमे चलायरयायुषीयान् पश्चेत्। श्रष्टमे सेनापितसखो विक्तम चिन्तयेत्। Then for the night—प्रतिष्ठितेष्ट्रनि सन्ध्यासुपासीत। प्रथमे रात्रिभागे गूट्यस्थान् पश्चेत्। दितीये सानोभाजनकुर्वीत खाध्यायं च। वृतीये तूर्यं घोषणे संविष्टः चतुर्थं पञ्चमी भयीत। षष्ठे तूर्यं घोषणे प्रतिबुदः भाक्तमितिकर्त्व्यतां च चिन्तयेत्। सप्तमे मन्त्रमध्यासीत। गूढ-प्रसास प्रेषयेत्।

<sup>†</sup> उपखानगतः कार्याय नामदारासकः कार्यत्। दुदेभी दि राजा कर्याकाय-विपर्यासमासगैः कार्यते। तन प्रकृतिकीपमरिवर्ध वा गच्हेत्॥

<sup>‡</sup> For precautions against these, see the chapter on निमान्तप्रचिषिः—or that relating to the control over the Harem and sons

of the 1deal which is so brilliantly expressed in the following lines of the Arthaéastra -

राची कि मतमुक्तानं यच कार्यामुगासनम् । दिवाषा इतिसास्यं च दीचितस्माभिषेचनम् । मजासंसे सुखं राचः प्रजानां च किते कितम् । माक्तिय कितं काचः प्रजासास्य प्रिय कितम् ॥

The weight of these onerous duties rested on the shoulders of the benevolent despot whose hankering after universal sovereign rule made his life more miserable than that of the meanest of his subjects.

The Emperor's duties and responsibilities kept him ever active and busy but as the task was something beyond the powers of a single man he had to take the help of his officials and servants\* of various grades These comprised the following —

- (1) Members of the consultative body or the Mantri parisat
- (2) Trusted advisers of the king enjoying his fullest confidence
- (3) Members of the Central Executive and heads of departments
- (4) The provincial administrative officials and their subordinates who wielded the functions of the central government in relation to the smaller units of social and political life
- on two important sets of advisers. One body of responsible advisers openly deliberated on important affairs of state. It was known as the Mantri parisat, which was practically the representative of the old Sabhā voicing the opinion of Elders and men of experience. The members represented (so far as it was possible in the absence of

<sup>\*</sup> सदायशाबा राजला पक्षमेश्च न नतेते। कुर्नीत संविद्यासम्बद्धां प मृथु बाल्यसम् ६—Kautilya, Text P 13

)

an elected Chamber) public opinion, though, strictly speaking, it was not a representative body. They were recruited from a body of high officials known as the Amātyas, who had come to existence already, and who from the point of view of their duties and functions, many be fairly compared with the members of the present Indian Civil Service. The number of Advisers in the Mantri-parisat was not fixed, since we find Kautilya laying down the maxim that the number of counsellors must vary with the requirements. His predecessors whose views he quotes, tried to put a limit to the number\* but Kautilya did not lay any hard and fast rule as to their numerical strength. But, he was certainly in favour of a large body as would appear from his statement that a king with a small Council was sure to decline.

While this large body deliberated in public, the king consulted at the same time his most trusted advisers, the Mantrinah who formed the highest rank of those Amātyas who had proved themselves above all temptations † Kautilya engages in a long discussion as to the number of ministers to be consulted with, but for our purpose this is immaterial

Deliberation with these bodies, according to Kautilya, was of vital importance to the king, and he even lays down the rule that absentee ministers should be consulted by means of letters. (श्रासके: सह कार्याण पश्चेत्। अनासके: सह पत्रसम्प्रेषणेन सन्त्रयेत।) When consulting with ministers, the king generally followed the opinion of the majority and Kautilya naturally is in favour of following the same

<sup>\*</sup> मिल्लपरिषदं दादशामात्यान् कुर्नीत दति मानवाः । षोडशेति वार्षसात्याः । विश्वति द्वीयनसाः । यथासामव्यं दति कौटिल्यः । द्रन्द्रस्य हि मिल्लपरिषद्वषीयां सहस्र तसादिमं यहां सहस्राचनाहः ।

<sup>†</sup> सर्वीपभाग्रजान् मन्त्रिणः कुर्वीत ।

(

This direction that the king should follow the opinion of the majority is according to Kautilya subject to the proviso that he should choose that course which leads best to success. This has given rise to a discussion relating to the constitutional position of the Ministers Council Mr Jayaswal and following him some other learned authors on Hindu Polity interpret the passage to mean that the opinion of the majority was legally binding on the king and as such the power of the king was constitutionally limited This view which is pleasing to the patriotic historian however does not stand a critical examination For the passage\* in question clearly enun ciates the principle that generally the king should do well to follow the majority or he might choose that course which led best to success The presence of the second alternative clearly takes away the binding force of the former Furthermore we must bear in mind that ministers in these days were nothing else than royal servants whose conduct was regulated by fear of royal displeasure and hope of favour as is described in the chapter on Samayacarika Moreover. the king could if he wished remove any minister or change the whole personnel of the Mantri parisat Such ministers entirely depending on royal favour were not checks on regal authority and the law of majority is not always a test of political progress, though it is accepted as a rough index to the right course owing to the concurrence of expert opinion

Central Ex-cutive Next to the advisory bodies, we pass on to the composition of the Central Executive body This comprised

पालियिके कार्य प्रक्रियो प्रक्रियरियर पाइव प्रमान्। तब पङ्गिता कार्यक्षिरिकर वा ब्रुयनन कुमान् व

That the opinion of the majority was naturally the guiding principle in those days is also confirmed by Kautilyas discussion as to the number of Mantripah to be conculted see the same changer.

a number of high officials and heads of departments who formed the "eighteen fords or the Astādaśa-tirthas". The following were the chief officers in order of precedence and importance —

- (1) The Mantri or Mantinah It is difficult to determine whether there were several Mantinah or one Mantri corresponding to our Prime Minister. In more than one place Kaufilya speaks of the Mantrinah. Probably, out of serveral such of the same rank, one man stood highest. He enjoyed a salary of 48000 panas.
- (2) The Purchita—His position was very high, though probably next to the Muntil He was regarded as a preceptor and teacher and his person was sacred Kautilya enjoins obedience to him (ch. on Mantii-purchitotpattih) and speaks of his immunity from capital punishment
- (3) The Senāpati—He was the Commander-in-chief or rather the Chief of the General Staft. His special care was the supervision of the war department. It is doubtful whether he led troops in battle
- (4) The Yuvaiāja—or the Heir-apparent, selected from the royal children and kinsmen enjoyed a high place. He held a place of honour in the Regal Council
- (5) The Dvauvārıka—or the officer in charge of the city-gate of the capital or fort, who owed a high position on account of the protection of the king being vested in him
- (6) The Antarvamsika—or the leader of the Harem-guards who enjoyed a high place owing to his important charge over the king's life and harem
- (7) The Praśāstā—This official combined in him magisterial powers along with the control of troops on the march
- (8) The Samāhartā—He was the Collector-general of revenue, who combined in his person also the superintendence over police and

civil administration. The levying of taxes, their realisation, the employment of spies, control over the police administration were all vested in him.

- (9) The Sannidhats—was the freasurer general, to whom all collections were forwarded The state funds as well as the building and care of important offices were entrusted to him
- (10) The Pradesta—The office of the pradestr combined in it the power of collecting bali-checking of accounts and some criminal jurisdiction. The pradestarsh were more than one in number

(11) The Nāyaka—He was a military leader and commanded the vanguard in war His other functions are not known

- (12) The Paura—was probably a city official—its ruling magis trate or judge His office was not dissimilar to that of the Nagara guptika of the Jatakas or the Nagara viyohalaka of the Asokan inscriptions
  - (13) The Vyavahanka—Details about this office are not known

Probably he was a judge

- (14) The Kārmāntikas—were many in number They were in charge of the manufactories or workships
- (15) The Mantri parisadadhyak, a—This compound is capable of a double interpretation. Either it meant the members of the Parisat in addition to the various Adhyaksas or merely the President of the Mantriparisat. Probably the second interpretation is a right one since we have a large number of Adhyaksas who were in charge of departments and are mentioned elsewhere.
- (10) The Dandapila—This officer was in charge of troops and probably also inflicted punishments since the word Danda is capable of both interpretations
- (17) the Durgapala—was in charge of forts Probably, more than one Durgapala existed

(18) The Antapāla—The Antapāla or Antapālas were in charge of the boundaries

From the above it is clear that the word Astādaśa-tīrthāni designated the "eighteeen grades or ianks of important officials", since it is clear from a perusal of the Arthaśāstra, that a host of officials many times more numerous than the given number existed in the state. Moreover, the list of offices given above is not an exhaustive enumeration, for in the work we find the names of many other officials.

Under the central government were a large number of state

The Departments departments, of which the more important were
the following :—

- (1) The Department for Revenue-collection under the Samāhārtā.
- (2) The Department of Treasury under the Sannidhātā.
- (3) The Department of Records and Accounts under the Aksapatalādhyaksa
- (4) The Department of Receipts of various descriptions under the Koṣādhyaksa
- (5) The Department of Mines under the Akarādhyaksa and his subordinate officers e.g. (a) Khanyadhyaksa, in charge of ocean mines
  - (b) Lavanādhyaksà—ın charge of the salt excise
  - (c) Lohādhyaksa—ın charge of base metal extraction
  - (d) Rūpadarśaka—in charge of the mint and coinage
  - (e) Suvarnādhyaksa—ın charge of department for gold extraction and the manufacture of gold articles
- (6) The Department for the control of the manufacture of gold articles under the Sauvarnika
- (7) The Department for the receipt and preservation of raw materials under the Koşthāgārādhyakṣa,

- (8) The Department for the regulation of merchandise under the Panyadhyaksa
- (9) The Department for raw materials and forest-produce under the Küpyādhyakṣa
- (10) The Department of the armoury and weapons under the Ayudhāgārādhyakṣa
- (11) The Department for regulating weights and measures under the Pautavadhyaksa
- (12) The Department for time regulation under the Manadhyaksa
- (13) The Department for the collection of tolls under the Sulkadhyaksa
- (14) The Department for manufacturing thread and cloth under the Sütradhyakşa
- (15) The Department for the cultivation of crown lands under the Sitadhyaksa
- (16) The Department for the control of liquor traffic under the Suradhyaksa
- (17) The Department for regulating the sale of meat under the Sünädhyakaa
- (18) The Department for controlling prostitutes under the Ganikādhyakṣa
- (18) The Department for maritime protection and police under the Nāvadhyakṣa
  - (10) The Department for the royal cattle under the Go dhyakan
- (20) The Department of royal cavalry and horses under the Aśwadhyaksa
- (21) The Department of royal elephants under the Hastva
  - (22 24) Departments of the army for controlling chariots,

mfantry and the general army departments under the Rathādhyaksa, Pattyadhvaksa and the Senāpati

- (25) Department of the police for issuing passports under the Mudrādhyaksa.
  - (26) Department of rural protection under the Vivītādhyaksa.
  - (27) Department of waste lands under the Sūnya-pāla.

By means of these departments and their numerous officials or emissaries the intervention of the state in all matters concerning the administration, was carried to the highest pitch With enormous resources at its disposal, the government not only took upon itself the task of protecting life and property by suppressing foreign and internal enemies, but by performing active duties for the maintenance of the lives of its subjects along with their material pros-The amount of benevolent activity may be gauged from the fact, that interference was carried into all spheres of life. that early age, the government regulated weights and measures, issued and regulated currency, regulated the sale of merchandise, the prices and profits of merchants, suppressed the sale of adulterated food-stuffs and meat, mediated in disputes relating to wages, regulated the remuneration of artisans and even fixed the fee of courtesans and public women It will be beyond the scope of the present work to give details about all these and we must content ourselves with merely touching the more important of the above topics

The adminstrative machinery which had come into being, was, as we have said, a natural elaboration of the system which had gradually developed with the growing needs of the enlarging state and its increasing responsibilities. Not only new offices were created, new departments were organised, but, older institutions were absorbed to perfect the system and to ensure the linking

of the Central Executive body with the smallest units of political existence Many of the offices which existed in the past were reorganised, the autonomous administrative system of the villages and townships was allowed to subsist while a vast body of superintending officials gradually came into existence. In this respect it is easy to see a continuity of development from the earliest period to that of the empire, and the picture of life in the Buddhist Canon and the Jätakas forms but one of transition to the Imperial system

Administrative System —The smallest unit of the village retained its autonomous existence under the Grāmika and his assisting officials chosen from the village. The Grāmika had police and criminal powers while local justice or the care of minors or the preservation of temples and public charities were entrusted to village-elders. Clusters of ten or twenty villages were placed under the Gopas. Clusters of a hundred or two hundred villages or more formed higher administrative units for police and judicial purposes. A quarter of the realm was under the Sthāmika Kharvatas Sangrahaņas Dronamukhas and Sthamiyas were placed amongst them and these were the centres of activity on the part of higher administrative and judicial officers.

For purposes of police the smallest unit the village was auto nomous. But beyond the village, the jurisdiction of the Vivitā dhyakṣa comprised the non rural and uninhabited areas. His duties were multifarious and comprised watching over the conduct of the lawless and the warning of villagers by beat of drums or through carrier pigeons. His pickets with hunting dogs, checked the progress of wrong-doers and if necessary called in the aid of state troops. Moreover, these watched over all who dared to move without passports (See sections on Vivitādhyakṣa and

Mudrādhyksa) The capture of thieves was entrusted to special officers known as the Cora-rajjukas All these officials were burdened with the responsibility of making good the loss of subjects arising out of their neglect and it is curious to note that this liability extended up to the head of the state (See Bk IV sec XIII, also Bk III Ch xvi चोरहतमविद्यमानं खद्रव्येभ्य: प्रयच्छेत्)

Justice -Next to these police regulations, the government took upon itself the duty of ensuring justice to all The judicial machinery too was re-organised The king arrogated to himself the highest judicial functions, and Kautilya describes him as the fountain-head of justice (Dharma-pravartaka Bk III ch 1) Local justice was left to the local bodies Villages, families, and corporations all retained their lower criminal jurisdiction, while higher regal courts were established in the bigger centres like the Sangrahanas Sthānīyas or Drona-mukhas, presided over by three Amātyas and three Dharmasthas Those courts in which the Dharmasthas (or those learned in the sacred law) presided, adjudicated in disputes arising out of breaches relating to the traditional branches of law and decided cases of agreement, marriage and sonship, conjugal rights, debt, inheritance, sale or division of household property, the rights of corporations, mortgage or deposit, labour and wages, joint enterprises, sale without ownership, violent crimes (sāhasa) slander (Vākpārusya), assault and ınjury (Dandapārusya) and of dice-play Perhaps, with the jurists of those days, the eighteen titles of law were regulated and the Kautilīya contains the first attempt at codification

Extra-ordinary Functions —While, the above functions were generally entrusted to the head of the state, there were others which were arrogated by the king as the result of the growth of his

prerogative and the consolidation of regal authority. As we have already said the three centuries or more which marked the struggle for political unification and administrative centralisation, saw the vesting in the hands of the king a vast amount of authority. The king gradually became the sole pivot of political existence and the logical elaboration of the ideas of the past entrusted to him the exercise of extra-ordinary powers and functions calculated to safeguard the self realisation of the individual and the removal of the conflict of classes and sections. Partly with a view to realise this ideal of benevolent despotism and partly with the object of removing obstacles the policy of interference was carried too far. No department of political and economic activity was freed from the intervention of the king.

With this object regal ordinances were issued defining the rights of the crown and promulgating laws for the punishment of those who transgressed the royal commands. The enforcement of these laws was entrusted to a higher grade of Magistrates known as the Amatyas and Pradestarah who were placed over the various sections of the Kantakasodhana department (removal of thorns). It would be out of place to go into the various details but we simply note down the various spheres of their activity. The main sections of the Kantaka-sodhana dealt with the following—e g.

(a) regulated the guilds and laid down their duties and profits (see chapter on Kāru raksanam). This was done with a view to check their high handedness. In the Jātakas we find the king interposing in settling the disputes of guilds.

(b) the regulated markets and the sale of merchandise. In addition to the Panvadhayaksa, there was the Samsthadhyaksa, who regulated the price and profits of merchants stopped cornering and adulteration of articles of consumption, prevented attempts at

the lowering of the wages of artisans or the tendency to make stocks of goods without license

- (c) Took care to check famines, pestilences, floods or removed the depredation of wild animals, snakes and pests
- (d) detected youths with criminal tendencies or apprehended house-breakers, adulterers makers of counterfeit coins, held post-mortem examinations in cases of sudden death, applied judicial torture to make suspects confess, and thoroughly watched over criminals
- (e) detected dishonest officials, clerks judges and regulated jails and lock-ups
- (f) assessed and realised fines in lieu of corporal punishments in offences punishable with death or mutilation
- (g) administered the new laws punishing murder, treason, libels, breaking of dams, poisoning, or adultery on the part of women.
- (h) judged various cases of violence to women including rape, adultery, unnatural intercourse (Kanyāprakarma)
- (1) tried various other cases e g violation of a Brāhmana's purity, houses-breaking, delinquency on the part of officials, collision or injury to passers-by in streets, incests of the worst description, outrages on nuns, unnatural offences or violations of social order

The above heads clearly show the extent of regal intervention in matters of social and economic life and the high efficiency of the administrative system which existed in India in the IVth century BC The king's position and safety was guaided by the law of Treason which bears a close resemblance to that which existed in England under the Plantagenets The stringentgame-laws or those of the forest equally show the extent of the regal prerogative. Interference was carried into other spheres of life i e the social and religious life of the people which had hitherto been free from any intermeddling on the

prerogative and the consolidation of regal authority. As we have already said, the three centuries or more which marked the struggle for political unification and administrative centralisation, saw the vesting in the hands of the king a vast amount of authority. The king gradually became the sole pivot of political existence and the logical elaboration of the ideas of the past entrusted to him the exercise of extra-ordinary powers and functions calculated to safeguard the self-realisation of the individual and the removal of the conflict of classes and sections. Partly with a view to realise this ideal of benevolent despotism and partly with the object of removing obstacles the policy of interference was carried too far No department of political and economic activity was freed from the intervention of the king

With this object regal ordinances were issued defining the rights of the crown and promulgating laws for the punishment of those who transgressed the royal commands. The enforcement of these laws was entrusted to a higher grade of Magistrates known as the Amatyas and Pradestarah who were placed over the various sections of the Kantakaśodhana department (removal of thorns). It would be out of place to go into the various details but we simply note down the various spheres of their activity. The main sections of the Kantakaśodhana dealt with the following —e g.

(a) regulated the guilds and laid down their duties and profits (see chapter on Karu raksanam). This was done with a view to check their high handedness. In the Jütakas, we find the king interposing in settling the disputes of guilds.

(b) the regulated markets and the sale of merchandise In addition to the Panyadhayaksa there was the Simsthadhyaksa, who regulated the price and profits of merchants stopped cornering and adulteration of articles of consumption, prevented attempts at

the lowering of the wages of artisans or the tendency to make stocks of goods without license

- (c) Took care to check famines, pestilences, floods or removed the depredation of wild animals, snakes and pests
- (d) detected youths with criminal tendencies or apprehended house-breakers, adulterers, makers of counterfeit coins, held post-mortem examinations in cases of sudden death, applied judicial torture to make suspects confess, and thoroughly watched over criminals
- (e) detected dishonest officials, clerks judges and regulated jarls and lock-ups
- (f) assessed and realised fines in lieu of corporal punishments in offences punishable with death or mutilation
- (g) administered the new laws punishing murder, treason, libels, breaking of dams, poisoning, or adultery on the part of women
- (h) judged various cases of violence to women including rape, adultery, unnatural intercourse (Kanyāprakarma)
- (1) tried various other cases e.g. violation of a Brāhmana's purity, houses-breaking, delinquency on the part of officials, collision or injury to passers-by in streets, incests of the worst description, outrages on nuns, unnatural offences or violations of social order

The above heads clearly show the extent of regal intervention in matters of social and economic life and the high efficiency of the administrative system which existed in India in the IVth century BC The king's position and safety was guaided by the law of Treason which bears a close resemblance to that which existed in England under the Plantagenets The stringentgame-laws or those of the forest equally show the extent of the regal prerogative. Interference was carried into other spheres of life i e the social and religious life of the people which had hitherto been free from any intermeddling on the

part of the king Indeed, this arose not out of a desire to regulate religious belief but with a view to check indiscriminate mendicancy which had been the immediate consequence of the monastic propaganda. As a result of the latter, society undoubtedly suffered from many ills and the state too suffered inasmuch as social life was jeopardised. Women with children were reduced to destriction owing to husbands leaving the home and their maintenance devolved on the king as Parens patrice. Family life was similarly broken up by the wife becoming a nun; young girls were often led away from domestic life and in many cases strayed into the path of vice.

To check these evils the political authority was compelled to intervene as is proved by the regulations of the Arthasastra We are expressly told that mendicancy on the part of a young man who left his home leaving his wife and children unprovided for was a punishable offence. According to the Arthasastra regulations a man accused of such an offence was punished with the first amerce ment while a similar punishment was inflicted on any one who induced a woman to take to orders. (सुमञ्जवाय प्रवजिष्टा प्रचिवा । प्रवासमाभिवाय प्रवजि । प्रवास प्रविचा । प्रवास प्रविच्या । प्रवास प्रवच्या । विद्याय प्रवचित्र । विद्याय प्रवच्या । विद्याय । विद्याय

The government also discouraged mendicancy on the part of the lower classes and forbade mendicants (except the Brah manical Vānaprasthas) to have any settlements or organisations in the newly settled villages on the crown dements (वामप्रमाहना प्रविश्विमान प्रमाहान्य महुए नाम्य जनपदसुपनियोगे। न च तहाराम

विद्वारार्थी: याचा: स्यु:) At the same time, Sūdra (heterodox ?) mendicants like the Sākyas and Ajīvikas were prohibited from usurping the dues and privileges of the Brahmacāris who were entitled to fees and feeding on srāddha ceremonies

The above shows clearly how the state was gradually advancing its claims to interfere in matters of ethico-religious discipline. Of course, in earlier days this interfering tendency was of no great moment and the anti-monastic legislation shows the popular tendency against the evils of the monastic propaganda. They were, however, the germs which under Aśoka were elaborated into that bid for ecclesiastical supremacy too well-known to be mentioned here.

Taxation —While the king's power rose to its zenith and the government took upon itself the burden of furthering the material interests of the subjects in all possible ways, the expenses of maintaining the highly organised administrative machinery were derived from the enormous sources at its disposal As we have already pointed out, the series of successful wars and conquests added to the sources of regal income The vast areas of unclaimed forest-land came under the direct authority of the crown together with all its mineral and vegetable products  $\operatorname{The}$ land-tax was raised from the 1 or 10 mentioned in some of the Dharmasūtras (see Gau Ch X and Sāntı Ch 67) to one sixth or one fourth or even to one third in times of emergency. The old Bali continued to be regularly levied Excise duty on liquor were imposed (as proved by the evidence of some Jātakas) Tolls were levied on articles of merchandise and the amount was enhanced Taxes were imposed on artisans, mechanics, or fishermen and even those who derived their living from the exploitaion of mines, forests, hills or other unclaimed natural sources, though these as well as

Cf Vasistha-D S.

certain classes of poor earners were exempted by the Dharmasutras Forced labour became a source of income and a regal privilege Monopolies were established. A number of occasional taxes and dues which had arisen through custom were legalised and enforced Road-cesses or those on animals of burden were imposed and last of all the state derived vast sums from the failure of heirs the ownership of lost articles fines levied in law courts and other sundry items. We have some information on these heads from the Greek accounts and occasionally the Jatakas point to the growth of some of these taxes. But by far the greatest source of information is the Arthaéastra which enumerates the following main sources of revenue e.g. urban areas, land mines rivers and irrigation, forest-cattle and commerce

(1) Land Tax—included the various items mentioned in the Arthaéastra \* e g tax paid in cash by the whole village or in kind known as the Pindakara, or Sadbhaga, various other occasional dues which included presents to the king (aupāyanska) nazars to him on the birth of an heir (utsanga of which we have a forerunner in the khiramāla of the Jātakas) requisitions exacted from villagers for the army on the march (Senābhaktam). In addition to these, there was the share of grains from cultivators who tilled rojal lands the produce of crown farms taxes levied on those who used the water of canals together with the interest on grains lent and various

The land policy of the hantilyan government is an interesting study and has given rise to great divergences of opinion. Many scholars mainly accepting a contemporary Greek tertimony have regarded hand as royal peoperty But a careful analysis of the Arthusistra evidence shows that as yet there was no not theory The Brakandeys was enjoyed by the fivines who were empowered to make gift and sold it provided the land did not got the unpurelized class. The A line is landsold re were halders of fresholds and were the covers of land held by hereditary right. They were follower in the crown land or the royal doments and pulk reat. They were not exceed to the crown land or the royal doments and pulk reat. Villages to held line belonging to the community as a whole. The Karada tenants held for life and were now empowered to make a gift or sale of their plots

other such items. For the realisation of land-tax, land was classified according to its productivity, fertility and non-dependence on the water of canals or wells. The productivity was ascertained first and then the royal share fixed. In towns probably taxes were levied on houses and house-owners.

II. Mines and Monopolies—Next to land-tax, mines and monopolies brought a vast income All mines were royal property and were worked by officers under the Akarādhyaksa with his assistants in charge of gold mines (Suvarnādhyaksa), or the manufacture of base metals (Lohādhyaksa) The government had also a monopoly of the manufacture and sale of salt (under Lavanādhyaksa).

III Commerce in the produce of royal farms and factories. This was a great source of income The manufacture of gold and silver was under the state supervision

IV Forests—These also produced considerable income Probably, the earliest to impose royal rights on forests and forest produce were the Nandas. Forest officials zealously guarded regal rights and stringent game-laws punished encroachments on these

V Customs, tolls, etc —These again proved a good source of revenue Sale markets were under royal supervision and taxes were levied on the sale of articles. Nothing could be sold except in markets. Duties were levied on merchandise coming from abroad (See chapter on Sulkavyavahāra).

VI Taxes on occupations, professions, guilds and wage-earners.

—Artisans had to pay taxes in addition to working for the king for specified periods. Guilds of workmen probably paid in a lump. Similarly, owners of shops had to take out a license and to pay dues. Slaughter houses had to pay to the king. A portion of the income of courtesans went to the king.

VII Excise duties on liquor was also a source of revenue Wine-

houses were controlled as in the time of some of the Jatakas by royal officers and the preparation of liquor (except on some specified days) was a royal monopoly—Gambling houses or those for dicing also brought some income to the royal coffers

VIII Income from fines levied on offenders condemned to pay fines or fines in hen of sentences of death or mutalations

IX Income from property lapsing to the king on failure of heirs lost articles, treasure-troves etc

- X. Income from various miscellaneous items e g
- (1) Taxes on maritime ports
- (2) Ferry-dues
- (3) Passports for moving from one place to another
- (4) Tax on animals of freight or loads
- (5) Road-cesses

Lastly, in addition to these, villages supplied fighting men materials, or labourers or otherwise served the king

These sources enriched the royal coffers and made the king almost free from popular control. In addition to these the king was empowered to ask additional taxes or enhanced rates of payment in times of emergency. These were known as Pranayas and may be favourably compared with the 'Benevolences exacted by medieval English kings. The ways of realising them are described in detail in the chapter on Kosabhisangarahanan

Character of Administration—The duties which in lieu of these the regal government took upon its own shoulders, were an ample return for the people's allegance. They were not merely those of police but comprised almost everything which men could expect of a political organisation. Figual protection for all, the furtherance of everyone's objective in life and an equitable opportunity to every class section or individual—was what the State

afforded to the ruled. The kingly government held out hopes to all, and did everything to help its subjects in realising their ends in life It certainly did not believe in the dogma of equality and as such did not try to sweep away the institutions and traditions of the past. Yet, it followed the principles and maxims of the past too closely to recognise the right of the subject to live and the duty of the state in helping him to live Elsewhere we have discussed the character of the government and its functions, but before we go on to other topics, we advance some more facts with a view to prove the decidedly paternal character of the government which, as it grew into being, compensated the subject for the gradual decay of older democratic ideals and principles. The dominance of the ideas of governmental paternalism apparent not only from the duties which the Arthasastra inculcates but also from the main heads of expenditure to the former, the theorist repeatedly calls upon the ruler not only aid to the various arts and industries, to maintain render the widow and the orphan but to treat subjects as if they were the king's children (तान पितेव अनुग्रङ्गीयात्—see Ch on Janapadanivesa, Upanipātapratīkāra & Nāvadhyaksa etc.) The heads of expenditure disclose clearly the activity of the ruler to further the prosperity of the subject. Prominent among these, may be mentioned the following items e.g.

- (1) Active aid to agriculturists by granting them land for life, loans of corn and money at nominal interest, and remission of taxation in times of distress (Ch. on Janapada-niveśa).
- (2) Aids to traders by helping them to import foreign manufactures or finding out markets for their goods (Ch. on Panyā-dhyaksa).
  - (3) Pensions and grants to Srotriyas, lay-teachers of science,

skilled artisans and those who taught the science of vartta (Ch. on Bhrtyabharanīyam)

- (4) Maintenance of the aged, the infirm, the widow without children and the orphan—not to speak of the wives and children of those officers and servants of state who laid down their lives for the king
- (5) Active measures for famine-relief and medical aid in times of epidemic and pestilence. In regard to the former, we have not only periodical distributions of grain and food, the introduction of new plants emigration, and various other temporary measures but we find an alertness on the part of the government to do everything in its power. Half of the grain annually produced in royal farms or received from subjects was kept in reserve for the use of the people in times of distress (पत्रीक्ष स्वेत पायद्य सामयानाम्—Ch on Kosphāgārādhyaksa)

Economic Considerations - From all that has been said about the details of the administration the sources of taxation or the items of expenditure, it will be easy to determine the character of the state It is apparent that the rulers of those days centred their main attention upon the material basis of existence In their hands the socio-economic ideas of the Vedic period attained their complete realisation and the concepts of sacerdotalism passed to the background As wealth and material resources were the basis of everything the greatest attention was paid to strengthen the liands of the government by tapping as much as possible the natural sources of profit and by augmenting the revenue of the king in all possible ways Directly and indirectly the government interfered in the economic activities of its subjects the main object of this policy being to enrich the central authority and to protect the exploitation of the masses by the capitalistic sections. In return,

it took up many of the duties of a culture state and thus came to the relief of the subject. To sum up—

First of all (as we have shown in the chapter on taxation), many of the unclaimed natural sources of wealth like the forest and the mine were appropriated in the name of the King.

Secondly, active measures were taken to produce many of the necessaries of life in the royal factories and these were sold for the benefit of the people. In some cases, these became government monopolies (e g the manufacture of salt, intoxicating liquors and mineral products), while in other instances they were placed under government control (e g. the manufacture of gold articles under the Sauvarnika). In most cases the products of government factories passed to the market and enjoyed a sort of preference

Last of all, the government not satisfied with direct production, reserved to itself some extraordinary powers of supervision and control in the interests of the King and the community cases of neglect to agriculture, the state reserved to it the right of temporarily taking over the cultivation of fields. It protected, moreover, the producer or the wage-earner from capitallistic tyranny. Thus, as stated already, prices and profits were laid down, weights and measures were regulated, cornering was checked, usury was regulated, associations of merchants or other capitallistic bodies suppressed, and last of all, the guilds were brought under control In some of these we find and their extravagant claims put down but the logical continuation of a policy, the germs of which we easily discover in the Dharmasūtras (where we find the denunciation of cornering and usury—See Vasistha and Gautama DS. . chapters on Rājadharma) As part of a socio-economic legislation, we find also the promulgation of edicts against slavery or child labour. In the chapter on Dāsakalpa, we note the slave's rights to mherit property, his

redress against his master's cruelty and his right of demanding manumission. We find also the law that no children were to be sold, nor any below eight years put to hard work

State Socialism?—These efforts on the part of the Maurya government mark a remarkable epoch in the history of political and economic thought in antiquity. Indian statesmen and theorists were ushering in an era of social reform otherwise unknown and unrivalled in the ancient world and they were not only anticipating but tackling with problems, now made so prominent before us by the socialistic thinkers of the day. Every unbiassed observer is sure to find in all this not only an attempt to check cap tallistic exploitation, but also a clear step towards the appropriation—if not complete nationalisation—of many of the instruments of production in the interests of the governed

The Arthasastra government has consequently been charac terised by some writers as an attempt at state socialism. This has gained support from some quarters while others have riduciled it as a mere patriotic effort by harping on the despotic nature of royalty and the lack of details on the items of expenditure which were left more or less to the moral discretion of the King. Between those two extreme views it is difficult to ignore the significance of the ideals of the Arthasastra writer which approach the social scheme put forward by the modern socialist. Thus, in common with the latter the Indian theorist laid down the following principles. As stated already he inculcated

(a) that the protection of the subjects life and material prosperity was the prime consideration of the government or of the state which existed for the benefit of the ruled

(b) that this being the primary object of the state, it had the right of appropriating natural resources for the common benefit

and of checking the exploitation of the masses by capitallistic sections.

While these two are the cardinal maxims of a modern socialist, he differs in many respects from the Indian thinker He harps constantly on the punciple of social equality and denounces all sorts of privilege, social or economic He has, moreover, little faith in kingly government and is intent upon reorganising the social fabric on the sole basis of equitable remuneration of labour to the entire exclusion of capital or privilege. Here we meet with a fundamental difference, and an impartial examination shows clearly that the Indian system had no faith in equality (which was made impossible by the existence of ethnic differences side by side) and that there was no attempt to put down privilege which was to the Indian the basis of social existence In India, moreover, there was only a desire to suppress capitallistic exploitation but neither an attempt nor a desire for exterminating capitalism protected, but there was never an attempt to make labour the sole basis for remuneration

The word socialism, again, is too vague and has been applied to designate various types of social idealism and as yet it remains undefined. In its loose sense it has been applied even to the despotism of Napoleon III in France or the centralised autocracy of the German empire under the iron chancellor Bismarck, who ushered in an era of social legislation to win over the working classes to the Empire.

The socialism of Kautilya, if at all we are justified in applying that expression with regard to his ideals, was quite a different thing. He was a believer in monarchy and in progress under the King's government. He was not averse to social inequalities or privileges. The utmost that he advocated was to transform a regal

government into an organisation for social reform and welfare. He strengthened the hands of the King by the appropriation of the resources of nature, yet he never advocated the abolition of private property or the complete nationalisation of all the instruments of production. Monopoles existed as in many despotic systems and they were allowed to subsist. With all this however, he was not without faith in private effort. Co-operation of all sections and classes with duties and profits regulated under the paternal care of the King's government was all that he advocated.

On all these counts we are averse to borrowing from the ter minology of the West and prefer to regard the Kautilyan system as a Paternal government which was to lead to the harmonious co-operation of classes and to social solidarity—an ideal nearly approaching that of the early Utopians who advocated socialism We cannot say what would have been its logical culmination if the empire lasted for a few centuries but, anyhow, inspite of the wreck of the empire its ideals influenced political life deeply

Political and legal aspect of the Monarchy —Having discussed the character and the ends of the state we go on to discuss the legal and political aspects of the monarchy —On these heads too mis conceptions exist and many have attempted to prove the preponder ance of theoremic ideals —Their views are, however open to serious objections and it is easy for all to see that the theorists of the Artha fastra school including Kautilya made political necessity the sole justification for monarchy —Kautilya nowhere speaks of the divine rights of the King or the parallelism between the King's functions and those of the divine rulers, but constantly reminds the King that protection was his primary duty and loyalty was his most valued asset —Theoretically, too the King derived his right of taxation from the protection he granted to subjects and this contractual nature

of royalty is apparent from the King's liability to make good the loss of his subjects caused by theft or robbery. Undoubtedly, many of these ideas were inherited from the past and continued to have acceptance even when royalty became all-powerful

Monarchy came to be associated with a number of legal privileges, which are apparently derived from those found in the Dharmasūtras. As before, the King had the following privileges in the Arthaśāstra:—

- eg (a) He could not be made a witness (राजन्योतियग्रामस्तकवर्जं Kan P 175)
  - (b) His property could not pass to others by prescription (..... न भोगेन हरेयु ···राजञ्जोतियद्व्याणि च Kau. P 191).
  - (c) He had the escheat to property without herr ( সহাযাহন বালা ছবন্)
  - (d) He was entitled to all lost or stolen articles without claimants ( नाष्टिकं च राजधम्ये स्थात् Kau P. 190).
  - (e) He was entitled to the service of artisans for specified periods ( ৰিছি )
  - (f) He was entitled to treasure-troves ( ग्रतसप्तसादूड राजगामी निधि: Kau P 202).

Law of Treason.—While regal authority was thus strengthened, the King's safety and personal security as well as reputation were ensured by the promulgation of the Law of Treason The development of this is very interesting and what impresses us most is the strange parallelism between the Kautilyian laws of treason and the provisions of the same law under the Plantagenets. The law of treason was remakable on account of the cruel punishments awarded and on account of the fact that it did even override the privileges of order. Under the head of treason we have a number of offences e.g.

(a) coveting the kingdom (b) violation of the purity of the harem, (c) incitement to rebellion of forest-tribes or other enemies (d) injury to fortifications, the country or the army (राज्यकासकामन्त पर प्रधर्षकामटम्यमिल्लोतमाञ्चकंद्गैराष्ट्रदण्डकोपकं वा गिरोज्ञस्त-प्रादीपिकं घायतेत्। ब्राह्मणं तमप प्रवेशयेत Kau P 227)

The punishment for offences under all these heads was the cruel death of the culprit by burning In the case of the Brahmin he was simply thrown into water

Punishments were also inflicted on those who slandered the King or divulged his secret Their tongue was cut off

Royal rights were also jealously guarded and Game laws as stringent as those of the Normans came to existence

The system under As oka -Under Asoka the same system was continued by the monarch who took as we know from his inscriptions, the pompous title of Beloved of the Gods (Devanam mrua Privadarsi) + His surviving records and monuments show that his vast empire was divided into at least four viceregal domains in addition to the region directly under the King with capital at Pataliputra These viceroyalties had their head quarters at Taxila, Ujjain, Suvarnagiri and Tosali and were in charge of Kumaras of the royal blood or of officials bearing the title of Mahāmātra or Ārva putra (Auapula)

The Viceroys were supposed to rule according to Imperial orders,

By the Statute of Treasons 135 (... Edward III St 5) the f 41 wing offences were regarded as constituting treason -

<sup>(</sup>a) Compassing the death of the King Queen or the heir to the Throne
(b) Violating the Queen the kings ellest unmarried dan hier or the wife of his

einess son

(c) Levving was arrainst the King in his realm or adhering to his fees

(d) Counterfeiting his seal or moner or importing fairs in may

(e) Slaying the Charollor Treatmer or Judicia; in the Useharge of their duty

According to some the title was also assumed by Afaka a predecestors. It is also
Interesting to in that Tripadarian is an opithet used by the author of the Multirikyans to describe Cambragopta Maurya.

but in reality exercised considerable personal authority. In the big cities Town-councils or Assemblies existed but more often they were powerless against the Viceroy. In many provinces discontent existed as we can easily gather from the Kalinga edicts, and if we are to believe in the Divvāvadāna, the westernmost viceroyalty was almost in perpetual revolt, this being due to the ethnic differences of the Western peoples and the survival of their republican tradition.

The Prādeśikas\* were probably subordinates of the Viceroys and under them were minor officials like the Rajjukas (Rājuka) and Yutas. The Rājukas; seem to have exercised magisterial powers as in the Arthaśāstra, while spies (Prativedakas) remained as active as before. Perhaps, their activity increased with the religious propaganda of Aśoka, and the creation of the Strīmahāmātras empowered them even to propaganda of the people, especially the richer and more influential class.

The Dharma-mahāmātras were an innovation of the King, and, as we know from the records, were entrusted with the superintendence of the moral education of the people. We have no evidence eitherway, but it is not improbable that they were very unpopular with the orthodox sections who resented royal interference in religion.

The Parisā (or the Parisat) was however maintained by Aśoka, though the rulings of the Parisā had no binding force and under Aśoka most probably its real power was almost nil. The king remained legally irresponsible. The tide of kingly prerogative

† Rājuka or Rajjuka comes from Rajju or cord to bind with Probably, the rajjukas combined the duties of land survey with criminal justice and award of punishment. The

Arthasastra mentious the cora-rajjukas,

<sup>\*</sup> The Prādešikas were, according to Kern and Senait, local governors Bühler regarded them as local princes under the imperial suzerain authority. Thomas derives the word Prādešika from Prādeša (report) and inclines toward the identification of these with the Pradestri

had been waxing high since the sixth cen BC. The influence of foreign ideals\* added but to its vigour and power Already practically absolute, regal authority became the more so when under the influence of decayed Hellemsm the sacerdotal idea (absent in the Arthasastra) was revived and on the model of the Greeks the Maurya Emperor took the style and title of Beloved of the Gods . c. 'King by the grace of the gods" Foreign historians see in it only the influence of Divine Kingship and regard it as the outgrowth of our peculiar Indian mentality In reality however it shows the influence of foreign ideals, and the truth of the statement becomes apparent when we remember that Alexander was defined by the decayed Hellenes as 'the son and chosen of Apollo' and that in the 2nd cen BC a Selucide actually assumed the pompous surname of 'Theos

The Dharma idealism; added but another invigorating strain. and to the historian the reign of Asoka marked the height of regal despotism-a fact which is odious to many Indians Yet if that was the climax it marked also the decay. The Empire reached its zenith undoubtedly but from the very moment of its height the downward march began. The Imperial fabric began to feel the influence of disrupting forces. With the influence of Dharma, came the opposing tide of repentance and the vast edifice which had been raised by a process of conturies fell to the ground

Republican Life and its survival-While the empire rose to its zenith, and reaped the advantages of the Greek conquest of the borderland the republics had a hard time for their life and pro-

The style of Adok a edicts is simil r to that of the Persian king. This as well as other to amblenem between the Persian and Indian styles of architecture led Pr. Spooner to believe in the great influence exerted by the Persian meanchy on the Ms ray Tappier 1.48 km a creation of officials it retigious purp were was ten the keylest serped to the promoting time of the Artholists. There too we have the the Persiation of pentil Lawrantinet non brahmin ascritics.

perity Menaced by the foreign conqueror in their rear, they had to submit, and when the Yavana power declined they transferred their allegiance to the Emperor of the Easterners Probably, timely saved them from annihilation and gave sulmission a lease of life on conditions of submission and military aid. Their value was understood by the Empire-builders of the century and Kautilia a firm believer in monarchy, went so far as to extol the value of republican aid to a conqueror aspiring after universal dominion. In his eyes, their help was superior in value to the gain of an army or an ally (सञ्चलाभी दण्डमित्रलाभानामुत्तम: Kau. Bk. XI. ch 1), and he calls upon the conqueror to secure the services of these corporations. In short his policy was similar to that pursued by the kings of Mediæval France towards the republican cantons of Switzerland

In the days of Kauţilya, a large number of republics existed, the more important of them apart from those of the west being the Kambojas and the Surāstras who lived by agriculture or by the occupation of aims (like the members of the Mediæval military orders or the republican Swiss in French service) while the corporations of the Licchavis, Vṛjis, Mallas, Madrakas Kukuras, Kurus and Pañcālas lived under chiefs claiming the title of "Rājā."

From the meagre details preserved in the Aithaśāstra, we know little about the constitution and government of the Sanghas. But this much is clear that the Sanghas possessed seals or badges, issued money and had a central treasury. Some families were distinguished by greater privileges and had the distinctive title of Rājā (Rājaśabdin?) These families possessed great influence within the Sangha and there seems to have been great rivalry among such families. The position of these families in not dissimilar to that of

had been waxing high since the sixth cen BC. The influence of foreign ideals added but to its vigour and power Already practically absolute, regal authority became the more so when under the influence of decayed Hellenism the sacerdotal idea (absent in the Arthasastra) was revived and on the model of the Greeks the Maurya Emperor took the style and title of Beloved of the Gods' i.e. 'King by the grace of the gods'' Foreign historians see in it only the influence of Divine Kingship and regard it as the outgrowth of our peculiar Indian mentality. In reality however, it shows the influence of foreign ideals, and the truth of the statement becomes apparent when we remember that Alexander was defied by the decayed Hellenes as 'the son and chosen of Apollo, and that in the 2nd cen BC a Selucide actually assumed the pompous surname of Theos

The Dharma idealism† added but another invigorating strain, and to the historian the reign of Asoka marked the height of regal despotism—a fact which is odious to many Indians. Yet, if that was the climax it marked also the decay. The Empire reached its zenith undoubtedly, but from the very moment of its height the downward march began. The Imperial fabric began to feel the influence of disrupting forces. With the influence of Dharma, came the opposing tide of repentance and the vast edifice which had been raised by a process of centuries fell to the ground

Republican Life and its survival—While the empire rose to its zenith, and reaped the advantages of the Greek conquest of the borderland the republics had a hard time for their life and pros-

The style of Adok's edicts is similar to that of the Per ian King. This as well as other re-emblences between the Persi n and Indi n styles of architecture led Pr Spooner to believe in the great influence exerted by the Per ian momenthy on the Maurya Empire 7 Adoks a creation f officials for relations purposes we also the logical secured to policy of interference in the Arthalist. There too where the Pevatishrya's and she promuly shown of pend laws grinst non-brahmin ascetics.

perity Menaced by the foreign conqueror in their rear, they had to submit, and when the Yayana power declined they transferred their allegiance to the Emperor of the Easterners. Probably, timely submission saved them from annihilation and gave them a lease of life on conditions of submission and military aid. Their value was understood by the Empire-builders of the 4th century and Kautilya a firm believer in monarchy, went so far as to extol the value of republican aid to a conqueror aspiring after universal dominion. In his eyes, then help was superior in value to the gain of an army or an ally ( महत्तामी इण्डिमित्नामानामुत्तम: Kau. Bk. XI. ch. I) and he calls upon the conqueror to secure the services of these corporations. In short, his policy was similar to that pursued by the kings of Mediæval France towards the republican cantons of Switzerland

In the days of Kautilya, a large number of republics existed, the more important of them apart from those of the west being the Kambojas and the Surāstras who lived by agriculture or by the occupation of aims (like the members of the Mediæval military orders or the republican Swiss in French service) while the corporations of the Licchavis, Vṛjis, Mallas, Madrakas Kukuras, Kurus and Pañcālas lived under chiefs claiming the title of "Rājā"

From the meagre details preserved in the Arthaśāstra, we know little about the constitution and government of the Sanghas. But this much is clear that the Sanghas possessed seals or badges, issued money and had a central treasury. Some families were distinguished by greater privileges and had the distinctive title of Rājā (Rājaśabdin?) These families possessed great influence within the Sangha and there seems to have been great rivalry among such families. The position of these families in not dissimilar to that of

the prominent ruling houses in Medieval Venice Genoa or Florence The affairs of the Sangha, however were entrusted to the Sanghamukhyas who were most probably elected leaders backed by parties The existence of such parties is clear from the chapter on Sangha vrtta and Kautilya advises kings to take advantage of party realousies. In many respects, the account in the Arthaestra bears a close resemblance to that in the Santiparva (ch LXXXIV) where Srikrana speaks of the difficulties of Sangha mulhyas faced with the turbulence of party leaders

A systematic account of the states mentioned by Kautila is lacking, but in the light of later history we must conclude that many of the more important communities survived and maintained their political existence As in the days of Megasthenes the republican tradition retained its full vigour. In fact, as Megas theres clearly states there was a duel between republicanism and monarchy, and in certain isolated localities republics existed side by side with monarchies The evidence of the Avadana-sataka which quotes the opinion of travellers, supports this ( केविदेशा गयाधीना केविच राजाधीना See Avadanasataka II 103, St Petersburg Edition)

More definite evidence is also available in the days of Asoka, who enumerated the albed and feudatory communities into whose territories his preachers were allowed access. Thus, in the Rock Edicts of Asoka we find mention of the following communities some of which we have reason to believe were under republican government

- (a) The lonas
- (b) the Kambojas on the North western frontier
- (c) the Gandharas

- (d) the Rāstrikas and the Bhojas
- (e) the Petenikas, the Andhras and in the South the Pulindas
- (f) The Nāvakas and the Nāvapanktis. (and according to Mr. Jayaswal the other Aparāntas).

(Aśokan Rock Edict. XIII)

The Yonas were a settlement of Greeks long settled on the border and were neighbours to the Kāmbojas Little is known about the Nāvakas and Nābhapamktis, but Mr Jayaswal considers them with some reason to have been situated near the Gāndhāris. (Jayaswal—Hindu Polity Pt. I sec. 130-135) The Rāstrikas, the Bhojas and the Petenikas belonged to the south The Bhojas were probably intimately connected with the Bhaujyas, and their descendants, the Mahā-bhojas as well as the Mahārathis gained the position of feudatories to the Andhra Emperors (For Aparānta coins, see Cunningham's A. S I. Vol. XIV.) We shall discuss them in detail in connection with the Andhra Empire.

### Political Speculations in Kautilya.

Having discussed the rise and fall of the Empire as well as its institutions, we pass on to the main currents of political thought and ideal which meet our eyes during this period. The Greek accounts, the Arthaéastra of Kautulya and the Edicts of Aéoka are our sole sources of evidence during this period, but on this head we find very little help from the foreigners or the edicts of the great Emperor.

The State in Kautilya — The Arthaéastra of Kautilya, however, throws a flood of light on the political ideas of the imperialistic thinkers of the period. That work attributed not without reason, to the minister of Candragupta, is probably the last of many such books, and is one of the earliest systematised treatises on the art of government representing the high water mark of a materialistic counter reaction to the spiritual propaganda of the preceding age.

In Kautilya we meet not only with a dominance of ethico-political ideas, but notice a decided tendency towards the emancipation of politics from the influence of religion and ethics. But there is a lack of definition and an utter absence of abstract speculation as to the nature of the state. Only in one or two places hautily a gives us a clue as to his views. This may be due

to the fact that the Arthaśāstra is a practical treatise on the art of government and was written with the express object of establishing a paramount ruling authority capable of protecting the people and helping them in attaining prosperity in an age which had not yet forgotten the traditions of Persian rule in the Punjab and had witnessed the horrors caused by the daring inroad of the Greeks under Alexander. Such being the case, we can expect but little of theories or abstract ideas Kautilya's views were mainly those of a practical statesman Consequently, nowhere does he define the state or dwell on its character. It is only incidentally that he gives us information as to its constituent elements and its real ends and it is from these that we have occasional glimpses into his views on the state of nature or the origin of the state.

Kauṭilya seems to lay stress on the human element of the state. Thus, in one place he says—"The state after all consists of the people; without them, the territory is as useless as a barren cow (प्रविविद्यासम् अप्रवा गोवेस्य व निं दुहोत —Arthaśāstra p. 295) In another place, in emphasising the duty of a conqueror to look to the interests of men settled in the conquered territory, he says that a territory without subjects (bereft of good government) is neither a Janapada nor a kingdom (न हाजनो जनपदो राज्यं जनपदं वा भवतोति.—Kau, p 403.)

These statements show that Kautilya, like his great contemporary Aristotle, regarded the state primarily as an association of human groups and created mainly in their interests. This association of individuals to form a state he attributed to man's social ideas,  $e \ g$ , preservation of life and property and to secure opportunities of progress. The state of nature he regarded as one of war (as in ch 67 Sānti-parvan) dominated by (Mātsya-nyāya or

#### Political Speculations in Kautilya.

Having discussed the rise and fall of the Empire, as well as its institutions, we pass on to the main currents of political thought and ideal which meet our eyes during this period. The Greek accounts, the Arthaéastra of Kautilya and the Edicts of Aéoka are our sole sources of evidence during this period, but on this head we find very little help from the foreigners or the edicts of the great Emperor

The State in Kautilya —The Arthasastra of Kautilya, however, throws a flood of light on the political ideas of the imperialistic thinkers of the period. That work attributed not without reason, to the minister of Candragupta, is probably the last of many such books, and is one of the earhest systematised treatises on the art of government representing the high water mark of a materialistic counter reaction to the spiritual propaganda of the preceding age.

In Kautilya we meet not only with a dominance of ethico-political ideas, but notice a decided tendency towards the emancipation of politics from the influence of religion and ethics. But, there is a lack of definition and an utter absence of abstract speculation as to the nature of the state. Only in one or two places hautily a gives us a clue as to his views. This may be due

to the fact that the Arthasastra is a practical treatise on the art of government and was written with the express object of establishing a paramount ruling authority capable of protecting the people and helping them in attaining prosperity in an age which had not yet forgotten the traditions of Persian rule in the Punjab and had witnessed the horrors caused by the daring inroad of the Greeks under Alexander. Such being the case, we can expect but little of theories or abstract ideas Kautilya's views were mainly those of a practical statesman Consequently, nowhere does he define the state. or dwell on its character. It is only incidentally that he gives us information as to its constituent elements and its real ends and it is from these that we have occasional glimpses into his views on the state of nature or the origin of the state

Kautilya seems to lay stress on the human element of the state. Thus, in one place he says—"The state after all consists of the people; without them, the territory is as useless as a barren cow (पुरुषविद्यासम्, अपुरुषा गोवेस्य व निं दुहोत —Arthaśāstra p. 295.) In another place, in emphasising the duty of a conqueror to look to the interests of men settled in the conquered territory, he says that a territory without subjects (bereft of good government) is neither a Janapada nor a kingdom (न हाजनो जनपदो जनपदे जनपदे वा भवतीति —Kau, p 403.)

These statements show that Kautilya, like his great contemporary Aristotle, regarded the state primarily as an association of human groups and created mainly in their interests. This association of individuals to form a state he attributed to man's social ideas,  $e \ g$ , preservation of life and property and to secure opportunities of progress. The state of nature he regarded as one of war (as in ch. 67 Sānti-parvan) dominated by (Mātsya-nyāya or

the tyrannv of the strong over the weak\* To end this (as he himself describes it in connection with Danda and in another place puts it into the mouth of one of his discoursing spy propagandists)—the people selected king. Manu to save themselves from  $Matsya\ nydya\ \dagger$ 

After thus describing in brief that the state was primarily an association of human groups united together for protection, he goes on to devote his best attention to the consideration of the physical requisites which are to serve as bases for a well-ordered and prosperous state Herein lies his excellence over most political thinkers of antiquity and his views show how much prominence he gives to economic and material considerations in conceiving the requisites of a state According to him, the territory must be capable of supporting the population, and enabling the people to have room for expansion, capable of supporting the people of neighbour ing regions in distress endowed with natural wealth, peopled by men hating the enemy free from sterile rocky soil not abounding in ferocious animals, capable of maintaining large herds of cattle and other animals containing mineral resources and pastures, capable of easy defence having a free supply of water and not depend ent on nature (rains) having excellent land and river communi cations, productive of commodities, endowed with a labouring element and peopled by patmotic honest men

e q, स्थानवान् पात्रधारण परधारणयापदि स्नारच साजीवः, गढदेपी शक्यसामनः पद्वपायाणीपरविषमकाग्रुकश्रेणीम्यानसगाठवीशीन, काना मीता

चडचोती दि माळाऱ्यावसुद्रावति । वडीयानवर्षे दि पर्यते दर्यभरावार । निन गुर-प्रवातीति । (kau, p. 9)

<sup>†</sup> मास्त्रात्वामानिभृता प्रका मनु वदस्तरं राजानं विकिरं। वात्यप्रवर्धारं दस्यवप्रवर्धः दिस्यः वास्त्र धात्मवेधं प्रवर्षयात्राष्ट्रः। तेन वृता राजानः प्रकारो वेत्रयोगपदाः निर्वा विविवयस्यवरा दर्शतः वोत्ययेवदाव प्रकाराम् । (Kau p. 23)

खनिद्रव्यहस्तिवनवान् गव्यः पौरुषेयो गुप्तगोचरः पश्चमान् श्रदेवमात्वको वारि-स्थल पथाभ्यामुपेतः सारचित्रबहुपायो दण्डकरसह, कर्मशीलकर्षको बालि-श्रस्ताम्यवरवर्षपायो भक्तश्चिमनुष्य इति जनपदमम्पत्। (Kan P. 256)

The Kautilyan state was essentially a monarchical state. Kautilya's sympathics were with monarchy, which in his eyes was the best form of government, since in it there was neither the strife of sections nor the dominance of class interests. The wise rule of a benevolent king ensured happiness for all and guaranteed the safety of social existence. The king was thus the chief necessity for a state.

Next, Kautilya analyses the state (Janapada) like his predecessors, the Epic thinkers, into its seven elements, eg, Svāmī, Amātya, Durga, Rāstra or (जनपद), Kosa, Danda and Mitra\* Of these again, he clearly distinguishes between the ruler, and the state (राजा राज्यम् इति प्रक्रानिसंचेप:), eg, the governing element and the governed. But in spite of this seeming differentiation the two appear to be identified with each other. They are inseparable. Their best interests and the chief aim of their existence seem to be the same. The king as the head of the government was the supreme head of the state. He was the symbol of unity and legality. All authority emanated from him. It was he who directed the energies of the people to their proper channels\*

But though the king was conceived as being of the vital importance to the working and existence of the government machinery, he in his turn depended on the prosperity of the elements

<sup>\*</sup> खामी च सम्पन्न खनम्पद्भिः प्रकृतीः सम्पादयति । स्यय यक्कीलक्षकीलाः प्रकृतयो भवन्ति स्माने पमादे च तदायत्त्वात् । तसान्कटसानीयो हि खामीति । (P 306) This indeed is but an echo of the Epic idea that the moral and intellectual prosperity of subjects depended on the king and he created the age (कालीवा कार्ण राजी राजा वा कालस्य कार्णम । इति ने समयो मासूत् राजा कालस्य कार्णम ॥

e.g परिवर्णाः प्रकातयः सप्तेताः सग्रुपोदयाः । एका प्रत्यक्तभूतास्ता प्रकाता राजदम्बदः ॥ सम्यादयति सम्यवा प्रकातीराकावानुष । विष्ठकायानुरक्षाय प्रकातीकृत्यगाकावान् ॥ (Р 257)

The two the ruler and the State, were thus closely indentified The king was a necessity for the people but he existed for them and them only 

Elis happiness lay in their prosperity

Verily says the author -

## प्रजासको सक्षे राघ प्रजामां च हिते हितम्। मालागिय हितं राच प्रजामां च प्रिय हितम्॥ (P 39)

So much for the unity of the ruler and the ruled in the state Again, when we leave these theoretical considerations and go through the details of administrative measures and regulations we are bound to conclude that the acive welfare of the subject was Kautilyas objective and his state did not rest with mere police measures. Presumably the state conceived by Kautilya was a paternal state which tried to assist all the sections of the community in their self-realisation by active help. The agriculturist the trader, the student the workman or the pauper all received their proper quota of help from the government. We may therefore define the Kautiliyan state as an institution for the well being of the community and its head, the king was entrusted with the duty of helping his subjects in the fruition of their worldly aims.

This extreme devotion to the material welfare of the country and of the subject made kautilya sacrifice some of the moral

Hewhere I hav discussed the functions of the government as concerned by hautilyates any article on the "foretrumental ideal in Ament India published in the Chauta Berico 1922 and also me hautilya—ily Social ideal and Pittial Theory. The state in India as concerned by Hindu then haves we more social than political. The long and only protected his and property but did expiting to face the prosperty of the charge it was the guaranteed and protection of all and did expiting positions of the charge it was the guaranteed protection of all and did expiting position for the

and ethical principles which had gained ground in those days \* These characteristics he shared along with his fore-runners—the previous authors of the Arthasastras. But here, too, he shrank from the extreme consequences of such a policy. He recognised 'organic laws and principles' which existed prior to the establishment of royal authority or the state. His disregard for moral considerations, (if any), stopped after a while. He would consent to the confiscation of the property of Pasandas or of wealthy widows. He would justify secret attacks on enemies-nay, he would, often following his piedecessors advocate assassination, but he will not go beyond that He will not consent to the unrighteous usurpation of the throne by ministers, to the violation of the sacred institutions of property or family, and constantly warns kings against the obliteration of social distinctions or tampering with the sacred rules of Aryan morals and ethics.

eg तस्रात्स्त्रधमें भूतानां राजा न व्यभिचारयेत्। स्त्रधमें सन्द्रधानी हि प्रेत्य चेह च नन्दति॥ (P.~8).

<sup>\*</sup> Kautilya has often leen compared with Machiavelli and iccently many Indian writers have joined in his denunciation. Undoubtedly, both have some common resemblences. Both tand for the unity of their motherland and advocate out of necessity a policy of unmoral politics and inhuman diplomacy, provided the end is attained. As a result both these men, though sincere patriots, have suffered in the estimation of posterity.

Yet there are differences which cannot longored. Kautilya with his deep sympathy for the masses looks more to the solution of the primary problems of existence. He is a social philosophei and his suppleness enables him to devise a scheme of orderly government without sacrificing the interests of the governed. He shows deep insight into the real problems of man and is more of a social thinker than a believer in kinggraft. The latter art commended itself to him only because political life is the basis of social progress. In politics, he was not averse to the unmoral usages of the age since the conditions left no other way out. Left to himself, he would have chosen a better course. The same justification may be advanced for the other great man, but we are bound to notice that his outlook is narrower and his attention centred on the problems of Italian Union which was the sole remedy for Italian suffering. In worldly wisdom, in the knowledge of men and matters, and in the ways of outwriting enemies both can claim the same amount of pre-eminence. But the II dian has this advantage over his rival that with all the qualifications of the latter, he was a man of broader outlook and had a rare genius which made him go to the solution of the greatest problems of man

## Agam व्यवस्थितार्थभर्यादः ज्ञतथर्णाश्रमस्थितः । स्रथा हि रचिती सोस प्रसीदित न सीदित ॥ (P 8)

To speak in brief he limits the sphere of royal authority or of state interference to those matters which concerned the material aspects of life directly reserving to the individual complete freedom in matters of his higher self-realisation. The state was thus with him, not the highest existence nor the king the supreme ruler of man's destinies. They were but the means to a greater and higher end

It may appear idle to dilate on the merits or demerits of his system, yet a few more words may not be out of place here to mark out the leading features of his political genius, the system he conceived or the means he advocated. Undoubtedly he was the noblest exponent of the political ideals of monarchy in Ancient India. His genius attempted a synthesis of the ideas and theories of the past and he succeeded in devising a system in which the interests of the governor and the governed were identified and the authority of the executive power devoted solely to the prosperity of mankind. His genius conceived the ideal type of a paternal monarchy out of the traditions and principles of the past and his soul delighted in the prospect of a national king, having the same language manners and customs as the ruled and living only in their interest—an ideal attained only in the 19th century (Arthabastra P 403)

A believer in the institutions and traditions of his country he was not averse to the happiness of mankind in the interest of an individual or a ruling section. He wished life and love to all and believed in human happiness through the co-operation of communities and interests. A Brahmin and conservative by nature, he was the foremost in raising his voice against slavery (when his contemporary, the noblest representative of pagan wisdom—

Aristotle, was justifying it) and did all that was possible to break the fetters of the slave

The ends he advocated were just and noble; nor were his means ignoble or inhuman. He advocated unity—yet war was never his sole objective; unnecessary cruelty was never his guiding principle. He recognised the real place of 'force' in political existence, but he was averse to making it the object of his worship. In diplomacy too, he was not unwilling to outwit a crafty enemy, but beyond that he never made his way. His king was not to be an incarnation of craftiness, but one self-disciplined and above the frailties of ordinary men. Loyalty was to be the king's noblest asset and his only reward was to live for others.

## The Asokan State Ideal: The Reaction and the Collapse.-

Under Candragupta and his son Bindusāra, the Kauţiliyan system continued But under Aśoka there came a change. At first, the Emperor carried on the traditional policy of his fathers but, after his conquest of Kalinga there came a break with the past. The conqueror became penitent for his past ciuelties Repentance racked his frame and according to a tradition turned him into a disciple of a Buddhist monk Lust for conquest vanished and made room for a violent reaction in favour of pacifism It is doubtful whether Aśoka embraced Buddhism out and out but anyhow it is clear that he came under the influence of forces which implanted in his mind a tender regard for the moral elevation of his subjects and at the same time a hatred for conquests or a rule by the sword His langly ideal changed. He lost sight of his primary political duties and turned a moral elevator of As his idealism waxed high, he regarded himself responsible for the good of his subjects not only in this world

(especially the North) had to wait till time exhausted the barbaric virility of the foreign ruler and gave her a respite to raise her head and reorganise her forces again

In simpler language the disastrous results may be thus sum marised. There was first of all a break in the continuity of development. Had the Empire retained its vigour, its institutions would have remained, modified perhaps to suit the needs of contemporary society. But with the irruption of foreign hordes, the struggle for existence arrested the normal development of the political machinery or the ideal.

Secondly, the fall of the empire checked the tendency towards the separation of politics from ethics and religion. The revival of Dharma idealism practically reversed the current of progress, and exercised an influence which continued for centuries and did not lose its force upon the ideals of a later age.

Consequently, the ideal of a secular state vanished and even when there came an opportunity for reconstruction, the state came to be associated more with a coercive central authority maintaining peace and order than an organisation which devoted most of its energies to the material progress of humanity

These were the chief characteristics of the state as we find in the later Dharmasastras of which the earliest was the Manu-sambita. The Smrti writers all dwell upon the evils of anarchy and emphasise the need of coercion to maintain an ideal which evolved it self out of the reaction. The king was fast transformed into some thing like divinity and gradually the ideals of despotism became more and more prominent. The paternal ideal indeed continued to subsist but it came to be masked by other factors. The Artha fastra tradition was swept away and a purely secular ideal became a thing of the past.

# Republican Thought and Idealism.

From the secular idealism of Kautilya or the pacifism of the great Emperor Asoka we pass on to a consideration of the political aims and aspirations of the sturdy republicans of the North-Western borderland, who dared to check the progress of the world-conqueror whose genius had laid low the mightiest empire of Asia. To these sturdy mountaineers, nothing was so valued as their independence and self-governing institutions. Assailed by the greatest conqueror of antiquity, they refused to buy peace through submission By his ravages, Alexander thought of striking terror into their hearts, but their spirit was not broken. Their armed hosts were defeated, they were massacred by thousands, many more were sold to slavery!, yet they could not be made to reconcile themselves to an existence of abject political serfdom

It cannot be said that they achieved any striking military success. The real history of the war has not come down to us, yet, coloured as the accounts are, they form a brilliant chapter in the history of India, showing as they do that the vigour and obstinacy of these frontier tribes were sufficient to strike terror into the hearts of the Greeks. Their resistance alone broke the spirit of the Greeks and compelled the conqueror to retire without attempting a further eastern march

No reliable accounts are preserved about them, except the admiring references of their enemies. Yet these are their greatest tributes and hold them up to posterity for their love of free government and of liberty. To them, the empire was a crime, and submission

<sup>\*</sup> The story of the Hellenic invasion of N W India does not throw any favourable light on the minners and methods of those who claimed a position of cultural pre-eminence in the ancient world. The Indians were dealt with rather savagely. First came Alexander's treacherous massacre at Massaga. Then came need'ess s'aughter and reduction to slavery. In the territory of Sambus 80,000 were sold as slaves while on the suspicion of revolt, Sambus was crucified and the Gymno-sophists cruelly hanged. Arrian, pp. 119, 159, 254, 306 and 313)

to the foreigner, the highest sin Even the gymnosophists among them, the recluses, without earthly attachment, were not behind their warring brethren in this respect. The Greeks relate, how in the person of the naked and old Dandames the world-conqueror found his 'more than a match' (Megasthenes Frag LV) This naked recluse scoffed at the greatness of the conqueror, spurned his offers of reward and asked him to come to him if he wanted anything With a love of nature, purer and brighter than that of the Greek citizen or of Rousseau, he preferred his free life rather than accept the proffered gifts of a foreigner who did nothing but disturb the peace of the world by his insolent greed and inhuman hankerings The greatest conqueror of the world he looked upon as an outlaw who, however great he might have been, deserved nothing more than a graves length of the earth's surface (Mc Crindles Arman, p 387) Even Kalanos (Kalyāna), who alienated the sympathy of his brethren took exception to the riches of Alexander and treated with contempt his empire, which, in his eyes, was no better than "a piece of dry and shrivelled hide" Another sophist went so far as to take exception to the ideas of Sokrates since they had "too much deference to the laws and subjected their lives too much to their requirements" (Arrian pp 314 15)

To the Gymnosophist or the Braemanoi, life offered no charm Rather than live a life of submission, they preferred death "The Bracmanoi", the Greeks relate, "yielded up few prisoners (Arman pp 143-44) and, as 'they were men of spirit," they called upon the neighbouring princes to die rather than submit Nothing could break their spirit and far from accepting mercy they were eager to die the earlier the better (Arrian, pp 313 14 Alexander a conver nation with the ten Cymnosophists)

This was not all. They further disillusioned Alexander's men

when the latter claimed for their master the position of the son of Zeus. Greece had bowed to him and, Sparta excepted, everywhere Alexander had been accepted as a god. It was only on the Indian border that his divine pretensions were ridiculed. The Gymnosophists not only repudiated his claims but reminded him that, the son of a mortal, he was to taste death and that, of his empire nothing will remain to him but a few feet of the earth's surface to receive his body.

<sup>\*</sup> This is sufficient to open the eves of those who find nothing but divine monarchy in India and claim for their countrymen nothing but an exclusive patent for obedience and veneration for their ruler

### Note on The Kautiliya

Since its discovery in 1905, the Kautilija has furnished us with so much information on the Hindu art of government and has given rise to so many controversies, that we ought to devote some more attention to its contents and to the divergences of opinion among scholars on many points. In this section, the following topics will be dealt with

- (a) The traditional date of the book and objections to its acceptance Relation of the Kautiliva to the Lpic tradition
- (b) The socio-othical outlook of Kautilya and his classifica-
- (c) Kautilya s theory of the origin of kingship
- (d) His aim and object in writing the Arthaélistra
- (e) His supposed contempt for traditional morality
- (f) His imperialism and his views on interstatal morality
- (a) In regard to this topic, a detailed discussion is unnecessary in view of the fact that a considerable amount of polemical literature is already in existence. From the time when Hillebrandt objected to

the acceptance of the fourth century BC date to the present day, European and Indian scholars have done much to controvert one another's views. The chief objections to the accepted traditional date of the Kauṭilīya, as pointed out by Jolly or Winternitz, may be briefly summarised as follows (See Jolly s Arthaśāstra, Lahore, 1923, and Winternitz on Kautilya, Calcutta Review, 1924):—

- (1) The repeated occurrence of Kautilya's name in the third person.
- (2) The absence of Kautilya's name or work in Megasthenes's account and in the Mahā-bhāṣya of Patāñjah.
- (3) The discrepancy between the Arthaśāstra account and that of Megasthenes. The lateness of the Arthaśāstra is further proved by the deviations of the Arthaśāstra account from the information supplied by the Greeks. Thus, as pointed out by some scholars, Kautilya speaks of mining monopolies, the employment of superintendents to manufacture coms, enumerates the names of more metals and alloys (including mercury) other than those known to the Greeks, he also speaks of premia on coms, taxes on gambling houses and liquois, and imposts like the roadcess, not mentioned in the Fragments Furthermore, Kautilya speaks of written documents in direct opposition to the Greeks, who say that Indians did not know writing Agam, according to the Greeks, land belonged to the king but this is not supported by Kautilya's book
  - (4) The late composition of the book is proved by the comparative evidence of literature. On this head, we have the occurrence of a verse of Bhāsa in the Arthaśāstra, similarity between some of the Arthaśāstra laws and those in the Yājñavalkya-smṛti, Kautilya's knowledge of the Purānas and of the Kāmasūtra, details about more advanced political and social life compared with those in the

Epic, Kauţilya's knowledge of astrology, the influence of planets and of metallurgy, mining, alchemy and architecture

(5) Lastly, there is clearer evidence, supporting the late composition of the work, which is furnished by the occurrence of words like Survinga (borrowed from Gr Syrinz) and Cina (Cinapattal and Cina bhūmijāh), with which country the Indians were not acquainted before the second century B C

Many of these objections have already been answered by men like Jacobi. Mr Jayaswal, a scholar and a lawyer, has weighed the force of these evidences and has not only refuted the arguments of Jolly but has furnished additional data for the fourth century B C (Hindu Polity Pt I, Appendix C). Winternitz's objections to the fourth century B C date elicited a spirited reply from Dr N Law, whose arguments have been summarised in his rejoinder (See Law's Essays on Indian History and Culture). Under such circumstances, the author of these pages would not have taken further trouble to give his own views here which were destined to appear in the second volume of his Kautilya. But as the publication of that book has been delayed and as the date of the Kautillya is an important topic, it has been thought necessary to give a summary of his objections to the third century A D date proposed by Drs Jolly and Winternitz.

In regard to (1) no scholar ought to take the objection seriously. The use of the author's name in the third person is a peculiar Indian practice which has come down even to the present time. We find the same practice with Patanjah who calls himself Genardisa, with poets like Rajasokhara calling himself Yankariya, not to speak of vernacular poets like Kayir, Yanak and a host of others. In this

Of hulluke on Manu-

उ प्राचेना क्यांनानिव मेवी अनु व्याभिमायनीव वरीपदेशीतक वक्षमिता ।

century even an Indian poet of worldwide reputation uses his own name in the third person.

Again, the meaning of the name Kautilya, signifying crookedness, does nothing to prove the imaginary character of the author. We have still worse names like Sunahsepha or Pisuna in India, and Butcher, and Hog, among Europeans.

- (2) The absence of Kautilva's name or work in the Greek accounts proves nothing. The original work of Megasthenes is lost and even if we had got it, there could not have been any occasion for his mentioning Kautilya's name.
- (3) The supposed discrepancies between the Arthaśāstra and the Greek accounts should not be taken seriously The information supplied by Megasthenes was partly from what he saw and partly from what he heard from others It cannot be expected that Megasthenés' short stay in India enabled him to know all the secrets of the administration or that his informants always spoke the truth to a hated Yavana. Moreover, in all ages, foreign accounts are coloured by the imagination of the composer Megasthenes, moreover, cannot claim an absolute patent for truth as his accounts are disfigured by silly stories about gold-digging ants, stones floating in rivers or men with enormous ears and one eye on their fore-head, which were all hearsay or the product of his Greek imagination. A foreigner, moreover, living at the royal camp, could not be expected to know or even to guess some of the details about the administration, like the monopoly of mines which were not situated in the capital

Again, the arguments based merely on the conjectural discrepancies between the Arthaśāstra and the Greek accounts, should not have been advanced at all There are more elements of similarity than of difference (see Dr Law's article referred to above)

and in many cases discrepancies arise out of ignorance or the work ing of the Greek imagination. The ignorance of the Greeks cannot be cited as an evidence especially where we have traditional Indian evidence to the contrary to advance Thus, in regard to mining monopolies, the author has tried to prove that such monopolies were created by the avaricious Nandas In regard to the manufacture of coms, we have no evidence to disprove it and the Greeks themselves clearly state that the Indians had coined money even at the time of In regard to some other points we stand on surer grounds Gambling houses existed in India even in Vedic times and it cannot be regarded as improbable if the exacting government of the 4th century BC imposed a tax on gambling houses latter course is rather natural, especially when we find the govern ment so energetic as to regulate even the sale of meat or enforce the keeping of implements for putting down fire (Milinda Pañha) In the case of taxes on liquor, we have surer evidence and the Jatakas speak of the Chati Lahapana (Kautil ja-by the Author) The Greek statement about the Indian ignorance of the art of writing may be similarly dismissed and it is disproved by facts 3rd century BC Asoka issued his edicts written in Brahmi and Kharosthi No sane man can pretend that the two alphabets were invented all on a sudden Another such Greek statement that the land belonged to the king deserves a similar treatment Land in India never belonged to the king and on this we have the almost unanimous testimony of the Smrtis and the Miminal books It was still less so in the 4th century BC The evidence of the Kautiliya tallies with general Indian evidence at should be accepted and the Greek evidence summarily rejected as pure fabrication like the stories of gold-digging ants or of one oved men

(4) The arguments here are flursy and hardly stand a critical

A common śloka occurring in Bhāsa and in the examination Kautiliva proves nothing and the more so because there existed in India a mass of floating literature from which successive generations borrowed. Such is presumably the case in regard to the resemblances between the Kautıliya and the Yaıñavalkya Smrti Here the chances are that the borrowing was vice versa and the author of the Yājñavalkya Smrtı borrowed from the Kautılīya as well as from the floating legal tradition, much of which is incorporated in the legal chapters of the Arthaśāstra The author of this book has pointed out instances of such borrowing in his introduction to the Kātyāyanamata-Sangraha (Calcutta University, 1925) knowledge of the Puranas does not prove the late composition of his book, but rather it establishes the antiquity of the Pauranic literature, which is clearly alluded to by the mention of the Bhavisya in the Apastamba Dharmasūtra, (II 24.6) which is . regarded by most scholars as a work of the 5th Century BC Similarly, the mention of the Vaisika chapter of not earlier the Kāmasūtra proves nothing but the high antiquity of the Kāmasūtra literature which is yet to be investigated

Next, Kautilya's knowledge of astrology and planetary influence cannot be advanced against the antiquity of the work. Belief in planets and stars is a characteristic of all ancient societies, and in India some of the later Brāhmanas as well as the Jātakas bear testimony to it and the author of this volume has identified a Jātaka verse in the Kautilīya (see Art on Religion and Belief in Ancient India—Journal of the second Oriental Conference). Similarly, the high metallurgical knowledge displayed in the Kautilīya ought not to make out a case against the antiquity of the Arthaśāstra, and this plea should not be entertained at all except on the assumption that the Indians had no knowledge of the extraction of metals

Facts disprove this contention The art of extracting metals is as old as the Vedic period. The later saithlits speak of eight or nine metals and alloys and the Greeks themselves speak highly of the quality of Indian steel In regard to mercury, we have no clear evidence either way and it should not be taken seriously Such is also the contention on the ground of architectural development. Facts nullify the value of such suggestions, since within half a century of Kautilya's time, the great edifices of Asoka were constructed and this could not rise all on a sudden

(5) Lastly, we are to discuss the value of the argument advanced on the basis of the occurrence of the two words Surunga and Cina The similarity between Skt Surunga and Gr Suring was pointed out long ago by Weber in the Indian Antiquary (1873, p. 144 Col. 2 Art on Greek words in Sanskrit literature) Assuming for argument's sake that the word surunga is borrowed from the Greeks. it is impossible to understand why that should be an argument to establish the late composition of the Arthasastra The Indians came in contact with the Greeks before and after Alexander Even denying the existence of a Graeco Indian intercourse before Alexander, would it be unnatural to hold that the word Surunoa became wellknown to the Indians on account of the marvellous success of the mining tactics of the Greeks against Singala, and against Sambus and the Wollor, some of whose citadels were easily captured\* by them entering through tunnels days the great war has helped in large borrowings of words from the vocabulary of one nation to that of another in course of

Read Cartins Rafu a account of the conquest of the copies of Sambos. The firethes on tructed a tunnel up to the middle of the city and the Irritan were health of a formal ramell ment it log out of the ground in the biblied of the trucks. Six (in the flar was a paid possible of the trucks of the Irritance of the Sambos of the Irritance of the Ir

a few vears (cf Poilou. Camouflage, Sabotage etc. in the English language)

The meaning of the word Cina requires investigation. At present we have no means of ascertaining as to who were designated by this name or to which country it was applied. To identify off-hand Cina with the country of China (supposed to derive the present name from the T'sm dynasty) and then to argue duect intercourse between India that there W 88 310 China, in the fourth century BC and then to make out a case against the traditional date is based on a series of 'a mion' Rather than do this, it would be reasonable to hold assumptions that ('ina was the country which bordered on India and was familiar to Indians on account of the already existing trade relations and was so called as it was ruled by T'sm princes who were already powerful in the 7th century BC (See Schoff's Periplus p 126)

The arguments against the fourth century B C thus all fail, and in the absence of direct evidences to establish a late date, it is but natural to stick to the traditional date of the work. The internal evidences in the book strongly support Kautilya's authorship and we have three statements to that effect, viz, in the end of the introduction (p 6 Kautilyena kriam śāstram etc.), in the middle (p 75: Kautilyena narendrārthe etc.) and in the end (p 429, Yena śāstram ca śastram ca Nandarājagatā ca bhūh | Amarşenoddhrtānyāśu tena śāstramīdam kriam). While in addition we have two or three passages where the author uses verbs of the first person (p 235) (vakshyāmah)

This fourth century B C date is thus not only supported by Indian tradition, but its non-acceptance militates against the current of general evidence supplied by Indian social and political literature

In what age, except that preceding Aśoka can we expect penal laws against the Sakyas and Alivikas? Certainly not after Asola, when Buddhism stood so high. In what later age can we expect a dissertation on the political mandala except that before the estab lishment of the Mauryas? In what age, moreover, can we expect customs like niyoga, or the divorce and remarriage of women. accepted in society? Certainly not after the Brahmanical reaction under the Sungas, but before it. Again, when we carefully analyse the social picture and the political ideals in the book, we are bound to come to the conclusion that the Arthaéastra describes a stage of social evolution which succeeded the age of the great monastic propaganda and which saw the movement for imperial unity going on in full vigour The book, as we have it, represents the current of thought of the fourth century B C Of course, it is not impos sible that there may be later additions or interpolations, but there is no one competent to swear against these

As to the relation between the Epic tradition and the Kautilija, there are potent arguments which make Kautilija an inheritor of the maxims and lessons of the Epic — Kautilija's book is based on the accepted canon of political guidance, discussed at great length in the Santi parvan. There may be later additions or rehandlings in course of which later materials or the names of foreign invaders were put in, but still the Epic describes a simpler political life. The idea of imperialism or the war of the Mandala is absent in the Epic chapters. But at the same time the Epic contains the floating tradition or the parables which Kautilia utilises and for the explanation of which we must go to the Fipe Kautilija bases all his directions upon these and he sees no reason for explaining his own standpoint, because the maxims and principles of the Fipe were already too well known. This is the case with the account of

Mātsyangāyr, of the election of Manu to kingship, or the montion of Vaitas? Vitt. Kautilya knew, moreover, the parables and the teachings of the Epic and he makes a free use of its lessons. He alludes to the destruction of Ravana through violence to women he alludes to the evils of dice-play and mentions the cases of Nala and Yudhisthua. In some of his political maxims we find the same influences. One instance can be easily cited, namely in his dissertations on the importance of Kāla or proper time, he alludes to the war between the crow and the owl and the success of the latter during the night. Clearly it is a direct allusion to the lessons of the Sauptika-parvan Kautily i's indebtedness is further proved by verses borrowed either from the Epp or from the floating tradition embodied later in the Epic. Thus it is reasonable to hold that the political canon embodied in the Santi-parvan existed prior to Kautilya and the latter fully utilised it

(b) The socio-ethical outlook of Kautilya requires definition. No one among Indian political thinkers has been so misunderstood as the author of the Arthasastra. He was neither a revolutionary cutting at the root of the existing social fabric nor a bigot of the no-change school. His aim was to ensure human happiness through the agency of the monarchical state and he strove hard to define the functions and duties of the king so as to bring these into line with the material requirements of his subjects.

He belonged to the Artha school and so emphasised the importance of Artha in human life Artha was of highest importance since Dharma and Kāma depended on it (अयं एव प्रधान, अर्थमूली हि धमेवामी Kau p. 12) Apart from the attainment of the three namely, Dharma, Kāma and Artha, the material objectives of human aspiration depended on the realisation of the four,

viz maintenance of those already possessed, aspiration for those not yet attained enhancement of those attained and the proper enjoyment or distribution of things attained. The trierga or the three main objectives are allied to each other and over attention to one or either of the three destroys the balance of life. Hence proper attention should be paid to each of these Even joy has its place in life according to Kautilya and nobody should think of shunning joys in life.

Next men are to learn their conduct in life from the süstras and thereby to discipline themselves. Overgreed or excess of passion makes man forget humself in society and causes troubles to others and these in the long run destroy the happiness of all †

Self discipline, again, is according to Kautilya the primary con dition of success in life whether for ordinary individuals or for kings Next to is knowledge which is to be acquired though association with the learned (इंडसेगोनिन प्रमा) and last of all comes the effort to attain the objective through evertion (utthana)

Discipline again is either spontaneous, or comes through a course of training (क्रमक सामाधिकय दिमयः) At the root of both stands the principle of regulation or coercion which thus is the basic element in ordered life or progress (विमयसूती देख प्राप्तानो वेशकीमांक) Danda, therefore is a primary principle in human progress and serves as the basis even of the ridgit. To gim their objectives men (especially kings) should always hold the rod of punishment (क्षेत्रयाद्यायी नियम्बादक्ष व्यात्) Punish ment however should be requisite to the occusion meither greater

<sup>े</sup> भ्रत्योदिरोधित वामं क्षेत्रतः म नितृष्ठा रातृ। सम्या विश्वतन सान्तः। क्योपः सामित्रो भ्रत्योद्यासाम्बन्धितरी पीडवर्ति।

<sup>ो</sup> प्र वामन्ति परमीद्रवाव नाव वस्ति। सप्रभीवानन्तर वनवेवन्तर वान्तर्भेत्र वान्तर्भाव । १३

nor less than that required by circumstances (यथाईदर्ड: पूज्य. p. 9 and (दर्डमूलास्तिस्रो विद्या.)

The science of Danda together with Ānvīksīkī, Trayī and Vārttā constituted, according to Kautilya, all the sources of knowledge Each of these helped man in deciding his line of conduct and in pointing out the way to success. According to Kautilya the Trayī or the Vedas teach men to discriminate Dharma from Adharma Vārttā teaches the road to attain material objectives while Dandanīti helps in discriminating true policy from impolicy by laying down the line of demarcation between right and wrong Lastly Ānvīksīkī enables man to apply his reason in order to weigh the forces on either side, gives him wisdom enough to choose the line of success and helps to maintain his mental balance in times of success or disaster. It is, in his words, the light of all knowledge, the means of all undertakings, the basis of all Dharma and as such it is the imperishable essence of all (knowledge).

Kautilya's enumeration of the sciences explains his own stand-point. He appears before us as a rationalist emphasising the high importance of reason and speculative philosophy and at the same time a believer in the traditional canon laid down in the Trayı. The Vedas are objects of veneration for him, as well as the Purānas and Itīhāsas, since they embody the lessons of the past His faith in the past makes him reject the extreme opinions of the materialistic Bārhaspatyas or the teaching of unscrupulous kingcraft emanating from the School of Sukra In him, there

<sup>\*</sup> धर्माधर्मी तयाम् । त्रर्धानधी वार्तायाम् । नयानयी दण्डनीत्यां वलावले चैता धां हेतु भिरन्वी चनाना लोकस्थोपकरोति व्यसनेऽभ्युदये च वृद्धिमवस्थापयति प्रज्ञावाक्यक्रियावैक्यारयः च करोति ।

प्रदीन सर्वेविद्याना उपावः सर्वेवर्मणाम् ।

प्रायय सर्वेधर्माना प्रयदानीचकी नता॥ Kau p. 7

is no violent break with the past or a revolutionary tendency to destroy. He is for maintaining the natural order of men and of the castes and he stands forth as the champion of Varna and Aśrama. As he himself says.—

तसात् स्वर्मे मूताना राजा न वामिपारयेत्। स्वर्मे सन्द्धानो हि मेख चेष्ठ च नन्दति। व्यवस्थितायमर्योद कतवर्षायमस्थिति। व्या हि रचितो स्रोक मसीदित न सीदित ॥

With a synthesis of the ideals of the past and an attention to the requirements of the present he stood for a well-ordered and regulated social life and pleaded for the authority of a paternal king enforcing and guiding social co-operation. Conservative as he was he pleaded for justice and protection to all Inequalities of treatment indeed existed, yet in his own archaic society Kauţilya pleaded for better principles and practices. Averse to the extreme teachings of kingeraft, he denounced the demoralisation of princes or the unseruplous seizure of the throne by crafty ministers. He wished to ensure impartial justice inveighed against judicial tortures vindicated the natural rights of womanhood inspite of the reactionary tendencies of the age, admitted men of the lowest castes into the pale of the Hindu society and in that age of darkness and violence wished to abolish slavery altogether. (For further details see my Kauţilya—Vol I)

(c) Theory of kingship - As to kentilva s theory of the origin of kingship already something has been said but an additional discussion is here necessary to refute the erroneous views of some writers who pretend to find in the hautilia the divine nature of the royal office. As we have already said hautily a like some of his True predecessors regarded the state of nature

as a state of war (See II. pp 55 and 56). According to what he puts in the mouth of his propagandist spies, he clearly accepts the theory of the origin of monarchy in election. The first king among men was Varvasvata Manu who was elected to save men from Mātsva-nyāya. Clearly here he follows the tradition which is found even in the Rigyeda (see ante pp. I-83 & 84) and later on we have in the Epic, the same story of Manu's election (Santi Ch 67). Not only does he regard kingship as arising out of election, but he emphasises the contractual relationship between the king and the people which as we have already seen found favour with the Epic thinkers as well as the Dharmasūtra writers.

For a clear understanding of Kautilya's position a consideration of the above passage is necessary. It runs as follows .—

मात्स्यन्यायाभिभूताः प्रजा मनुं वैवस्ततं राजानं चिक्तरे। धान्यषङ्भागं पण्यदशभागं हिरण्यं चास्य भागधेयं प्रकल्पयामाषः। तेन स्ता राजानः प्रजानां योगचेमवद्याः तेषां किल्विषमदण्डकरा हरन्ति। "तस्मात् छव्छषङ्भागमा-रण्यका श्रपि निवपन्ति "तस्यैतद् भागधेयं योऽस्मान् गोपायतीति"। इन्द्रयम-स्थानमतत् राजानः प्रत्यचहिडप्रसादाः। तानवमन्यमानान् दैवोऽपि दण्डः स्थ्रपति। तस्मादाजानो नावमन्तव्या।

re "The people tormented by Mātsya-nyāya, made Manu their king [in the remote past] They assigned to him a sixth part of grain and a tenth part of articles of trade and gold, as his share (to be paid by people) Maintained by these (nourished—Bhrta—note the same word is used by Bodhāyana) kings [following Manu] exert in maintaining the safety and prosperity of their subjects and partake of their sins if they violate the principle of just purishment or taxes. Such being the facts even hermits pay to the king the sixth part of their gleanings, on the ground "that he who protects them is entitled to this share on account of his

protection' As the king is the visible awarder of rewards and punishments he performs the functions of Indra and Yama If men insult kings, [without reason] they are sure to be visited by divine anger. Hence no one should insult kings.

By no stretch of imagination can this passage be taken to prove Kautilya's belief in kingship as a divine institution. He speaks of election and of the royal share as being paid in lieu of the king's protection. The same argument put in the mouth of hermits makes it clearer. Towards the end, the king's functions are compared to those of Indra and Yama and here we have only an allusion to the parallelism of their duties. The reference to Daiva anger makes out no case in favour of the divine nature of royalty and it is the natural mode of expression in a country where the influence of the Karma theory made men always alive to the supreme dispensation of divine justice, even when the mundane agents failed in their duties.

That Kautilya looked upon monarchy as a human institution and that he believed in a real contractual relation subsisting between subjects and the king is proved by various other c reminstances—till throughout he warns kings against the exils of misgovernment and speaks of the loss of their authority through the resolt of subjects—Nowhere does he speak of the duty of subjects to obey a monarch unconditionally. The king's happiness again depends on the prosperity of his subjects and the king is bound to make good the loss to his subjects caused by theyes and robbers—Localty of subjects was the highest asset of the king (अनुभी सामग्रा) and he was to live solely for them—I nder these circumstances—to speak of kantilya as a believer in divine kingship would be nothing but hops less perversion of truth caused by wheer generates.

(d) Kautilya's aleas about the functions of the state have

already been discussed with a view to interpret his scheme of good government in terms of modern political thought, but nothing has yet been said as to his real political ideal or the objective which impelled him to compose his celebrated treatise

Kautilya's treatise is an Arthaśāstra and is to be differentiated from works devoted to the attainment of Dharma. Kāma or Moksa In it he concentrates his attention on the realisation of material objectives and yearns after the social happiness of man through a political discipline ensuring life and property regulating the scope of activity of individuals and classes, and giving each individual all proper chances for gaining their objectives. The aim of his work, as he himself says was two-fold,  $\epsilon q$ 

- (I) guidance of princes (esp. of the Maurya King) in the ways of acquiring land (kingdoms)
  - (11) maintenance and protection of subjects

The object of the Aithasāstia was to guide men in lābha and pālana (पृथिव्या लाभपालनोपाय: शास्त्रमधैणास्त्रम्—Aitha is nothing but the material objective of man—more especially in regard to men living on earth—मनुष्याणां हत्तिरधै मनुष्यवतीभूमिरित्यष्टं: pp 1 and 424).

So far as pālana is concerned, we have already given its true significance especially with Hindu Political thinkers. The king was not to remain satisfied with performing political duties, but he had to concentrate his attention on the ways and means of their realising true material happiness. According to Kautilya, the king to ensure pālana or good government had to devote his attention to the following, after completing his own education and self-discipline. e.g. Maintenance of the social order as laid down in the Stuti and traditional canon, creation of ministers; constitution of the Higher Executive Body (also spiritual guides), constitution of an Advisory Council, appointment of Judges, employment

of spies and diplomatic agents—selection and employment of officers for revenue collection—arrangements for police—proper keeping of accounts and audit—appointment of officials and superintendents to carry on the work of supervision, constitution of law courts—maintenance and organisation of the army and many with a view to protection of life and property and protection from foreign invasion—active help to the cause of education, industry and commerce, maintenance of the poor and the indigent—safety of the people from famine pestilence or flood regulation of wages of labourers of prices and profits of merchants so as to put an end to exploitation by capitalists cradication of menaces to peace, measures for enforcing administrative laws—suppression of corruption of officials and Judges and of Treason

This is the brief summary of Kautilya's aims objectives and means of good government which is repeated for the convenience of our readers.

But good government was not the only ideal of the grat teacher nor the sole lesson which he intends for his disciple. With him it was the starting point for higher ambitions. His ideal king was to be an empire builder and he book was to serve as a manual for the guidance of such ambition. Princes. More than half of the book is devoted to the way and means of

realising this high ambition. From the sixth book, the rest of the work deals with a consideration of the time, place, and circumstances as well as the means which enable a prince to entertain the idea of world-conquest and the means of realising it.

In the sixth book (on Mandala-yomh) Kautilya discusses the agencies that influence human actions (Dawa and Mānusa) and the conditions of political equilibrium which we shall In the chapter on sādgunyam discuss very soon quires into the nature of the relations of states with regard to one another and defines the 'Six-fold policy' of peace and war, mertness and movement, alliance or dubious attitude (सिस्विवग्रह-यानासनसंत्रयदेधीभावा: षाङ्गुखं) p 261) and enunciates general rules which guide the relations of states. After this section, he devotes himself at great length to the calamities of kingdoms, the causes thereof and the ways of averting them (on Vyasanādhi-The ninth book discusses the time, cucumstances and the conditions favouring offensive operations ( श्रमियास्यं कर्म ). The tenth book (Sängrämikain) is devoted to the ways and means of waging war, the eleventh discusses the means of winning over political corporations (Sangha-vrttam), the twelfth (Abalīyasam) instructs weak kings as to their attitude to the conqueror, while in the thirteenth we have the means of capturing fortresses, and in the fifteenth (Tantia-yukti) explanations of technical terms. The fourteenth book is devoted to magical rites and chaims for granting success in various objectives

The reasons which impelled Kautilya to devote so much of his attention to war and conquest and to look to the establishment of an Imperial authority are not far to seek. The movement for the unification of North India was going on in his time and such a unification was made desirable by the daining inroad of the Greeks under Alexander who brought home to Indians the horrors of foreign conquest. Other factors inflenced his mind and he recognised the necessity of reviving the All India empire which alone was destined to give peace to the country (compare his allusion to the Cakravarti ksetram, pp. 338, e.g. देश प्रविद्यो, तथा दिमवत् वसुद्रान्तसुद्रीचीन योजनयद्वयदिमाचं पतियोव वस्त्रवित्तियं) In his eyes, India was naturally destined for her prosperity and progress to remain under one Imperial power—a fact which has been demonstrated many times by the subsequent history of the country

Yet there were hinderances to it. The ancient world hardly knew any stable political equilibrium. States and peoples could not easily make up their differences nor submit to one government without projudicing their own interests or sacrificing their own political sentiments, while natural causes contributed to their mutual hostilities. Kaufily a tried to investigate the nature of these and laid down the conditions determining the existence of natural friend ship or hostility the means of maintaining the safety of a prince in the circle of states and the ways of attaining paramountcy in it

In this unstable political condition states were liable to devote their attention to the two objectives namely maintenance of generity (ksema) or nequision (Yoga) and on these desires depended pence (sama) and activity (cyayāma) respectively. Again states were liable either to remain in a stationary condition or else to progress or decay (kṣaya I ridhi or Shāna). Improvement in political condition depended on strength (Bola) and this was of three varieties in strength arising out of politically it is not diplomatic sagacity. (Janual ala-maidia siki) instard resources (financial and inditary resources) and military intrivity (a'r finality and these had to three kinds of success (Scidial Scidial).

With all these, deterioration is to be avoided, efforts to be made for maintenance of the acquired position and with better opportunity paramountcy is to be sought for.

In an unstable political condition, states or princes had no guarantee for their existence and the slightest disturbance was sure to lead to universal unrest. States strengthened their position by means of alliances and such an alliance was sure to At the root of alliances or bostilities give rise to a counter-alliance work some natural principles and according to Kautilya a state has a natural enemy in an adjacent state while a state which is separated by a buffer state from the first becomes an enemy's enemy and herce a friend Similarly, we have an enemy's friend and a Kautilya takes into account states in the fifth friend's friend degree and according to him, a state with its friends and friends' friends etc constituted a circle of states Similarly we have the circle of state of the enemy, of the Madhyama king and the Udasina king, about whom no further details are given since these will be out of place here

Next to the enunciation of natural causes of friendship or enmity Kautilya investigates the conditions of war, peace, neutrality or the assumption of a dubious attitude. He lays down a number of political maxims, the value of which may still be appreciated in our modern would. Certainly, these in themselves form an interesting study, though beyond the scope of a work on polity. Here only the briefest summary of his views on interstatal relations is given e g

- (a) He recognizes the importance of 'force' in politics, since without it, a state cannot think even of peace through an alliance with a powerful state . (तेजो हि सन्धानकारण' नातप्रकोइ लोहेन सन्धत्ते।)
  - (b) A weak state should strengthen itself by an alliance with

a more powerful state It might if circumstances permitted wage war on a weaker power

(c) When war and peace bring equal profits, peace is to be preferred (सन्धिवयद्योस्त्रसायां हदो सन्धिसपेयात।)

(d) In all offensive undertakings, care must be taken to protect the rear from attacks, and a proper selection of time and place be made (Bk IX, pp. 337.9)

(e) Care should be taken to ensure the contentment of subjects at home, while discontent may be fomented in the enemy's country by means of bribes or other active propaganda work

(f) At the proper opportunity, war should be waged, after completely safeguarding one s own position and care should be taken to assail the enemy in his vital points and in his moments of difficulty.

(g) The conqueror should constantly add to his strongth and evert in the weakening of his rivals

(h) Real allies are to be sought for and corporations are to be won over

(i) The direct enemy is to be conquered first, then the Madhy ama and the Udüsina are to be assailed. Or the enemy subjects may be wenever first, then more remote conquests attempted. By this principle the territories of friends or enemies are to be acquired.

(j) Having completed his conquests, the conqueror should aim at consolidation by re-establishing peace and order winning over the people by rewarding the virtuous by removing the distress of the people by improving the laws by introducing new methods of adding to the wealth of the country and by adopting even the language manners and customs of the people

The aim of Knutilivan diplomacy was primarily to attain the threefold objective e.g. (a) pres renting of the territory all adv

m hand (b) recovery of that lost previously (c) and the acquisition of new lands. By the continuance of such a policy, universal dominion was to be attained provided the would-be conqueror had the requisite wisdom, the necessary resources and the proper opportunity. Lastly, when paramounter was attained or conquest completed, the first duty of the conqueror was to re-establish peace and restore the economic prosperity of the people

With all his faith in the establishment of a paramount power, Kautilya is not an advocate of ruthless conquests. He assigns a higher position to the conqueror who is satisfied with the acknowledgment of his suzeranty (Dharma-vijayā), and denounces a policy of wanton destruction (Asura-vijayā) or of excessive greed and exploitation (Lobha-vijayā Kau pp. 380-82). In some places, he advocates the retention of conquered princes in their principalities on terms of loyalty and service (Kau pp. 308-310). He is moreover averse to unnecessary sufferings inflicted on the enemy's combatants, as would appear from his directions against setting fire to forts and cities (K. p. 403). War was never his objective, since, he preferred success attained through diplomacy to that won by bloodshed, and directed princes never to go to war, unless it was the last alternative and the only means of attaining success (338-339).

All these topics, however, are dealt with in such a way as to make Kautilya's directions applicable to all possible cases and all times and conditions. Some European scholars have, however, harped on the theme that Kautilya's work was intended for a small kingdom. At first sight, this receives credence, but a thorough enquiry makes us believe that the end and aim of his work was to further the establishment of a paramount power in India which was a Cakravarti-ksetram. The fourth chapter of the thirteenth book (Kau p 405) lays down clearly the

four ways of conquering the earth (भागे प्रधियीं नेत्सन) and this is followed by that remarkable chapter which gives us the measures for consolidating sovereignty This vein of imperialism in Kautilya is further indicated by his broad political outlook and the com prehensive economic data supplied by his book. The chapters on gems and valuables to be accepted in the treasury enumerate the products of all the different localities of India, from Visi and Mahavisi and Nepal and Cina in the Himalayan region to the extreme south including Tamraparni, Ceylon and the various localities of Malabar In the east we are carried to the region of of Pundra Magadha and even the country beyond the Laulutya, while in the west Kapisa and Gandharn are enumerated in connection with varieties of wines Gundhura and Prurjumaka figure in the Criminal Code (on Vakparusya) Again, his conqueror is not to remain satisfied with the wealth of the north, but must hanker after the gold, gems and minerals of Daksinapatha (p. 298) are significant facts and point to no other conclusion than that the author of the Arthasastra born and bred in an atmosphere of growing imperialism had the only ambition in writing out his treatise of making his disciple and protegé the universal ruler of India This receives the strongest support from the statements of his successors including even his detractor Bana who condemns him for his advocay of an imperial power after—the extermination of thousands of royal families

(f) Last of all we come to the discussion of the important topic of Kautilya supposed disregard for morality. Here the prima face evidence is very strong against him. His book is a reportory of all the crooked political principles which were current in his days. Certainly it leads up to an atmosphere of innversal support and distrust and gives us all the leading truts of an unserupulous

age and an unmoral political existence. Kautilya himself, too, countenances the use of means and methods which in our days are sure
to cause a revulsion of feeling. He advocates an extensive spy
system, calls upon princes to put their trust in none—not even in
their wives and sons, and in diplomacy, advocates dissimulation to
outwit an enemy, a rival and a friend even, when the fullest advantages have been realised from his services. In war, he advocates
the employment of active spies, the bribing of the enemy's chief
officers, fomentation of discord in the enemy's country, the
creation of division in the enemy's camp and the assassination of
the enemy's leaders

Certainly, these do not hold him out in a favourable light or make him appear as a man of inscrutable moral principles. Looked at from the absolute moral standpoint, he deserves censure—But, with all these, we must not go too far and forget the fact that his game was politics and not morality and the age in which he lived was responsible for many of these—Politics from time immemorial to our own times has never been free from these things nor will it ever be so until the chances of war and aggrandisement are removed for ever. Again, much of his censure is due to the fact that he was unfortunate in enumerating the vices and vicious practices of which he was not the originator but which existed in his own days—Ideas change and have changed immensely from his days to the present age and it will be unfair to accuse him by judging him according to our elevated standard of morality

Again, with all his acceptance of the means and methods of his age,—since he had no other way out, we find in him no denunciation of virtue or an acceptance of immorality or its glorification. For though in many cases he inclines towards the acceptance of unscripulous means leading to success, we find in him a clear denunciation of ignoble means when they affect vital principles. And on these heads, he appears to be nothing but a reformer and a moralist compared with his predecessors. Thus, he will never agree to the violation of the law of property or family and emphasises the importance of discipline for kings. He will not consent to the degradation of royal princes by wine or women since the degradation of princes was sure to affect the fortunes of the country. North he will not consent to ministerial usurpation or such other unsering pulous measures. In war too he was opposed to the infliction of unnecessary sufferings on non combatants.

To sum up the author of the Arthasastra cannot be condemned for his innate crookedness or his denunciation of virtue. The worst that could be condemned in him is his acceptance of the usages of the age. Even in this, his objective was to outwit villains through villainy and he surely stands on a higher lovel than Machiavelli who finds an object of admiration in that human monster Borgia

Furthermore though our ideas have changed and our methods modified yet many of the vicious practices for which we denounce this ancient writer subsist even to our own days. Even to day, we have an extensive employment of active spies not only to gather information but to inflict injury on the enemy explonage on a larger scale poisoning of water inoculation of diseases bombing of cities starvation of non-combatants disregard for the interests of weaker nations and a desire for conquests in the case of the greater powers of the world. The political history of the period before the world war and the events of that conflict prove the truth of the above statement. A reaction against militarism has brought into existence the league of Nation.

but it would be long before the principles and practices of men and nations are changed\*.

<sup>\*</sup> The author has entered into a detailed discussion of this topic in the second volume of his Kautilya and has attempted to support his line of argument with parallels from Mediæval and Modern History Certainly, judged by abstract principles or by an absolute standard of morality, the moral principles of Kautilya are not very high. But as no such abstract principles exist in politics even in our own days, much of this adverse criticism is unmerited. Compared with our standards, the Greek and Roman methods were inhuman and let us hope that a more humane generation will denounce the diplomacy and methods of warfare of our own times

The fall of the empire was the greatest catastrophe in the political history of Ancient India. It checked further political progress destroyed the continuity of development, and the traditions and institutions of the Empire received a rudo shock. For the next four conturies, the greater part of northern and western India became the exploiting ground of barbarians who once bowed before Indian greatness and whose pretensions had been kept in check by the night of the Indian Emperor

Fraught with the gravest political consequences as this period was, it was remarkable for momentous social and political changes, which were partly the outcome of foreign influence and partly the product of a reaction which it brought about. In the foreigners who came and settled on Indian soil, the country received new and more virile othnic elements with peculiar social and political ideas. The contact of races brought in a commix ture of ideas which acted and reacted on each other and thus made room for a new social and political order. The barbarian with his low culture could not think of the sweeping away of the culture of the conquered but became eager to assimilate it and to pride upon his transformation. In course of a few generations, the barbarian rulers and races became Hindinged gave up their old names and assumed Hindingstyles and titles. Many

of them became converts to one or other of the Indian faiths and became the votaries of Indian gods or religious teachers.

The peculiar ideas and instincts of the foreign conquerors stengthened the forces and factors which had been long working in favour of the Bhagavata religion, characterised by the prominence it gave to a beneficent and ever-active personal god, ready to be won over by the faith of the devotee, as opposed to the Paramātman or Brahman of mere philosophical abstractions conceived as the inert yet everpresent principle underlying the eternal changes and modifications of the phenomenal world. Faith took the place of higher knowledge as the true road to The attributes of the divinity were in terms of those of man and with the predominance of humanstic principles, the doctrine of incarnation became more and more deep-The religion of exclusion and meditation rooted in men's minds gave way to one of active devotion, manifested and characterised by charity, pilgrimage, the glorification of the divine bounty through artistic temples and monuments and by gorgeous rites and penances

This Bhāgavata religion was the outcome of a desire long felt for a path of salvation through the fervour of faith and active social work and the worship of concrete objects of veneration typifying abstract principles. Such a hankering on the part of the commonalty had already transformed. Buddha himself into the nucleus for a theistic element and he became the god in a system, which had explained the phenomena of changes, through the errors of senses falsely attributing a reality to the really non-existent. Of the Bhāgavata systems, the chief were Theistic Buddhism, Vaisnavism and Saivism. Most of the hardier barbarians like the Sakas and Kuśānas embraced Saivism, while Buddhism

and Varguavism appealed to the more cultured and enervated half-Greeks of Bactria

Next to this, politics was deeply influenced and modified Repeated irruptions and changes of hand of provinces led to the rise of families of local rulers who ensured personal safety by transferring their allegiance from time to time to more powerful conquerors. Feudal principles thus gradually gained ground. The king's powers and prerogatives, too, increased day by day. The Central Asian Conquerors brought with them the idea of the king's divinity. Indigenous thinkers, too, extelled the king's position since anarchy made men look to him as the people's saviour through appointment by the Almighty. Religion made a deeper impression on politics. The new princes attributed their success to the grace of their presiding family gods and made a reverential reference to them in their official styles and titles.

Furthermore the age of foreign conquest transferred for a time the centre of political life (so far as the indigenous people were concerned) from the north to the south. The south became for a time the stronghold of Indian political life and traditione and the southerner so long looked down upon by the men of the north became the champions of Indianism. Scoure in his distant natural defences and strongholds, he proved his tenacity and showed those qualities which conferred on him political greatness.

This successful resistance on the part of the southerner erected in him a political consciousness which gave rise to a separt test tendency in later Indian history. A few centuries later. In dia freed herself from the foreign volve but henceforth the political supremacy of the north over the south was almost a thing of the past. The southerner rolled back the tide of northern conquest and conscious of a separate political destina, with

cultural peculiarties and distinct dialects and vernaculars, came to hanker after a separate political existence. For the next few centuries after the resurrection. India became divided more or less into four distinct political littorals, viz,—

- (a) The Trans-Indus North west—which almost separated itself from the political movements of the plain of Hindustan
  - (b) The North ie, the plain of Hindustan
- (c) The Deccan, with a predominant suzerain power flanked by a number of smaller states
- d) The Tamil Country or the extreme south with a predominant political power keeping under its control a number of feudatory states

Empire, Bactrian Greeks found again a chance for making good a bid for supremacy which had once been snatched away from their hands by Candragupta and his successors. With a dual political programme, they revolted under Diodotus against the Seleucidan Emperor of Syria 248 BC. Diodotus founded a kingdom where one of his successors ruled. A third Prince, Euthydemos, suffered an attack from Antiochus the gioat. But the victor made peace with him and gave his son his daughter in mairiage. This son-in-law Demetrios, not only ruled Bactria but conquered a part of the Punjab and Sind.

Greeks—The region of the Indian boider was gradually parcelled out amongst a number of Greek princelings. One of those was Menander who ruled over a large part of the Punjab and had his capital at Sagala (Sākala). Other such Graeco-Indian princes existed, but the Greeks never succeeded in founding an empire. Their peculiar Hellenic genius stood in the path of their political consolidation.

The exact date of the Greek irruption\* is not known, but both Demetries and Menander are supposed to have been contemporaries of Pushyamitra and according to Indian tradition the Greeks led two raids into India in course of which they beseiged Sāketa and Mādhyamikā ( अर्थ्य यान सावेतन अर्थ्य यानी मध्य मिकान्—See V Smith Early History of India pp 187 204 & 226)

Parthians—The Greeks themselves did not enjoy power very long. They had more powerful enomies at their rear to deal with First of all there were the Parthians who had under Arsakes (almost contemporary with Diodotus) established a national power in the region of North Persia to the south-east of the Caspian. Their independence was recognized in 248 B.C. and the Arsakidan dynasty produced eminent rulers like Mithridates I who become overlord of the region up to the Jhelum and many of the Greek princes were compelled to bow down before hun.†

Sakas—About the middle of the second century B C the country was swept by the invasions of the Sc or the Sakas who were pushed downwards by the pressure of the nonadic hordes of the Luch Chi. They swept away the kingdom of Heliokles north of the Hindu kush and awamping the whole border region ponetrated for into the plain of Hindustan and the pennisula of

During the Indian ware of Directive are ther threek hief I tratiles est blicked himself in Bartra. If was I II well by Dant lean Agathode and Anton has a stocker One fall som III cless we the Last Greek monorth father II of the Mitographer we have coin 13 Greek princes and princes was

the Parth n — Unit Mithal its the fakes we recheck limit a western march and it well into the Intu Valle. Conseque types the behavior of the same as learning in a new little the research convenient ment little with lates the process that we would be same to the process that we would be same to the process that the research is a new lates to the research between the same that which they need to be same the same that the well with the same the same that the well as the same that the well as the same that the well as the same that the same that

Kathiawad The early history of these Sakas is difficult to find out. but they have been identified with the Sai-Wang who according to Prof Sten Konow, were identical with the Saka-Murundas familiai to Indian writers They seem to have halted in the region of Kipin. (identified with the district to the north of the Kabul river. Sten Konow, Ep Ind Ant XIV p 291) destroyed the Greek kingdoms there and with further pressure marched south and east Probably there were two important streams of Saka invaders, one through Beluchistan along the Indus valley downwards to Gujarat-Kathiawad and Malwa, the other through the Punjab and penetrating the northern plain. A large number of Saka principalities was established in north India—presumably in Gandhaia, Kapiśa, Western Punjab and Mathura The Northern Saka Satraps! came under Parthian influence Many of them adopted Parthian or Persian styles and some of them evidently acknowledged Parthian supremacy The Saka domination of the lower Indus valley lasted longer and even Ptolemy mentions them

Southern Sakas—Of the southern branch of the Sakas, we have two prominent lines, eg, (a) The Khaharāta or Chaharātas of Kathiawad. A large part of Mahārāstra was within their dominions and a large number of their inscriptions and coins has been discovered. The most prominent prince of this line was

<sup>\*</sup>The Northern Saka Satraps—The Sakas seem to have overiun a large part of the Punjab and the Yamunā Valley We have references to a Saka Prince Maues or Moga of the Taxila copper plate dated in the year 78 of an unknown era, and he is described as a Paramount Prince (Mahārāya) His empire was an extensive one and included Gāndhāra, Taxila and Puṣkalāvatī He seems to have flourished in the middle of the second cen B C, though nothing as yet has been settled definitely He was followed by Princes like Azes I and Azilises

In addition to such powerful Saka princes, we have references to lines of Saka Satraps ruling in the Punjab, in Kapisa and in a place as far east as Mathura Very little is known of the Kāpisa Satraps but in the Punjab we have references to three families eg the families of Liaka and Patika, of Miangula and Jehonia, and that of Aspavarman In Mathura, a long line of Sakas ruled, eg Hagana, Hāgūmāsha, Rañiuvala, Soḍāsa etc For our purpose, the chronology or order of these princes is not at all important

Nahapāna, whose inscriptions are recorded in an unnamed era This prince had a continuous struggle with the Andhras who destroyed his power

Sakas of Ujjain—(b) While the Andhra victory put an end to this Khaharāta line another branch of the Sakas established a dynasty at Ujjain which lasted for nearly four conturies. The founder of this line was Yasmotika's son Castana. The grandson of Castana was the celebrated Rudra-dāman who defeated the Andhras and established almost importal sway over a vast region including. Sind Gujarat kathwad part of Rājputana. Cutch Konkon and a part of the Vindhyan hill regions. A long line of Rudra dāman's successors ruled in Ujjain till the close of the fourth cen. A D when they were destroyed by Candragupta II of the Gupta line.

Kusanas—The lustory of the decline of the Saka power and the exact relations of the Sakas with the other conquering tribes of the border region is not exactly known. Towards the close of the second cen. B.C. another race migration began and the Yuch-chi began to pross the Sakas hard. As the result of a series of interactine wars the Kusānas themselves defented the other Yuch-chi sections and established an empire which included a great part of north and western India up to Mathura. The more important princes of the Kusānas were the two Kadphises. Kani ku Vasi ka. Huviska and Vasideva. The chronology and the order of the princes of the

The die fibe foundation fibe had no pribipated a will as the flan between the prince fibe hadplies groups for seven IA had took the for ligner new if it is gibble, next han he spot a pulse sort it to see flavor as IB pulse fiber 11h, we though he may be rect the next see it is next for the pulse fiber 11h. The second he may be rect the next second for the fiber is next for the pulse fiber is next for the fiber is next for the pulse fiber is next for the hadpeline group fiber hand. The first hadpeline group fiber hand the fiber is now if the next fiber is now if the pulse fiber is now if the growth is the pulse fiber is now if the fiber is a fiber in the fiber is now if the fiber is now if the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber in the fiber in the fiber is a fiber in the fiber

Kusāna line is far from being definitely settled. Most of the Kusāna kings were Indianised and became devoted adherents of some or other of the Hindu gods, especially Šiva. Kaniska according to the northern Buddhists was a patron of their religion and did much for the development of the Mahāyāna School. Gradually, the Kusāna power declined and by the beginning of the fourth century A. D., the Kusānas were reduced to the position of local sovereigns, of the Kabul region and held power as local chiefs for a long time

Indigenous Powers —In this dark age, the greater part of northern and western India, was thus overrun by foreign hordes. The only indigenous powers that remained maintained themselves in the south and the east. In regard to eastern India proper, very little is known and we have no detailed records about the regions of Magadha or Bengal Only the kingdom of Kalinga meets our eyes and we have only a stray allusion to its powerful ruler the Ceta Mahā-Megha-vāhana Khāravela, who calls himself a Bhiksu-mahārāja or Dharma-mahārāja. In his Hāthigumphā inscription, he gives an account of his line and of his own doings. From the meagre data and doubtful language of this inscriptional record we simply know, that he was the fourth of his line, a Jain by religion and

<sup>\*</sup> Our information regarding Khāravela is mainly derived from the Hāthigumphā ins cription, discovered as early as 1825 and of which an eye-copy by Bhagwanlall Indraji held the ground till 1910, when Indraji's readings were attacked by a number of cholars. The reading of Mr Jayaswal made in 1917 and amended in 1928 is now accepted by most scholars, From the inscription we know for certain that Khāravela belonged to the Ceta (Cedi) rulers of Kalinga and was the fourth of his line. Of his more remarkable exploits may be mentioned his expedition "disregarding the attitude of Sātakarni," his expedition to Rājagriha, which compelled the Yayana invader to beat a retreat (line 8), and his victory over Bahasatimitra of Magadha. In the end, he calls himself a descendant of a rājarsi family, a Khemarāja, and Bhikṣurāja, Dhammarāja and prides himself upon his patronage of all religious sects (See J. B. O. Rs. 1928 Jai utra).

From the internal evidences, Jayaswal has placed Khāravela in the first half of the 2nd Cen BC The Ceta dynasty was probably founded in 225 BC Khāravela was born in 207 BC and became King in 183 BC Bv 132 BC he was dead. He reformed the Jain worship in Kalinga and performed the Rājasūva sacrifice

having defied "a Sātakarni Lord of the Deccan" led an expedition to Pātaliputra. Nothing more definite is known as regards his date or his successors

The Andhras-In regard to the Andhras we are in almost the same region of mist and darkness. The Puranas give us only the names of Andhra princes and we know but little as to the beginning of the dynasty A number of scholars has relied solely on the Pauranie testimony and has made the Andhras successors to the Sunga Kanvas assigning Simuka their founder to the third or quarter of the first contury B C This however is absolutely untenable especially on the evidence of apigraphy Moreover the Andhras were already a powerful dynasty in the days of Megasthenes who mentions a tradition powerful mulitary force The dynasts about their established according to all evidences by Simuka and gained ascendency over a large part of western and southern India but the Andhras seem never to have established Imperial dominion in the plains of Hindustan \* The dynasty produced a number of onergetic rulers the total of such being twenty nine or thirty with a total regnal period of about 460 years. About the three earliest princes we have epigraphic details but after them there is a gap This was probably due to the ascendancy in such records of the Khaharatas and Sakus who were however checked by king Gautami putra Satakarni who destroyed the a condiner of Nat i pana restruck large numbers of foreign come and restored the bounds of the Andhra I mpure by conquering the Sikes Navana

The beginn gifth A dliasm the plocalinth last sett it 1.2 to a lift little on perception approach a lift laters in the owner. (a) offer the graph the order on the 2.8 to the owner of the last little to the lift little by 2.8 to 1 to owner of the control of the little to the little by 2.8 to 1 to owner of the little by 1.8 to 1 to other little by 1.8 to 1.8

Palhavas, Khaharātas and some Ksattriyas.\* He had the usual title of Sātavāhana, but he seems to have belonged to a new royal family. The mention of Brāl manic metronymics is also significant. ire comprised Gujarat, Malwa, Central Gautamiputra's† vast emp arge part of the present Bombay India, Berar, Konkan and a explorts, he must be regarded as the presidency Owing to these ra Empire. He was succeeded by second founder of the Andl out soon afterwards the Andhras were a number of energetic princes ho under Castana's grandson Rudrahard pressed by the Sakas powerful kingdom, and reduced daman, had established the Andhra king to impotence ("though the latter was not exear relationship ") After the lapse terminated owing to very n the Andhra Empire sank into decay of some considerable time. and the different feudatories established independent rule in difved by Paurānic and other eviden-This is pro ferent localities there were seven Andhra-bhrtyas According to the former, parvata, the dynasty of Abhiras who ruled probably at en Gardabhilas, the Yavanas, the comprising ten kings, the sex  $\mathbf{F}_{\mathbf{i}}^{\text{fom}}$  archaeological evidences we find Tusāras and the Murundas tus related to the Nagas, the Mahadynasties like those of the Cu he title of Sātakarni, ruling near rathis, and of princes bearing t s to have been succeeded by the Banavāsı, who seem afterward The region about Nasik passed to Kadambas of Vanayantipura the Abhiras as proved by an in scription of the Abhira Isvarasena In some other districts, they we re supplanted by the Pallavas.

<sup>\*</sup> See the Nasık inscription of Que

Gautamiputra Sātakarni Sātavāhana

\* carly that Gautamiputra was the traditional

<sup>†</sup> The suggestion was made very ill scholars, More recently, this question has Vikramaditya but was not accepted by t Deb, MA and he has succeeded in raising been examined in detail by Mr Haritkrishna of Gautamīputra and Vikramāditya The important points regarding the identity great poetical work name Vikramāditya occurs even in Hāla's

All these happened in or about the third century A D which still remains a dark and unexplored region before the historian Perhaps in that age India remained under the domination of tribes of savages and foreigners. In regions of North India probably the Sassanians claimed overlordship. The period is entirely obscure and its history is yet to be written.

Fourth Century Revival the Guptas—Towards the close of this period there was a revival of indigenous powers. In north India the Guptas rose to power but not before a struggle for supremacy had been waged by lines which produced the Nagas of Padmāvati or the conqueror Candra of the Meherauli pillar

The Vākātakas—In central India arose a new power—It was the Vākātakas of whom we have but little in the Purānas except traditions about Vindhyasakti and Pravarasena—Vet they were a great power who ruled over a vast aros of central India and the Decean—The extent of their power their cultural peculiarities and their services to the cause of Hindu culture have been rightly emphasised by M. Jouveau Dubreuil

The Pallavas—In the extreme south the Cera Cola and the Pandyas held local sway\* but in the fourth century A D a new power rose in that locality. It was the Pallavas who e founder

A regard the extreme scath arkn whole is till me are easen lit for the affect period. It forms in M to believe that the atternae mouth as known in the period in the entire that the entire that the period of the ladys and a form introduced area culture in 1. Ho being on 1. Agasts in the right left that the father that the culture in the scath of the culture in the scath of the culture in the scath of the culture is the culture in the cult

Added the little entite of the property of the property of the little entite of the little entit of

was, as M Jouveau Dubreuil rightly points out, not a foreigner but a feudatory of the Ahdhras who consolidated ruling authority by marrying a Nāga pincess (See Dubreuil's History of the Deccan—pp 46-51, and Gopalan's History of the Pallavas (pp 1-32).

The Republics—Some other local powers maintained themselves during this age of anarchy and political turmoil They non-monarchial tribes which held their own both were the against Indian enemies and foreign invaders Prominent among these were the Yaudheyas, who, though compelled to shift from old locality, fought with Rudradaman Next came the Mālavas who moved to Eastern Rajputana where they had to fight the Uttamabhadras in league with the Khaharāta Nahapāna as we are told in the records of the latter's son-in-law, Usavadāta. Arjunāyanas, the Sibis, the Trigartas, as well as the Rājanyas, the Vrsnis, the Andumbaras and the Mahārājas existed and maintained their ground. They strove to uphold the dignity of their race as well as the non-monarchical tradition Some of their coins and records have come down to us As to their mode of government and their political ideals, we shall go into some details in the next For fuller details, we refer our readers to Sir Alexander section Cunningham's Ancient Indian Coins and his Archaeological Survey Reports (Vol XIV)

## The Polity of the Age of Conflict and Resurrection

The polity of this dark age was one of reactions and com promises. During the earlier part of the period the reaction against the Imperial institutions was very great. The foreigner conquered the outlying provinces and there instituted new systems of government retaining very little of the past. The higher machinery of government crumbled to dust. The principles of government and the autonomous local institutions however survived. The tenacity of these local institutions was due to many causes. They had received acceptance from the people through centuries before the advent of imperialism. Furthermore, they ensured the independence and good government of the localities.

Above these were imposed the innovations of the conquering hordes. But these affected the people very little. Generally speaking the higher machinery of government established by the conquering races was one suited to those who could not devise a lasting system but wished to hold the country in military subjection only. It was thus fortunate for India that her new conquerors lacked the genius to create but had to borrow either from the powerful nations of the neighbourhood or from the conquered themselves. The early Sakas and Parthians borrowed from the Parthian or Persian rulers whose culture had impressed them most. The Greeks alone had the presumption to impose a system of their own, but even then

in reality nothing new was introduced, except certain official titles and names which survived as long as the Greeks ruled

Changes introduced by Greeks—It appears from the meagre records that the Greek princes like the Sakas and the Parthians remained content with appointing local governors, who held important centres under military occupation. These Greek officials were naturally designated by words of Greek origin. The princes themselves assumed titles like Megaloy, or Basileus Basileon. The officials appointed by them were known as Strategos, or Meridarch; Some scholars have also detected the title of Horamurta; We have coins or inscription which bear these titles but they cease with the fall of the Greeks.

Saka-Palhavas—The Sakas of Saka-Pahlavas seem to have borrowed from Parthan or Persian models Probably, there was a supreme Saka ruler presiding over the fortunes of the so-called Sakastan Under him were Satraps ruling different territorial units, divided into two classes, distinguished from each other by the addition of the prefix Mahā to the lower title The Saka Maues was designated a Mahārāya while Parthian princes assumed titles like 'Khayathianām khayathiya' Some of the Mathura Satraps like Sodāsa assumed titles like Mahāksatiapa and Svāmī (Luders 59) The Satrapal designation was probably borrowed from Persia and was adopted by all Sakas whether in the north or in the south. In most families, a Mahāksatrapa was associated with his son or heir who bore the lower title Below the higher Satisps, were

murta Lala of the Satrap Vasi

<sup>\*</sup> We have a large number of coins of Azes II on which the name of his subordinate Aspavarma, the strategos, occurs

<sup>†</sup> The title Meridarchos occurs in a Kharoşthi inscription from Taxila (Thomas, J. R. A. S. 1916)

‡ According to Lüders (J. R. A. S. 1909) the Manikiala inscription mentions the hora-

military leaders designated Satraps or Strategos who collected tributes and reduced refractory tributaries to subjection

Southern Sakas—Lake the Satraps of the north the Sakas of the south followed the model of Persa during the early part of the period But the greatest borrowers were the Kusāna Emperors, whose geographical position enabled and compelled them to borrow indiscriminately from all nations eg from the Mongols and the Chinese, from the Romans and Greeks as well as from the Hindus

The Kusānas—This spirit of indiscriminate borrowing characterised the Kusānas not only in politics but in religion. In the Kusāna coins we find not only Greek legends but the figures of deities belonging to the Hindu, Buddhist Zoroastren Elamite and even Babylonian pantheon. In addition to the Sungod, we have figures of Siva of the Windgod, of Nanaia of the goddess Mao and of Helios. Heracles, Mithra and Lakşmi appear on the coins of Kanişka's successors. The titles assumed by Kanişka are significant. We find the following styles and titles on his coins and inscriptions, e.g.

- (a) The Son of Heaven or Decaputra—probably borrowed from the Chinese
- (b) King of Kings-Sahano-Shao-from the Perso Parthums.
- (c) Sovereign lord of kings—or Maharājitirāja borrowed from India
- (d) King of Kings-Basileus Basileon from the Greeks
- (e) Karsar or Kazar (Isvara ?)—borrowed from the Mongols.
- (f) In the coins of Kadphisos other titles appear eiz Röjätiräja Sarra loka ištara Mahistara himaka and Makasisa Tradala

In course of tune, the Kusanas like the other foreigners became not only Indianised but became parrons of Salvisin or

Buddhism as their coins show. They continued to call themselves Deva or Devaputra' and this influenced Indian ideas too deeply. The identification of the king with the vicegerent of the gods and the assumption of the Deva title became the universal practice of later Hindu kings. In this respect, a great influence was excited by the foreigners upon Hindu polity.

While this was the course of events in northern and western India the indigenous powers which either grew out of the downfall of the Empire or enlarged themselves at the cost of the fallen dynastiv practically maintained the old governmental system, though there was a visible reaction against the centralising and exploiting tendencies of the imperial rule. Of these indigenous powers, the more important were the Andhras and the Cetas in addition to the three states of the extreme south

The Andhras—The Andhra records give us very little details about their administrative system or the form of government, but from what we have, we may draw the following conclusions

- (a) The Andhra empire comprised territories directly ruled by the Andhra kings, some of these being provinces wrested from the Mauryas
- (b) There were other provinces and areas which were in the hands of hereditary feudatories, calling themselves Mahābhojis or Mahāratthis (Karli No 14) These families were very powerful and there were often marital alliances between these families and the Andhra rulers The Andhra queen, Nayanikā, was the daughter of such a Mahārathi (Sadakana-kala lāya-Mahārathi), and we have instances of coins being struck by these feudatories The

<sup>\*</sup> This title is almost a common characteristic of the successors of Kaniska. Kaniska is called Devaputra in a number of records (see Lüders No. 18, 21, 23). The same epithet is applied to Huska and Huviska (Lüders No. 35, 38, 41-45, 50, 52, 56, 62, 918). Väsudeva is similarly styled (see Lüders 60). Elsewhere, he is spoken of as Mahārāja and Rājātīrāja.

Mahābhojis who probably inherited the styles of the Bhauyas or the Bhojas of the Epic enjoyed similar powers and prerogatives. Other tributaries were the Cutus Nāgas and Mundānandas. In course of time, most of these feudatories asserted their independence (Rapson C. I. of Andhras. Introduction pp XLII to XLV)

(c) In those portions of the Maurya Empire which were an nexed to the Andhra monarchy the old system lasted more or less with modifications The provincial government was in the hands of Amatyas or Rājamātyas and we hear of Amātyas like Visnupālīta or Sivagupta There were also military officers like Senāpatis or Mahāsenāpatis stationed at different centres (Cf. Nasik 24 Sonāpati Vasu). Wo have references to Mahamatras in charge of the S-amanas (No 22 Nūsik of cava no 19). One inscription speaks of Bhāndāgārikas. Subject to these officials, the local areas enjoyed full autonomy and guilds were active as we know from Ušavadāta s records speaking of Nigama sabhās.

In addition to the ordinary taxes the Andhras seemed to have preserved some of those fiscal rights which were enjoyed by their Maurya predecessors. We hear of royal villages (Rājakam Khetam) and in connection with grants to religious orders we know that they too preserved their salt monopoly and exacted ferry dues. This is evident from the fact that whenever villages were granted, the Ahdhras conferred with that grant the right of making salt and other privileges ( पायेग प्रनाम प्रशासादक प्रकास परिवार्तक etc. See Ins. of Sātakarni Gautamiputra. No. 5.)

Detailed information on these heads is indeed scanty but from some of the inscriptions we have interesting informations about the styles titles or the protensions of the Andhras The kings of the Andhra line were satisfied with the simple titles of Rdyn\*

Apart frem ajd and m baraj the assumption of the titles Satarahana and batalarni

and Mahārāja and their wives and mothers were designated Many of the rulers assumed the name of Sātakarm\* and some designated themselves Sātavāhana 'ater on corrupted The successor of Gautamiputra, the restore of ınto Sālıvāhana the glories of the line, makes that king pride upon his hereditary dignity (kula-purisa-paraparāgata), enumerates the different provinces under the royal rule, the races of enemies conquered by him and allows Gautamiputra to be compared with the great heroes of Indian history While most of the epithets are of no importance to the historian, some details are really suggestive Thus, in the great inscription of Gautamiputra's mother, the king is not only extolled for his mercy to enemies, his efforts for the preservation of the order of the Varnas (vinivatita-cāturvannakārasa) and his patronage of the Brahmins as well as the lower castes (Dijāvara-kutuva-vivadhanasa) but claims to be remembered and honoured on account of his having lived a dedicated life which shared fully the joys and sourows of his sub ects (Poiajana-nivisesa-sama-sukha-dukhasa) and devoted to the attainment of the three objects of existence (Subibhata-tivaga-desakālasa) Another source of the king's pride was that he never imposed any taxes not sanctioned by custom or justice (Dhamopayıta-kara-viniyoga-karasa), nor did his arms fail to smite the enemy and protect his own people \* A King with all enemies

is significant. But no satisfactory meaning has been assigned to these words (lord of seven sātā—hills—karni?). One prince calls him Nava narasvāmi (Lord of nava nagara—oi lord of nine classes of men?)

<sup>\*</sup> Many of these expressions are significant The reference to the devotion to the happiness of the people is but an echo of the ancient Hindu regal ideal and reminds us of Kautilya's line—মন্ত্রাক্ত বিষয়ে সন্ত্রাক্তি দিলন্। The allusion to the Trivargas and the consideration of desa and lala seem to echo Kautilyian ideas. The mention of the exaction of taxes only sanctioned by Dharma shows the mentality of a reaction against the fiscal tyranny of the Empire

subdued with all subjects treated with kindless he was great like Rāma Keśava, Arjuna and other heroes the first and unrivalled fighter of his age and the Sole Brahmin (Ekadhanu Ekasura and Ekabamhana) \*

From these we may safely presume that the political ideals of these indigenous rulers of south India were not much different from those of the Arthaéstra though in one or two respects they came to bear the stamp of the pacifism introduced by the great Emparor Asoka. The references to the threefold aims and the identification of the king with his subjects interest clearly point to the continuance of the traditional Arthaéstra ideals. But the mention of non violence to enemies (Satujane apanahisa ruchtsa) or the allusion to taxation with Dharma, are but the indications which show the reaction against the policy of bloody con quests or of unbridled fiscal tyranny which is so prominent in the code of Kautilya

The Dharma Reaction - The influence of this Dharma ideal was more far reaching than it has been hitherto supposed Perhaps it was greater in the country, the conquest of which evoked in Asoka those so timents which swelled the flood tide of his repentance and made his memory so dear to humanity. It is remarkable to note its influence on Maha meghavahana

The word Elabarakawa has not been clearly explained. It mean the sole Brähmay and may be taken to point to the fact that the later Blarkhanas were Brahmin by read. This view receives support from the occurrence of Brahmanical gotan networmed his Valquilly points or Gaut mipetra. Acting upon this interpretation we must in line to the fact that probably after the wakening of the An hira power on occurred the Salas in a oil. Brahmin dynasty upplanted the earlier Andrea large who were Sadras by on the We had a recutrence of this many centuries later in the some region where the Peissans a ppl nicel the nervours of Sivili.

This together with the Brahma ical origin fithe Sofra point to a Brahmanical reaction in that age of foreign invasion. Later on we find the Lattava ladmig descent from the total man and the Kad mbay railing themselves Brahmin. The same thing is repeated five centarise last rewhen the Shith of Kabol the last kings of "and and some of the Pratitions claimed to have been of Brahmin became."

Khāravela, the Ceta prince of Kalmga! who restored the greatness of his line. Great as he was and glorious as his political achievements were, he, too, felt the influence of that man who had reduced his country into a province of his empire. In imitation of the piety of the adversary of his line, he took the title of Ksemarāja, Bluksurāja and Dharmarāja, titles assumed by many of the later Indian princes, and the practice continued for a long time †

In course of time, all these pacific and humane ideals passed to all the faces of barbarian invaders of India. The half-Greeks of Bactria were the first to feel the spiritual influence of the conquered. They readily gave up their soulless paganism and adopted either the teachings of Buddha or embraced like Heliodoros the rising Bhāgavata religion. Many of their princes assumed the style of the Righteous (Dhārmika)‡ and soon the Hellenes lo.t their individuality, political and cultural

The savager elements resisted longer, but they too succumbed fast and adopted not only the religion but also the social and political institutions of the conquered. So far as political and social

<sup>\*</sup> The inscription of Khäravela derives importance from other causes—It gives us the early history of Jainism and shows how that religion had spread over Kalinga—It shows also how, with their faith riveted to the extreme of ahimsā, Jain princes could fight and undertake military expeditions

Other inscription of this line of Kalinga kings have come down to us But as regards the date, differences of opinion still exist

<sup>†</sup> Khāravela enumerates his proficiency in many sciences (lekha rupa-gananā bidhivisāradena) and towards the end of his inscription prides upon his universal toleration (Savapāsanda pūjaka) and assumes these above titles (e.g. Khemarāja, Budharāja, Bhikkhurāja and Dharmarāja)

<sup>‡</sup> The coins of Greek princes bear impressions of gods and goddesses like Pallas, Zeus, Nike, or Heracles, or cointain the dioscouri or the tripod, in addition to the bull. Most of the coins bear a Kharosthi legend and the king is styled. Mahārāja in addition to the Greek titles. In some cases, the titles 'Tradarasa' and 'Apratihata' are added. Some coins of Heliocles and some joint coins of Strato and Agathocleia contain the word 'dharmka' in addition to other titles The word 'Mahatasa' is found on the coins of Maues while the 'Indo parthian Azes I also uses the appellation of 'Dhārmika'

ideals are concerned, they are best exemplified by the history of the Khaharātas and the Kṣatrapas

Hinduisation—The Karle inscription (No 10, Lüders nos 1099, 1131, 1133) of Nahapāna s son in law, Ushavadāta, reflects all the sontaments of a pious Hindu and an ideal Indian king. A soi in law of a Khaharāta king styled Kṣatrapa and Rājā and occasion ally designated Svāmi, this Saka prince celebrates his victory over the Mālavas by charitable acts and pious deeds of which a genuine Hindu could be proud. He visits Hindu incred places, makes immense grit to Brahmins, endows caves for Buddhist menks but not satisfied with these, he digs wells and tanks, establishes free rest-houses, raises embankments and even supports free terries. The kingdom of Nahapāna did not last long. His line was put an end to by Gautamiputra Sātakarni, but very soon the Andhra domination was supplanted there by that of another line of Sakas founded by Castana and holding court at Ujjain.

This line held sway for more than three centuries and produced powerful rulers. Rudradāman, the greatest king of the line, speaks like a true Hindu and tries to govern according to the old Hindu ideal. The Junigadh inscription of the Mahaksatrapa Svāmi Rudradāman (Lüders No. 965) is an important document which speaks for itself Like a pious Hindu Rudradāmana speaks in this inscription written in Sanskrit, of his election by men of all castes and Saiva though he was he prides upon his not killing any body except in war. His government of the provinces wrested from the Andhras seems to have been modelled on that of the Mauryas to whom these originally belonged. He seems to have been well versed in the art of government expecially in the Arthasāstra. He maintained two sets of officers under him who are styled (a) Mati sacivas, and (b) harma sacivas.

Clearly the function of the first body was to give advice to the king on affine of state. Whether the Matisacivas still constituted the Parsat, we do not know, but this much is clear that a body of advisors remained under the king. The karmaskir, s were executive officers who had charge of departments which are unforting itely not enumerated. But this much we can presume that there were officials with various duties. Some were employed to collect royal dues in various shapes e q Bali, or Bhāga from royal lands as in Maniya times. Others collected the Sulka or Toll while the Bhandagarikas were in charge of treasurehower containing not only gold, silver precious gems and stones but also the produce of fields or taxes paid in kind (a practice which continued even up to Cupta times). Other officials were in charge of arrigation and water-supply and this is clearly confirmed by the inscription of Usavadāta and of Rudiadāman whose Junagadh inscription (Lüders 965) gives us a detailed description of the Sudarsana lake (see also Luders, nos 1137-1186) Karmantas or workshops were also in existence as we know from another inscription and this is confirmed by the evidence of the Kāmasūtra which speaks of Adhyaksas in charge of factories

There existed also judges, criminal magistrates, police officers as well as chiefs of military pickets. The higher military officers included the Senapatis and Maha-senāpatis and these commanded the troops and garrisons in different localities. The different provinces and local divisions were probably under. Amātyas as under the Andhras. Villages and local areas, guilds, and townships probably continued to enjoy autoromy, though the officers in charge whether appointed by the king or elected, were accountable to the king.

While in this way the traditional system remained undisturbed,

Rudradaman shared the feeling against the oppressive measures of the Empire Like the Andhra rulers (who claimed to have exacted no taxes except those sanctioned by *Dharma*), he was opposed to fiscal tyranny and he speaks clearly against excessive taxes (*Lara*), forced labour (visti) and benevolences (*Prangas*)

Political tendencies and influences—In the light of available evidences, we may summarise the political tendencies and influences of this period

First of all the foreign invasions, though they caused the downfall of the imperial structure, did not materially injure the cultural and social life of the Indian people or destroy the subordinate administrative machinery, or the autonomy of villege life. The foreign invaders ultimately reinforced the othnic element already existing and paved the way to a neo Hindu social and religious revival.

Secondly, the foreign domination of the north led to the political consciousness of the south, which for a long time became a strong hold of Indian culture

Thirdly the monarchical principle became stronger than ever and though some of the republics maintained their political existence in the fringe areas or in sceluded regions, the vigour of the republican discipline gradually passed away. A few contures more, and these republics passed out of existence. The principle of monarchy was not only strengthened but everywhere the powers and prerogatives of the king were extelled. The king in that age of foreign domination and anarchy came to be looked upon as the saviour of the people and the upholder of the social and moral existence. The transcendental Dharma idea became the dominant principle in social and political life and materialism passed to the back-ground. The influence of the central Asian races, made the

king to be looked upon as the incarnation of the divine spirit and this deva idea was accepted everywhere Following the Kusana example, later Hindu kings came to be styled Devas and the old sacerdotal principle received a strong re-inforcement. Along with this, an intimate connection was established between the king and the religion he professed This is apparent from the styles assumed by the various dynasties which ruled India from this Each line claimed to derive success from the grace of the deity it worshipped In this, too, the foreigners led the way The Greek kings put the figures of their own divinities on coins and Pallas, Nike, Demeter, Hermes or Zeus made their appearance The Kusānas tollowed their example Kadphises II put the Siva image on his coins in addition to the bull Under Kaniska, these gods and goddess were multiplied and Indian, Roman, Greek Babylonian deities made their appearance on coins Catalogue of Coins in the Indian Museum, p. 10-26) Sectarianism also invaded politics and soon afterwards the king's name every where was associated with the cult to which he belonged the fourth century downwards, kings distinguished themselves by assuming distinctly religious titles like Parama-Bhāgavata, Parama-Māhesvara or Parama-Saugata

Lastly, a distinct feudal tendency was infused into the spirit of Hindu politics. Repeated invasions and the continual changes of hand of local areas led to the growth of numerous lines of subordinate princes, who always saved their own heads by transferring their allegiance to the dominant power of the day. The Scytho-Persian ideal of government by means of a series of Satraps led also to the creation of such an indigenous aristociacy and most probably the old centralised character of administration as under the Mauryas passed away. The rise of innumerable Mitra families

points to the same. The Satrapal families also strengthened the same principle and the rise of feudatory families under the Guptas is a fact which every historian is bound to take into account. These ruled their own dominions on conditions of military aid and tribute. The representatives of the central power were installed in all centres of importance and probably the later official grade of Kāyasthas grew out of the imitation of the Persian and Parthian Khayathiya.\*

## The Republican Ideal

In the midst of these innovations and turmoils, the republics maintained more or less their own time-honoured in titutions and the tradition of independence. In the absence of detailed records their coins alone show their corporate political existence and the dominance of the idea of a res publica'

Prominent among these republicans were the Yaudheyas who had survived the imperial domination of the Mauryas. In that age of foreign invasion they had to fight hard against the Saka ruler Rudradaman who speaks of their valour and military pride (Ep. Ind. VIII.) Three types of Yaudheya coins have been discovered especially in the eastern Punjab with the elephant and bull symbol with the figure of Kartikoya and with

<sup>•</sup> It is significant fact that just after the f reign invasion and settlement in India, the official grade of Kavasthas becomes very prominent. That the harvathas were in origin an occupational caste has been admitted by all but no satisfactory derivation. I the name has been surrested.

been suggested. It has been suggested by Mr. A. h. Dev that the ward kayastha for thing but the can kintised form if the Persian or Parthian khayasthi, meand ga jet in build the institution of these officers both do a largely from the Persians. After the fall of the Saka parthian the litt tion arrived largely from the Persians. After the fall of the Saka parthia the litt tion arrived and the fiscal officers of the ward a kings retained that old name though and kinded I think this suggestion of Mr. Dev is very persioned on with the complete of the care that this suggestion of Mr. Dev is very persioned on with the attention of subdan. The exactions of the early Käyasthas made them unpopul or and gradually they came to form a cast. Käyastha are mentioned in the Smrti of Njilavasika in connection with the contitution of law courts and in the very old drama of Mrechakatika wind a käya that is the live court of the day.

the figure of a warrior. In the absence of recorded history, the inscriptions on some of these coins throw light on their staunch republicanism. On some coins we have the words 'Yaudheya-ganasya Jaya' while in other places we find the expression 'Yaudheyānam Jaya Mantra dharānām' Clearly, these speak of their corporate Gana and their elected elders and are an eye-opener to those who deny the existence of the republican principle in ancient India. Cunningham has identified the Johrya Rajputs with the descendants of the ancient Yaudheyas (see Cunningham's Ancient Coins of India, pp. 75-79, also Arch. Sur. Rep. Ind. Vol. XIV on Autonomous coins)

The coins of the Mālavas, who, too, survived and fought Nahapāna's son-in-law are equally suggestive and show how there was one commonly accepted style among the republicans. The Mālavas like the Yaudheyas also issued coins in the name of their corporation. Their coins bear a bull, lion or tree, with the legend 'Malava-ganasya or Mālavānām Jaya, meaning victory to their corporation.

The S<sub>1</sub>bis whose coins are found near modern Chitor issued their coins in the name of their Janapada of Sibi in Madhyamikā (Majhamikāyā Sibijanapadasa, See Chinningham on Autonoumous Coins of India, A.S. R. Vol. XIV)

Similar to these, we have the coins of the Arjunāyanas and these belonging to the Sunga period, bear the legend 'Ārjunāyana' and Ārjunāyana Jaya Thus, these reflect the same spirit as the other states mentioned above

We have coms of other autonomous non-monarchical states, namely, those of the Audumvaras, Aparāntas, Kummdas, Vrsms, and of the Mahārāja-janapada and the Rājanya Janapada The Mahārāja and Rājanya coins were issued in the name of their

respective Janapadas The real significance of the word Janapada is yet to be discovered Probably among the Mahārāja and Rājanyas there was the growth of an oligarchy of chiefs or fighters. This is clealy discernible in the case of the Vṛṣṇis and the Audumvaras some of whose later coins bear the legend of a ruler who is mentioned by name e.g. Mahādevasa rāno Dharaghosasa.\* This seems to point to the gradual or occasional supplanting of gaṇa rule by semi monarchical authority. We find an instance of this clearly in the case of the Yaudheyas one whose chiefs is mentioned Swāmi Brāhmanya Yaudheya and rnother is later on styled Mahārāja and Mahāsenāpati. The signle Vṛṣṇi coin is issued in the name of Vṛṣṇi rājanya janāsya bhubharasya e.g. the corporation of Vṛṣṇi Rṣattriyas (See J. R. A.S. 1900, pp. 416 420)

The coins of the Kunindas have been referred to a period immediately before the Christian era. The same is also the case with the Aparanta coins (near Shabazghari). For further details, see Cunningham A.S. Reports. Vol. XIV—on Autonomous coins, (pp. 129 1 et seq.)

Indian Republicans—It will be out of place to dwell at large on the history of these states or peoples since it is not within the scope of a volume like this. But this may be pointed out that these coins and their legends are sufficient to dispol the idea entertained by many European scholars and tacitly accepted by some Indian writers that republics were unknown in ancient India. Why and how such ideas originate is difficult to understand except on the axiomatic acceptance.

Some of the Audamwara coins throw doubt on their republican charact r In some of their coins, bearing the Trident battle aur tree plugh or a t mple w find three name of r had-erg Dharaghous, Sivadāsa and Rudradāsa bearing the Utles Slabkiers, Slahārāj or lisj raj

of the inferiority of the Indian political genius and the assumption that republics and republicanism were an exclusive patent of the West. Yet the facts are that Indian tradition as well as recorded documents clearly distinguish these from the monarchical states. They issued coins in the name, not of rulers, nor of castes but of political communities, who believed in their own separate and corporate political existence and manifested their faith in a res publica.

Again such states maintained their existence for as long a period (and occasionally for longer periods) as the republican states of Greece and Italy. The republican régime in Athens lasted for not more than eight hundred years and that in Rome for not more than six hundred years roughly. In India the facts are that the Yaudheyas existed from Pānini's time to the date of the Vijayagarh Inscription which is more than nine hundred years. In the case of the Mālavas we have real historical evidence of their existence from the time of Alexander to the rise of the Guptas which is more than six hundred years, even if we neglect their unrecorded early history.

Next, it has been advanced in some quarters that the Indian republics were nothing more nor less than tribal oligarchies, which reserved political power for the ruling few. Here again facts prove something to the contrary. The Mālavas, as stated already, certainly admitted Brahmins and men of other castes to live in their territory and to exercise the franchise. Certainly, this was not to be expected in an oligarchy. (See supra I, pp. 245 and 246). And does it not compare fairly with the state of affairs in Greece? Take Athens for example. In the hey-day of her prosperity political power at Athens was in the hands of a ruling section only. Slaves formed more than half of the population and they had no

political rights The Metiks were also excluded and even among bona fide Athenians, the tie of the phratrics and of religion was so powerful that it was difficult for a new-comer to get admission into the political life of the city Certainly, here too the Indians stood on a higher political level

Democracies in the modern sense existed neither in Greece nor Man's political rights were, in the ancient world every where subordinated to certain notions of status and certain privi These were the same in India as in the West leges of burth But the misfortune of India lay in the fact that her people exhibit ed a premature and precocious political genius longing for a higher type of evolution and this tended even in that remote age towards a cosmopolitan goal, though in society there existed divergences of race and culture standing in the path of a uniform social life Though differing in blood or race, Indians could bring themselves under a common political sway and solved their social problems in a peculiar way This was unknown in Greece where the people though loving equality and extolling freedom looked only for a social uniformity in a narrow political frame publican city state with its few thousand citizens remained the The Hellenes could not modify it or think chief ideal of Greece of an extensive empire It remained foreign to their genius That task was undertaken later on by Alexander himself a semi bar But that dream was but half realised barian empire-builder when the Greek lost his political individuality. He was swal lowed up and lost in the midst of the races whom he pretended to conquer

Practically a smilar tate of affairs reigned in Italy All the city tates were republies. Bome as one of them. By lest conquests she impress her vote offer estimate f Latium and o Ital. From 1 Lecture the militers of a rail empire. But that earnt the end of democrary and gradually of republication. The republic caree

under trainers and military icaders and very soon they became despots, who were lenfied by the people

In India, the line of development was not dissimilar. At first the republics were numerous. Gradually they became fewer and monarchy regulated by laws and public opinion gained ground. Later on monarchy became the political ideal of Indian thinkers. This was necessitated by the conflicts of races and principles. Universalism became the order of the day. Imperialism triumphed and the republics passed out of existence, after lasting for many centuries.

## Political Speculations of the Reaction

The consequences of the political disruption and foreign invasion deeply influenced the speculations of the age A strong reaction set in with a view to modifying the social outlook and the political ideal Men lost their faith in the ideals of the preceding age and yearned for a social and political order more likely to conserve than to lead to progress The champions of orthodoxy attributed the disasters to the heterodox religious propaganda and the upheaval of the masses Social disruption and political down fall were regarded as the consequences of false religious teachings and deviations in moral conduct. Consequently, the law givers of the reactionary age ushered in an era of social repression and political subjugation The aims and objectives of the Arthasastra teachers were denounced and the task of social reconstruction was entrusted to the exponents of the orthodox Dharma ideal They repudiated the secular ideals of the Arthasastra writers and con demned the goal of material prosperity. In place of these they thought of raising a state, more moral than material and more spiritual than political The Dharma ideal which had been raised so high by Asoka was resuscitated and the importance of Artha was minimised The Smrti writers, however, while they proposed to follow the canon of the Dharmasutras and Dharmasastras could not remain blind to facts Consciously and unconsciously

they utilised much of the Arthasastra material. Consequently, most of the regulations and principles accepted during the Imperialistic rule of the Mauryas remained intact, but the social and political outlook was entirely changed.

The earliest of these Dharmasastra-writers was the author of the Bhārgava recension of the Mānava Dharmaśāstra The author flourished most probably during the Sunga age and the present Manusamhitā cannot be ascribed to a period later than the 1st century B C The next great works of importance were the Yājñavalkya Smiti and the Smiti of Visnu, which closely follow the principles and tenets of the Manava writer Some of the views on ethics or law of the latter find support from the greatest commentator of the Mīmāmsā, namely Sabara Svāmin who also belonged to the period immediately posterior to that of Manu The general acceptance of the views of the Smiti-writers is also proved by the evidence of social life presented by the diamas of Bhāsa and more particularly by the Micchakatika<sup>(1)</sup> attributed to King Sūdiaka and composed most probably during the later Kuśāna period which was marked by Southern domination over the country iound Avanti

While Hinduism was changing its character and modifying its social outlook, Buddhism was fast losing its hold on the minds of the people. The age was marked by the rise of eminent exponents of a new Buddhist philosophy like Aśvaghosa, Nāgārjuna

<sup>(1)</sup> The date of the Mrcchakatika has given rise to an almost endless controversy Older Indologists used to assign it to the 1st century BC or AD. But some recent writers have tried to place it in the Gupta period. This, however, is untenable and certain internal evidences militate against it. The Cārudatta tradition is undoubtedly old and the present book cannot be placed later than the 1st or 1Ind century AD. The author evidently knew the Nānaka coins of the Kusānas, and flourished in an age in which Southerners were supreme in Avanti. This takes us to the pre Saka period.

or the authors of the Vibhāṣā and Sūtrānta school But it had nothing, as we shall see very soon to contribute towards political or social ideas. As such, the age was eventually one of Neo Hindu reaction and revival

In the domain of ethics and political philosophy the preeminent teacher of this reactionary age was, as we have said, the unknown author of the Bhargava recension of the Manava Dharma śāstra Unknown though he is he deserves recognition on account of his thorough mastery of the orthodox canon his knowledge of the diverse views of the different socio-ethical schools and his acumen as a lawgiver bent upon creating a system in opposition to the one which had gained acceptance for centuries merely by his interpretations. He rightly recognizes the normal desires and natural aspirations of man which impel him to action Furthermore he has the clearest idea about the prime duties of governments to maintain the life and property of subjects and his ideal of social happiness is higher than that of most of his predecs sors But inspite of these, his outlook is entirely a changed one He takes upon himself the task of presenting a social ideal which was more for conservation than for progress With this object he adopts a new interpretation of the older canon, with a view to overemphasising the sacerdotal ideal and nullifying the force of arguments which might go against it In doing this he is often But he proceeds careexposed to the charge of self contradiction fully and cautiously and seems to have had the support of the age His work was welcomed by the ruling orders and it is perhaps on account of this that his compilation gained universal credence and even now holds the foremost position among the Smrti works

The author of the Bhargava text was essentially a reactionary, as can be easily seen from his views on the supremises of the

Brāhmana, the social relation of the castes, the perpetual degradation of the Sūdia, the denunciation of womankind, the blind and unmoral advocacy of the absolute apthority of the father over family property, unequal division among sons and the rejection of the plea for the emancipation of slaves. A detailed discussion of these topics will be out of place here, but something requires to be said with a view to defining the author's place in the social and political history of India

As regards the Brāhmana, Manu leaves us no room for doubting his faith in the semi-divine position of the sacerdotal order and he utilises much of the Epic material to extol the position of the Brāhmana. With him, the Brāhmana is (along with the king) the upholder of the moral order, the highest of created beings, the divine representative of Dharma and the owner of everything on earth. With his characteristic fondness for hyperbole, the writer of the Samhitā uses language which only speaks for itself

सर्वका वास्य सर्गस्य धर्मतो ब्राह्मण प्रसः॥ M S I 93

वृद्धिसत्सानरा येष्ठा नरेषु ब्राप्तणाः स्मृता ॥ M S 196

चत्पत्तरिव विप्रस्य सृत्ति धर्मस्य भाषती ।

स हि धर्मार्थ सुत्तपत्री ब्रह्मभूयाय कलाते ॥ M ट 198

ब्राह्मणी जादमानी हि पृष्टिव्यामधिजायते ।

ईश्वर सर्व भूताना धर्मकीषस्य गुप्तये ॥ M S 196

सवै स्व ब्राह्मणस्ये द यत् किश्वद जगतीगतम् ।

श्री होनाभिजनेनेद सर्व वै ब्राह्मणीऽईति ॥ M S 1100

स्वभव ब्राह्मणी सुन्न को स्व' वस्ते स्व' ददाति च ।

प्रातृश्च स्याद ब्राह्मणस्य सुन्नते हीतर्रे जनाः ॥ M ट 1.101

<sup>(2)</sup> These views appear from the following verses of the Manusamhitä, taken mainly from the Epic tradition, eg—

and he does everything to uphold his idealism by presenting a sternly rigid code for the Brāhmana's guidance and denounces the slightest deviation from the type of Brihminhood laid down in his code. But inspite of his high idealism, he makes himself assailable by the champions of humanity on account of his emancipation of the Brāhmana from the rigiours of a criminal code and his want of sympathy for the masses

In the matter of relationship between caste and occupation, the lawgiver pretends merely to elaborate the directions of his predecessors and lavs down the traditional occupations of castes and mixed castes <sup>6)</sup> Generally speaking he is averse to mixed marriages and manifests a tendency to lower the position of the children of such marriages. The marriage of a Brilimana or a Kṣattriya with a Sūdrā he denounces in the most violent language<sup>(0)</sup> and stigmatises such a union as a bar to salvation though he him self admits the existence of customs to the contrary. Manu s violence to the Sūdra is one of the chief characteristics of his law-code and his constant declamations did more mischief by furnishing potent weapons to the more reactionary writers of a later and more decayed age. The Sūdra he excludes from higher judicial and

<sup>(3)</sup> Mann's caste theory is also in portant on account of the fact that he assigns to foreign tribes like the Sakas Class Hünas and Yayanas an Aryan origin and attributes their downfall to a deviation from the teachings of the Brahmins (cf. M. S. সুন্তুৰ মন ক্রিটার ক্রেল্ডের সিন্দুর।

<sup>(4)</sup> Manu s vebement denunciation of the marriage of Brahmays and K attriyas with 86 dars is found in the HIrd book of his work. Prior to this author some of the Grhya writers like Gobbila had forbidden it but they did not use so violent a 1 nguese not made it a but to salvation. (C/ Mans III—note the verses 13-19) We quote he:—

भूडो ज्यवसारीय्य बाह्यची यान्यशेवतिम् । जन्यन्या तुत्र सम्बो बाह्यसान्य धीवते ॥

Elsewhere (IX. 22.20) however be cites the cases of Aksamala and Rarangt who though low-born were married by reis and proved virtuous

executive services, assigns to him the only duty of serving the higher castes and reserves for him all the rigours of a merciless criminal code. Next to Sūdra, he denounces the female sex, as being naturally disposed towards untruth and guile He excludes them from higher intellectual pursuits, denies their customary inheritance (though recognising Strīdhanam), forbids sacraments or Vedic rites, violently denounces the very idea of the remarriage of widows and prescribes household duties and loyalty to husband as the sole end and aim of their existence though often he has to admit facts to the contrary

Almost in the same strain, he advocates the retention of slavery, justifies it as an institution of divine creation and conducive to the well-being of society. Curiously enough, the language he uses is almost similar to that of Aristotle (7)

<sup>(5)</sup> The Sudra is excluded from the office of counsellor and judge (cf धर्मप्रवित्ता तृपतिर्न तृ गृष्ट कहाचन।) This is against the spirit of the Epics

The only duty of the Sūdra according to Manu is service and the language used goes a long way to indentifying the Sūdra with the slave (of VII 413 414 दाखार व हि स्टीडिसी इ झगस्य स्वयम् वा। न स्वामिना निस्टीडिप ग्री दासाद विसुधाते॥) This is in curious contrast with the spirit of Arthasāstra

<sup>(6)</sup> Manu denies freedom to women (cf IX न स्त्री स्वातन्त्रामई ति।) and excludes them from sacraments and Vedic mantras (नास्त्र स्त्रीण क्रिंग मन्त्रीरित धर्मी व्यवस्थित। IX 18) He harps on their innate perversity (cf नितन्त्र्या धमन्त्राय न्त्रियोऽस्तिमिति स्थिति। IX 18) Marriage was their only sacrament and loyal service to husbands the only duty (cf M 8 II— वैवाहिकी विधि. स्त्रीण स स्त्रारी वैदिक स्थात । प्रतिसेवा गुरी वासी ग्रहायीऽग्रिपरिक्रिया॥)

<sup>(7)</sup> On slavery the views of Manu go counter to the spirit of the Arthasastra. While Kautilya is for unqualified emancipation of all, Manu pleads for slavery and regards the Sūdra as intended for the slavery of the Brahmin. What a reaction and what a degeneration in so short a period! cf—

The same attitude of reaction marks the views of the law giver on the end and aim of governments or the nature and extent of royal power The lawgiver starts by laving stress on the anarchy which would arise in the absence of a king and then em phasises the creation of the regal office by the Almighty well known lines on the origin of royal power make him a cham pion of regal authority out and out He proceeds a step further than the Epic writers In the eyes of the latter, the gods with whom the king was identified typified merely the different func tions of the universal system Indra represented leadership in war Yama was the destroyer Varuna was the judge, Agni was the punisher and purifier of sinners while Candra and Kubera were the supporters of life But Manu identifies the king s essence with the collected essences of the divine rulers of the uni versal phenomena Instead of harping on the parallelism of royal duties with those of the gods Indra Vayu Yama Agni Varuna Candra and Kubera he tries to make the king a real counterpart of the divine rulers and clothes the regal office as well as its holder with divine veneration ®

गृहं तु बारमेहाक क्षीतमकीतमेव वा ।
दाखायँ व डि क्टीडवी ब्राह्मचय स्वयम् वा ॥ VIII.413
व स्वामित्र निक्टीडिय ग्रहा दास्मारिगुक्ती ।
विश्वर्यक डि तत्तक बक्तवातदयोडीत ॥ VIII.414

As regards property he makes the fillers incapable of inheriting or holding property and places sons and wives of freemen on the same footing ( Mail 1988 1988) 44) 44 411 1981 )

<sup>(8)</sup> M nu s way I putting I lings I significant Ti Pric writer in Ch r A I the stantificant explain the allegorieal import of the king a klentification with the gode but Manu hints at the consubstantial equality of the king with the gode Discussive to be applains the allegorical import bring behind such a conception (cf. Manu Ch. IX)

Again, in explaining the evolution of the regal office, the law-giver never takes the people into account. He does not mention the election of Manu (as in M. B. Sānti 67) but makes the people a passive and mert agent in whose interests the creation of kingship was decided on by the Almighty

The main function of the king is to protect Dhaima or the moral order, self-emanent and self-existent which the author of the Manusamhitā does not clearly define, but which in its objective espect connotes the canon guiding the ways of men leading to happiness on earth and salvation after death. The sources of Dhaima, according to the author of the present samhitā, are four, viz, the Vedas, Smiti which derived as thorsty from its being dependent on the Siuti, Sadācāra or the customs and practices of the virtuous and lastly the dictates of a disciplined and virtuous conscience

To protect Dharma, the Almightv created Danda or regulated chastisement which impelled men to follow the right path. This Danda was created out of the essence of the Brahman and protected everything through the fear of punishment, cf—

तदर्धं सर्वभूतानां गोप्तारं दण्डमात्सजम्।
ब्रह्मतेजोमयं दण्डमस्जत् पूर्वभीष्वरः ॥ VII-14
तस्य सर्वाणि भूतानि स्थावराणि चराणि च।
भयाद्मोगाय कल्पन्ते स्वधमीत्र चलन्ति च॥ 15
स राजा पुरुषो दण्डः स नेता शासिता च सः।
चतुर्णामात्रमाणांच धर्मस्य प्रतिभृः स्मृतः॥ 16
दण्ड शास्ति प्रजाः सर्वा दण्ड एवाभिरच्यति।
दण्डः स्पृतेषु जागति दण्डं धर्मः विदुर्वेधाः॥ 17

Next, according to the author of the Manusamhitā, the king s sovereign authority arises out of his excicise of the laws of Danda

which is the upholder of Dharma In its subjective aspect Danda is nothing but Dharma itself — Danda strikes terror into the heart of wrongdoers and restrains all from violating the path of righteous ness — As such, Danda was the root and essence of moral order (cf सर्वे उप्कांतिती जीको दुर्जमी हि सचिन र। इष्क्रस्थ हि भयान सर्व जगद भोगाय कस्वते ॥)

The highest duty of the king is to wield the rod of punish ment, impartially and with due deference to circumstances (VII 16). The king a coercive authority knows no limitations and there is no one free from the coercive authority of the king including his nearest relatives. Failure to wield the rod of punishment righteously was a sin which makes the king stray from the path of Dharma and paves the way to his downfall (VII 27 28). On earth, the king was the highest chastiser and above him stands King Varuna (पितासारी सम्माना मार्था पुत्र पुरित्त । नार्यमो नाम समोदित य सममें न विष्ठि ॥ VIII 335). The king discharges his moral obligations by wielding the rod of punishment and the punishment inflicted by him purifies men from sin (VIII 318). If the king himself fails in awarding punishment he in his turn is liable for his sin and has to make amends to Varuna (पेगो उपस्थ वर्षो साई एक्सों हिस: VIII 285)

By wielding the rod of punishment, the king is to preserve the right conduct of all and to maintain the Varias and Asramas (castes and stages of life) The protection of Varias and Asramas is the highest duty of the king ( वर्गनामायमाण च राज सटोडॉम रिवस । VII 35) To know the real essence of Dharma as well as of Danda the king is to discipline lumself and study the Vedas Dandaniti Anvikshiki or Atmandya and Varitin He

should associate himself with the aged and always remain reverent to the Biahmins भुञ्जूषा ब्राह्मणानां च राज्ञां श्रेयस्तरं परम् ॥ VII 88)

The latter should be freed from punishment and taxation They should also be made to enjoy fiscal privileges like the ownership of treasure-troves found by them and be patronised in all possible ways

Next, the king should have learned and virtuous purchitas and experienced ministers of high quality numbering seven or eight. Dūtas (or ambassadors), collectors of taxes (Samāhartr) superintendents (Adhyaksas) and officials in cities (Sarvārthacintakas) and villages should be appointed. Groups of ten or twenty villages should have different officials to preside over, with still higher officials over groups of 50, 100 or a thousand villages. All these officials are to preserve peace, collect royal dues and eradicate thorns to peace by apprehending criminals or marauders. Careful attention is to be paid to the constitution of law-courts presided over by  $Pr\bar{a}dviv\bar{a}kas$  trying all kind of suits arising out of the violation of rights. The whole of the VIIIth chapter is devoted to justice and gives us the laws as well as the judicial procedure

In matters of taxation, the king is allowed the right to tax all sorts of income on account of his protection. He is allowed a share of the produce of lands, tolls on articles of trade, judicial fines and various other miscellaneous items. The amount of royal share, however, is not so high in the Manusamhitā as in the Arthaśāstra

Secure at home and having ensured peace and good government, the king should have his aimy properly organised. Then he should devote his attention to the fourfold objective (VII 99 which is already enumerated by Kautilya, viz, preservation of that

already in hand, recovery of that lost, acquisition of new things and proper distribution or enjoyment of things obtained). To achieve supremacy in the Mandala of states he should employ spies, know the difficulties of other lings and at the proper moment make wars of aggression. He should know the importance of the seven limbs of the state (saptānga), the principles ruling the Mandala, the laws of the sixfold policy or Şādgunya and the four means of attaining objectives, namely. Sāma Dāna, Bheda and Danda

Manus dissertations on these topics prove him to be a careful student of the Arthasastra and he seems to have borrowed largely from his predecessors of that school. These borrowings are not contined to the domain of internal politics but extend to matters relating to the administrative machinery. Thus, in the matter of taxation, he mentions almost all the the items of royal dues, though regarding the amount of royal share he follows the older Dharmasastras or the Epics. He calls upon kings not to be over greedy exhorts them to put an end to all hindrances to peace (Kantaka) and justifies a levy of taxes on artisans and even forced labour. He advocates the punishment of low-caste people taking to orders but makes exceptions in the case of those people who leave their homes after making provisions for children and dependents.

But with all this his is a narrower outlook inasmuch as he pays not the same amount of attention to the material development of the king a subjects as was the case with the Arthasastra writers. The only people whose suffering he tries to remove and for whom he advocates the fullest amount of bounts are the Scottinas (VII 133-135). To sum up, Mann's ideals are the consolidation of regal authority and the maintenance of moral order.

To consolidate regal authority and to extol the king's position, Manu not only enunciates his theory of the divine origin of monarchy but goes on to free kings from the chances of revolt or opposition on the part of subjects We have already seen how he has utilised the older ideas of the Epics to his purpose, but not satisfied with it he tries haid to safeguard the king's position by advancing a doctrine similar to non-resistance adopted by the advocates of regal authority when opposing nical king in Mediæval Europe The Epic writers, though they advocated obedience, at least admitted the chances of subjects Some of them, as we have already seen (I p rising in levolt 294), emphasised the moral right of revolution and the extremists among them went so far as to make tyrannicide a duty of subjects But Manu does nothing of the kind He harps merely on the excellence of the king, the omnipotence of his pierogatives and the consequences of loyal angel For unrighteous kings, he prescribes gradual decay and final downfall through the process of the immutable laws of nature, and enumerates the examples of Vena, Nahusa and Sudāsa losing everything through indiscipline such circumstances, we find his veneration for the regal office carried too far and this is transferred to the holder of that office who, as we have seen is to be regarded as a Devatā on earth ( महती देवता होषा नररूपेण तिष्ठति । VII 8)

While such a theory of unquestioned obedience gained acceptance in an age of anarchy and foreign invasion, the over-jealousness of the reactionary writer did not make him entirely forget some of the traditional limitations of regal power. Thus, Manu does not confer on the king the right to tamper with the laws and their interpretation which he vests solely in the Brāhmanas, the sacerdotal order, holding a position of privileged supremacy in

society (see Bk XI) Similarly Manu does not go so far as to recognise the king's ownership of land. According to him ownership resided in the community and he admits real ownership in a plot of land to be vested in him who cleared it. The king's right to taxation, similarly arises according to him, from his function of protection and he prescribes downfall and a future life in hell for those who realised taxes without granting protection to their subjects of—

## योऽरचन् विलमादत्ते कर शस्क च पार्थि व । प्रतिमीग च दण्ड च स सची नरक ब्रजेत्॥ VIII 304 et seq

To sum up, the spirit of Manu s ethics and politics was reaction in society and subjugation in politics. He extols coercion and discards altogether the primary principles of the Kautilvan deal of paternal government. His sympathics were for the main tenance of the moral order and the patronage of the saccrdotal caste. For the masses or for the material progress of mankind he has not a word to say except that the former should be put down and kept completely in check.

The miscluef done was incalculable. The influence of his law-code was too deep to last for a century or two. It affected the outlook of society for ages to come and smothered the spirit of reason or moderation in the individual. Whatever was good in him was forgotten but the evil swelled with the usury of ages and helped to bear down society to the abvas of downfall. The constant employment of Arthurada, the systematic harping on the religious scruples and fears of the people, and the tendency to identify the aim of religion and politics bore bitter fruit. In later ages, his code became the ideal of reactionary languages and was the gospal for those who followed without reasoning and accepted without

questioning It became the sole source of authority to the agents of leaction in the task of upholding a stagnant society with its privileges for the higher orders and perpetual repression of the lower castes

The other Smiti-writers of the period were the authors of the Yājñavalkya and Visnu Smitis Yājñavalkya closely follows many of the tenets of the Manusamhitā He enumerates the 19 authors of Smiti, extols the importance of the Dharmasastras and expressly lays down the excellence of these over Arthaśāstras 21 अर्थ शास्तान्तु बलवङ्गम शास्तुमिति स्थिति: I). Like Manu, he mentions the four sources of Dharma, (though he enumerates sidiary sources of knowledge which are fourteen in number). extols the supremacy of the Brāhmana, directs kings to be kind to them (I 334) and makes regal authority the sole basis of In addition to the traditional privileges, order and progress Brāhmanas are assigned half of treasure-troves and kings are called upon to take their advice He is also averse to the ındependence of women (see I 85 न स्नातन्तुर' क्वचित् स्तिय:।) the author of the Manusamhitā he piescribes for kings the study of the four sciences (Ānvīksikī, Dandanīti, Vāittā and Trayī), though the Vedas are put last He mentions the four traditional means and aims of politics and accepts, like Manu, Kautilya's seven He emphasises the universal coercive limbs of the state junisdiction of the king (I 358) In many cases, we have not only a similarity of ideas between the Manusmrti and the Yajñavalkya but also a similarity in language Yājūavalkya too is a believer in the obedience of subjects, identifies Danda with Dhaima (I 354) and uses language sımılaı to that found in the Manusamhitā in

prescribing a life in hell for unrighteous kings (I 357) who fail to punish properly (see also I 341)

The chapters on civil law are more developed in this Smrti and we have a mention of the ordeals (II 95) The various sec. tions of law show however a more intimate acquaintance with the Arthasastra code and Yajnavalkya who gives a high place to Nyava (I 21) utilises more materials from the Kautiliya as pointed out by Dr Shamasastry in his footnotes to the English translation Yājňavalkya moreover does not like the Mānava Code, lay down the number of ministers (I 312) In one place, he alludes to the paternal ideal so prominent the Arthasastra ın 351 स्वाद्रावा सत्यवर्गेषु प्रकास च यया पिता ) He follows also the Kautiliya when he directs kings (II 36) to compensate subjects (from the treasury) who lose money or goods stolen by thieves and thus emphasises the contractual relation between the king and his subjects. In foreign policy Yajfavalkya pleads for the retention of existing laws in a conquered country (I 343) While speaking of the necessity of having ministers he uses practically the language of the Arthaéastra (cf यया हो केन चक्केण स्थस्य न गतिर्भवेत The Visnu Smrti has almost the 36--- Y ä1 Smrti) same social scheme as the Manusamhitā or The author denounces marriages of Brahmins valkya Samhitā with Sudra women and calls upon kings to maintain the law of He makes Brahmanas practically exempt castes and déramas from taxation and they are allowed to appropriate the whole of treasures discovered by them. His scheme of local government is based on older traditions, though slightly differing from that in the Manusambita

The author of the Smith is a believer in the traditional theory of taxation and makes the king entitled to a share of all incomes, on account of his protection. He assigns to the king the traditional one-sixth, one-eighth or one-twelfth of the produce of land and one-fiftieth of cattle and gold in addition to a sixth, on vegetables, spices, flowers, roots, hides and earthenware (VII 130-132). Customs duties and tolls are recognized as well as the produce of mines and a half of treasure-troves. Kings were also allowed to levy taxes on artisans and workmen of all descriptions. The author of the Samhitā makes the king entitled to a tenth part of the money-value of suits adjudicated in royal courts. His criminal code is severe. His theory of the state and of foreign policy is what we find in the Arthaśāstra (VII 154-174) but he is averse to the destruction of a conquered country.

Mīmāmsā — Apart from these three lawgivers, we have no other prominent theorists on politics and government during this period But from the Mīmāmsā-writer, Sabarasvāmī, we have some clear ideas as to contemporary views on the vexed question of royal ownership of land This has received prominence in view of the controversy raised by European writers as to whether the share paid to government by Indian cultivators and landlords is rent or tax, and the more so because there have been attempts in some quarters to interpret Sanskrit texts with a view to bringing their import into a line with the ideas and practices which obtain in The over-zealous ignorance of some writers has also lent support to the theory of the king's ownership of land which is advocated by English writers But the time import of the passages becomes clear when we go through important texts and care to accept an interpretation fitting to the context and not opposed to the general spirit of Hindu law Sabara's comment on the Jaimini

Sūtras (VI 7 3) where the question of king s rights to alienate his territory in connection with the celebration of the Visualit bacrifice enables us to make our ideas clear on this point

Sabara comments on Jaimini s Sūtra " न सूमिः स्वात् सर्वान् प्रत्यविष्टलात् " as follows —

पाने व सर्वदाने स ययः। कि भूमिर्दया न इति। का प्रमर्श् मिरना मिमेता न्यदेतन्त्रस्य द्रव्यान्तर प्रथिवीगोलक न के नमान स्वत्तिका वा न्यं प्राप्ते प्रभूम न भूमिर्देश इति। कुतः के नाषामीशितारो मत्या न दृष्यन्ते क्षत्वस्य प्रथिवीगोलकस्य इति। पाइ य इदानी सार्वभीमा स ति कृता। कुतो यावता भोगेन सार्वभीमा भूमेरीष्टे तावता चन्योऽपि न तन कि विदिश्या। सार्वभीमत्व इस्म लेतदिवन यदसी प्रथिव्यां सभूतानां बीद्यादीनां रचणे निविष्टस्य कस्यविद् भागस्य ईष्टे न भूमे न तिविष्टस्य वस्यविद् भागस्य ईष्टे न भूमे न तिविष्टस्य कस्यविद् भागस्य ईष्टे न भूमे न तिविष्टस्य वस्यविद्वाम् पारविक्रममणादि यद भूमिकत तने शित प्रति न किया इपेप। तस्माद समिने हिया।

Colebrooke discusses this question in his essay on Mimamsa and summarises the views of the Mimamsa writers, especially Sabara (commenting on VI 7 3) and clearly emphasises the cardinal principle of Hindu law that minor princes as well as their universal overlords are not the owners of the soil. By conquests kings become entitled only to the property of the conquered kings and not to the land of the subjects living on the annexed territory. In these the conqueror is entitled to the share of the produce which goes to the ruler for his protection and punishment of wrong-doing Nothing else is vested in him. Colebrooke summarises by swing

The King's power is for the government of the realm and extirpation of wrongs. For that purpose he receives taxes from husbandmen and levies fines on offenders. But right of property is not vested in him also he would have property in houses and

lands appertaining to the subjects abiding in the realm earth is not the king's but is common to all beings enjoying the fruits of their labour. It belongs according to Jaimini to all Therefore, although a gift of a piece of land to an individual does take place, the whole land cannot be given by the monarch, nor a province by the subordinate prince but houses and fields acquired by purchase and similar means are hable to gift " On this head we shall have to devote more attention especially in connection with the views of later writers like Kātyāyana or commentators like Vijñāneśvara, Nīlakaņtha or Mādhava  $M_1$ Javaswal has discussed this question in detail in his Hindu Polity (II 174-178) and it obtained a similar attention from other writers on the Hindu theory of land-tenure (S C Mittia's Landlaws of Bengal, Ch 1). They have all relied on this passage, and as such they have adopted the right line of agreement and conclusion (9)

<sup>(9)</sup> We have already discussed the question of regal ownership of land in connection with the land-policy of the Kauītilīya government and shown clearly (Ch. II, p. 38) how two classes of land, e.g., the Brahma deya and the A karada, remained exempt from rent. The A karada tenants were owners of free hold paying takes in lieu of protection but not rent. There is no denying the fact that through the process of conquest large patches of land passed to the king in proprietary right but conquest never extinguished the rights of freeholders of the conquered kingdom and they retained their ownership till the last days of Hindu independence

In such a discussion, we should try to have a clear line of demarcation between the king's or the conqueror's suzerain rights and his proprietary right as is done in modern International Law. When a province is annexed by a conqueror, the private property of the ruler or state property in land in that region passes to the conqueror and he is entitled to taxes from his new subjects who enjoy as of old their proprietary rights. The principle of Hindu law is very clear on this point and later writers like Kātyāyana leave no room for misunderstanding

## Political Thought of the Buddhists

The influence of a similar reaction is evident from the study of contemporary Buddhist works. As pointed out already, the social ideals of the Buddhists were subjected to the influence of similar forces and the idea of a theocratic state floated before Dharma became the supreme ruling and guiding principle and the Jataka preambles repeatedly speak of Buddha as Dharma-cakrayarttī with his heutenants described as Dharma senapati Saciva or Bhandagarika As the character of Buddhism changed and the active Bodhisattva became the more intimate object of veneration the Buddhist came to be more and more nfluenced by the reaction in favour of an enhanced regal authority Furthermore as some of the contemporary teachers and writers on Buddhism were of Brähmana descent, they merely continued the ancient tradition about kingship and government in the absence of a specific Buddhist political code. This is apparent from the writings of the Northern Buddhists, the most prominent among whom during this period was Asvaghosa Spring from a Brah min family and reputed to have been a courtur at the court of Kaniska he is regarded as the author of a number of works including the epics of Buddha-carita and the Saundarinanda and even of the Vajrasuci - In all these writings there is nothing which militates against the contemporary teaching of Brahman

ism though in social matters we have an attack on easte in the Vapasūcī. The closing verses of the first canto of the Saundarānanda show clearly that the poet was a believer in the evils of anarchy and goes on to narrate the election of a king at Kapilavasin and the king-elect accepted royalty for the sake of maintaining the precepts of Dharma (1 60-63-note the words धर्माय ने न्द्रियम् खाय जुगीप राष्ट्रम् ।). Not satisfied with this, Astaghosa proceeds further and makes Suddhodana crowned king instead of an elected president and the king is made to rule, receiving a sixth part of the produce as his share the case of the Jatakamālā by Ārvasūra, it goes a long way to support these views. In Story II, he makes the Sibi king rule his subjects as if they were his children and the king is distinguished not only by his charity but also builds alms-houses, relieves the distress of all and calls upon his subjects to inform him of their causes of complaint. The other stories are written in the same spirit and they show the influence of the reaction in political thought

The only deviation from contemporary thought and ideals is Asyaghasa's deminisation of the spirit of caste and his plea for the recognition of the position of men through ment and not by social status or birth (cf जातिब्राह्मणो न भवति। इस हि कैवर्त्तरजन- चण्डानकुलेक्विप ब्राह्मणा मन्ति . एकवर्णी नास्ति चातुर्वर्ण्यम्।).

The influence of contemporary thought is discernible even in the Lalitavistara, which has nothing specifically Buddhistic in it. The influence of Dharma idealism is also found in other writers Aryadeva, reputed to be have been a great teacher and the author of the Catuhśatikā, a philosophical work, gives us his views on kingship and has two passages devoted to the consideration of

politics and kingship. In these two pasages he pleads for the reign of righteousness and condemns the doing of kings of the Iron Age who had substituted violence for paternal care had converted the world into a deer park and justified their conduct by the rules of Dharma as laid down by the rais. Aryadeva protests against these presumptions and displays of arrogance on the part of despots ruling in an age of anarchy and in denouncing such conduct falls back on an older tradition reminding kings that they were but the servants of the multitude and subsisted on the wages given by the people they ruled (nucleus of the wages given by the

Secular Writers —Leaving the poet Asvaghosa whose writings have already been considered in connection with Buddhist thought, we proceed to other secular writers of the period, the most prominent among whom are the poets Bhāsa and Sūdraka the author of Mrcchalatika Bhāsa about whose date there is still much doubt lived probably not later than the IIIrd or IVth een A D His dramas are based on plots borrowed from the Epics or

<sup>(1)</sup> These passages first cited by Dr D B Bhandarkar in his Carmickel Lectures (I p 199) have been misunderstood by later writers and some of them have proceeded so far as to make them the corner stone of a Buddhist theory of emancipation of morality from the influence of politics. One writer has attempted to show its direct opposition to the Brahmanical canon which made politics independent of morality. As instances of such darregard for morality the author cites the rules of Brahmanical codes justifying the execution of criminals alaughter of enemies in battle and trescherous situacks on bouille kines.

A careful analysis however makes us hold such conclusions as unwarranted Brábmanical works never regard politics independent of morality but on the contrary make the political machinery the upholder of the moral canno. But the very fact that they lay down rules of practical politics makes them sanction coercies necessary and sacrifice the extreme tenets of pacifiem. Aryaders a writer on philosophy 1 ad little room for the rules of condoct to be adopted by a king and Lence his ples for pacifism has no hearing upon that question. In common with the Brât-im nical writers he was a believer in the rule of righter unness or Bharma and merely echees the traditional theories of taxation and the contract ubsit ting between the kin a d to adjects.

on legends current in those days. He is a believer in the traditional Brāhmanie order of things. In polities, he seems to have been acquainted with the traditional Dharma-stra rules. He stands for the supremacy of Dharma, the consolidation of monarchy and of ministerial loyalty to the crown, not to speak of the supremacy of the Brāhmaṇa. Neither a believer in popular supremacy nor in regal despotism, he derives his inspiration from the epic tradition and pleads for the continuance of the traditional regime.

Sūdraka's date has not vet been clearly ascertained but he must have lived near about the 1st century A D which saw a lax social life and the decay of Buddhism His book describes the consequences of an age of anarchy and he gives us the picture of the trianny of a low-boin king, the excesses of his favourites and the consequent revolt of subjects His kingly ideal is summarised in two verses In the first verse where Sūdraka is described as the ideal king, he is depicted as one versed in the Vedas and the sacrifices sacred and performing like sciences In the concluding verse of the diama or Aśyamedha Bharatavākya, he prays for an ideal state of existence in which the natural forces contribute to the prosperity of mankind and when the pious are honoured and a righteous king rules obedient to the laws of Dharma

Towards the close of the period, the study of Arthaśāstra was revived and Kāmandaka wrote his Nītisāra. About this book or its precepts proper attention should be given in connection with the writings of the next period.

## **BOOK IX**

POLITICAL DEVELOPMENTS

IVth Century A.D to XIIIth Century A.D

The close of the IIIrd century A D and the dawn of the IVth were marked by a remarkable political revival. Almost all the foreign powers declined and indigenous dynasties raised their heads. Three such powers divided the supremacy over the country amongst themselves. In the plain of Hindustan, the Guptas became the suzerain authority Central India and the Decean passed to the Vākāṭakas, a) and in the extreme south, a new power, the Pallavas and made themselves the overlords of the three Tamil

<sup>(1)</sup> The Valdiake Dynosity—They dominated Central India from the close of the Hird century AD to the middle of the Vith century (500 A D). The founder of the line was Vindhyańskit whose son Pravarasena I was a great king and in his line arose princes who performed innumerable Vajapera and Aramedha sacrifices. The early Valajakas formed a marifal alliance with the Nagas of Bhara Wa. They were slavitle and worshippers of Sakil. In the height of their power the Valajakas ruled over an empire stretching from the Narmada to the Krpst while the Nadambas and some other smaller principalities a knowledged their an crainty. Harisena was the last prominent ruler of the kingdom (for details see Jonecan Dubrenii a Deceas pp. 71 70 Viscent Smith's articles in J R A S 1914 Frishans wany Irengera in Ind Andiq 1926.)

<sup>(2)</sup> The Pallaras—The origin of the Pallara i hroaded in my tery Early artiers 11. V Smith Venkays and Rice regarded the Pallara a ferri erre and tried to ideal for them with the Pal-ara of Western India. A the result of the researches f a number if workers especially Dr. Jouvean Duberol it theory of Persian ori in has been discarded and various theories of indicenses erigin has gained ground (see Dubreoll pp. 46-57 also (Graham II story of the P lieras pp. 1-31). The Pallara power was

principalities which had been fighting for supremacy, while the north-western regions, first conquered by the Mauryas, became permanently detached from the monarchy that dominated Hindustan. The Guptas under Samudragupta made a bid for universal dominion but inspite of their extravagant claims, they failed to extend their supremacy over the Decean or penetrate the south (5)

Under Chandragupta II, Vikiamādītya, the Guptas succeeded in annexing the territories of the Sakas of Ujjain, but their power did not long survive. Under Kumāragupta and Skandagupta, there were other waves of foreign invasion and inspite of the best efforts of Skandagupta, the almost imperial power of the Guptas succumbed, by the middle of the VIth contury, to these attacks. Offshoots of the dynasty, however, maintained themselves in many of the provinces, 40 e.g., in Malwa, Magadha and Bengal

probably founded during the middle of the IIIrd certury A D by Bapparāja, the fifth in line from him, Visnugopa being a contemporary of Samudragupta (340 A D). These rulers issued charters in Prakrit and were followed by princes who have left records in Sanskrit. From 575 to 900 A D, the South was ruled by the greater Pallavas, who were powerful monarchs and had to fight the Cālukyas in the North. Narasimha Varman I (630 650 A D.) defeated Pulakesin II and invaded Ceylon. Towards the close of the IXth century, the Pallavas became weak and succumbed to the inroads of the Colas.

<sup>(3)</sup> Sumudragupta's Southern Advance—The extravagance of Samudragupta's claims is apparent from the fact that the writer of Pratasti does not take care to mention even the Väkätakas who ruled over so extensive an empire. Again, the wrong identification of place-names by modern historians made him appear as the conqueror of the South. In fact, the time has come when scholars will doubt the fact of his having passed beyond the mouth of the Godävarī where he was repulsed and whence he had to beat a hasty retreat. (On this point, see Prof. Jouveau Dubreuil's objections in his History of the Deccan, p. 117.)

<sup>(4)</sup> The Later Guptas —The later history of the Gupta dynasty is yet to be written Probably, Puragupta succeeded Skandagupta and after him came a number of other Gupta Kings with authority more nominal than real. The names of these are Narasimha gupta Balāditya, Kumāragupta II, Budhagupta, Tathāgatagupta and Balāditya who ruled from about 473 AD to cir 540 AD. After these princes, the nominal authority of

Other political changes took place about the same time The Vākāṭakas were ultimately (by middle of the VIth century) supplanted by the Cālukyas in the Deccan and with these latter, a perennial struggle was waged by the Pallavas of the south. In Northern India, a number of states arose out of the break up of the Gupta Empire Powerful kings warred for suzerainty but none succeeded in establishing permanent supremacy. King Yaśodharman who defeated the Hūṇas dominated for a time but was probably defeated by some powerful rival king. Towards the close of the VIth century, a number of dynastics established them selves in various provinces of Northern India. Prominent among these were the ruling families of Magadha, the Valabhi princes, (6) the rulers of Thaneswar (Prabbākaravardhana s line), (7)

the Guptas in Northern India became further reduced and sectus to have been mainly confined to Eastern India. Here we find the line of Kṛṇṣgupta bolding sway—namely Kṛṇṣgupta Kumaragupta III Damodaragupta Mahāsenagupta Devagupta III and Madharagupta. The Guptas had some authority in Eastern India and on the death of Harra the contemporary Gupta king Adityasena asserted his sweerigm authority over a large part of Eastern India and performed some Asvamedha sacrifices The age of anarchy helped him to make extravagant claims. But after the third prince of his line (livitagents III) the authority of the Guptas was finally extingus shed

<sup>(5)</sup> latedharman —) néolbarnian described as a Janendra and a devoit flat ité étérated the Hôgas and established autherity ner a vast empire. Ille Mandasser increptions have come down to us. Probably his supremace wa short lives.

<sup>(6)</sup> Valabhi Princes.—The Valabhi princes claimed devent from Renapati Illujă La Coprin II Ilas of 320 (upta pear). They attained power and propertiy under he auccessor. The third prince of the line Maka Dapdandyaka and Sămanta Drona Emila touk the title of Mahânija while Dharasena II took the styles and titles of taramathetiţăraka and Itlajenaleavanti (er. 255-330 U year).

<sup>(7)</sup> The cir to King — Near all six Thanel are arose the line of facint. King producing Irabil kara kandi on literal violations and Harra kandi six Ti. Lander if the dinary was 10 publishing.

of Kashmii<sup>(6)</sup> (with a number of dependencies), of Kāmarūpa<sup>(9)</sup> (in Eastern India), the Maukharis<sup>(10)</sup> in the upper Ganges Valley, West Bengal (under different lines of kings which produced the conqueror Śaśānka)<sup>(11)</sup> and several other localities in Eastern Bengal (for these princes see Dr. R. C. Majumdar's Monograph on the History of Bengal pp. 14-17), while in Central India ruled the two lines of Pariviājakas and Ucchakalpa Mahārājas, who had more or less acknowledged the power of the Guptas

The downfall of the Vākātakas, similarly, caused a serious turmoil in Central India and the Deccan—In their days of prosperity, they had exercised suzeram authority over a large number of minor kingdoms—Thus, their allies and feudatories probably included—the princes of Sarabhapuri, the Traikūtakas of the western coast, the Sālankāyanas of Vengipūra, their relatives the Visnukundins of Sir-Parvata and the Kadambas of the Kanarese districts.

<sup>(8)</sup> Kashmir—Kashmir became a powerful kingdom. About the time of Harşa, the Karkota dynasty was founded by Durlabha Vardhana, son in law of Balāditya. At the time of Hiuen Tsang's visit, the kings of Kashmir evercised suzerainty over a large number of states on the western frontier.

<sup>(9)</sup> Kāmarūpa — Kāmarūpa too was a separate kingdom. Its earliest epigraphic mention is in the Prasasti of Samudragupta. During Harşa's time Bhāskaravarman ruled there. He was Harşa's ally

<sup>(10)</sup> Maukharis—The Maukharis were a line of powerful Saivite kings whose inscriptions are found in Jaunpur, near about Gaya and in some places of the Central Provinces. Though occasionally connected by marriage with the Guptas, they were often at war with the latter dynasty. The more important kings of this line were Mahārāja Harivarman, Adityavarman, Isvaravarman, Sarvavarman, etc.

<sup>(11)</sup> King Saśānha—The real history of Saśānka is yet to be written. His famīly and the exact date of his accession are not known, but the name Sasānka occurs in two inscriptions (e.g., Rhotasgarh and Ganjam plates) and it seems that this ambitious prince extended his authority from Ganjam to Northern and Western Bengal and Bihar and made a bid for imperial authority. His capital was Karna Suvarna and gold coins bearing his name have been found. The Chinese traveller Hinen Tsang calls him the murderer of Rājya Vardhana, but we have nothing else to prove it

On the downfall of the Vākāṭakās the Kaṭaccuris ruled over a region extending from Nasik to Ujjain the Eastern Gaṅgas exercised authority near about Orissa while the Kaḍambas maintained themselves in Kuntala But the Kaṭaccuris, Kaḍambas as well as the Viṣnukunḍins were conquered by Pula keśin II of the Cālukya dynasty or by his predecessors (12)

In the region of the extreme south the Pallavas of the IIIrd dynasty exercised suzeram authority. They had quarrels with the Cālukyas of the north, Vengi being the bone of contention. The Pallava Mahendravarman (600-690) who was a patron of Saivism checked the Cālukyas while Narasimha varman burnt Vātāpi, causing the death of Pulaksin II

Indian during the middle of the VIIth Century —The middle of the VIIth century saw the waging of a many-sided contest amongst a number of fighting princes King Harşavardhana of Kanauj having his allies of Kāmarūpa and Mālava Sarāṣṭra and related to the Maukharis, had to fight (according to some) Saśānka of Western Bengal and became the suzerain over a large part of Hindustan but his southern progress was checked by Pulakéin II Cālukya, who in his turn was checked by the Pallava Nara

<sup>(19)</sup> Palaketin II — Polaketin II Călukya was a powerful prince and ruled from 611 to 633 A D He conquered Mahārāstra the principality of the Kadambas and redoced the Mauryas of Konkan and the kings of Laja and Mālava Hr other enemies were Mauryarurdhana in the north and the Pallava Narasimb varman in the south. II Harsavarurdhana in the north and the Pallava Narasimb varman made him lose his capital and life. He gave the catern part of it kingdom to his brother who founded the line of the Ea term Cal kyas. He received a special embassy from the king of Lersia and was rulted by Hison Teang.

<sup>(15)</sup> Varazimhararman Pollara — Naras mbavarman (COGA AD) the greatest of the Pallavas not only heeked the Calukva but sched and bernst their expital Valifi H also en queried Cestin and had a very powerfile very H k just Cra Cl addressed to under his authority

simha-varman The Indus Valley and Kashmii<sup>(14)</sup> together with the north-western frontier states remained separated from the plain of Hindustan and the rulers of Kashmii became for a time the dominant power in that region. Nepal like Kashmii became separated from the politics of Northern India and the dynasties cultivated friendly relations with Tibet and China

The closing years of Harsa's reign were remarkable for the dawn of an era of great changes—It was during his life-time that the religion of Islam was preached by Prophet Muhammad and Harsa was still living while the Arab conquest of Persia was completed and that of the Makran coast undertaken—Lacking in the genius of consolidation Harsa's sporadic conquests were not likely to survive and his tendencies gave little assurance to that effect—Like the thoughtless religious propaganda of Aśoka, the meaningless charity and extravagance of Harsa bore bitter fruit His own kingdom fell into the hands of a usurper, necessitating Chinese and Tibetan interference (15)—The new political condition,

<sup>(14)</sup> The kings of Kashmir belonging to the Karkota dynasty had become very powerful Probably King Dur'ab' a-Vardhana was the contemporary of Harsa According to Hinen Tsang, the kings of Kashmir exercised suzerainty over the extreme north west and were very powerful

<sup>(15)</sup> We can hardly understand the raesons why Harsa is so highly extelled by European writers on the history of India. Not to speak of writers like Ettinghausen or Kennedy, even the late Sir Vincent Snuth went so far as to describe him as the last great Emperor of India, whose death marked the final disruption of a central power in Northern India and the beginning of an age of perennial internal struggle until the appearance of the Mussalmans

Yet a careful study of the history of his reign makes us thoroughly disillusioned. The empire of Harsa did not even comprise the whole of Northern India, and small as the area was under his suzerain authority, it was hardly consolidated into a lasting empire. He warred on, he conquered,—he thought of further expansion beyond the Narmadā—but he failed to consolidate. As soon as he closed his eyes, nothing remained of that empire a usurper sat on his throne and Chinamen and Tibetans came to put an end to anarchy

for a time, robbed Eastern India of its preponderating influence over the politics of India — The surerainty over the North Western trans frontier states passed to other nations and after a bitter struggle the princes of the Tang dynasty became masters of North Western India and Central Asia

More serious enemies to Indian culture and political existence appeared in the person of the early propagandists spiritual and military, of Islam — Arab armies made their appearance on the north and western frontiers of India — Makran was invaded and arter the defeat of Sihas rai and Sāhas!, the Sūdra kings of Sindh, the Makran coast was lost to the Hindus permanently (644 AD) — Sindh<sup>an</sup> itself resisted for another 70 years under the Brahmin usurper Chach and his son Dāhir but ultimately suc

True to speak his was no empire in any sense of the word. His age too was one which warked the high tide of growing Indian demoralization. While he was indulging to charitres and benerolences I is biographer was denouncing even the tradition of an imperial rule and scoffing at the memory of hautilys. With all these bowever he was fortunate enough to have able biographers to sound the frampet of his glory—one to describe his great conquests which did not survive even a decade after his death the other to harp on his great piety which did nothing but help in the coming ruin and open the gates of India to a foreign enemy (For one of the ablest estimates of Harps see R. C. Majumdat a paper in J. B. O. R. S. 1923.)

(16) The Conquest of the Makran Coast —Once established in Persia the Arabe inread their eyes to the Makran coast and Sindh which was ruled by Saha i a Sodra according to the evidence of Ricen Tang and the Chachnams In all probability the Makran coast was overrum by the Arabe shock

the year 010 AD

(17) The Conquest of Sindh—Sindh according to the Ha specials had been compared by Harva ( and made the wealth of Sindh hi own gatinties in six users well-reflect up.). Who this Sindh King was we do not know but be has been identified with Saharu. After him the thinne was a uniped by a Brahman mannel Charba. This number can shalated his authority and was followed by the Lordber and then by his was Dahlir Dahir had a dispute with Hajja) the Markon powerper of Terris regarding reperation of the beding of present int and the time hit (Wall by the private of Dewal This led to neces. Arab in as in the last lesing hed by Molammad bin had in who of feated Dahir after gaining, the help of the head Buddhi first parel to the

cumbed to the invasion of Muhammad-ibn-Kasim who got assistance from the rebellions local Buddhists (714 A D ). Simultaneously, the Arabs pressed hard in Central Asia and the western border and though with Chinese help, the princes of Kashmir, Udvāna (Swat) and Chitral maintained themselves for some time (720 to 751 A D ), the defeat of the Chinese General Sien Chi, made the task of Arab advance towards India easier

The Great Political Revolution of the VIIIth Century --- But with all these events, India proper was not destined to fall an easy prey to the Islamic armies. In the face of foreign aggression, there came an almost synchronous political revolution which marked the ascendency of new powers and which checked the spirit of disintegration and anarchy. The Rajputs<sup>(3)</sup> came to rule

<sup>(18)</sup> Islamic Preparsion in Central Isla—Side by side there was an extension of Islamic power in Central Asia. An Islamic kingdom was founded near Bokhara by Asia, a Zoroistrian convert to Mahomedanism (825 AD). Under his son and grandson, the sovereignate of the Samanider was extended over Samarkhand and Fergana. About 912 AD in officer of the Samanides, Yakub'i Lais, captured Merat, occupied Zabulistan from the Rapputs and also took away the citadel of Kabul, which was then in the hands of the Brahmun Shāhīs, whose dynasty was founded by Kallar.

In the reign of the Samanide Nuh (912 acc), Turkish slaves were enlisted in the Amir's army, and in the reign of Abdul Malik and his successor Mansur, Turks rose into prominence. One of these Turki slaves, Alaptagin, founded the kingdom of Ghazni and later on this principality passed into the hands of Subuktigin. Subuktigin's son was the celebrated Mahmud who was destined to be the terror of the Hindus.

While the Turks were gaining in power day by day their further eastern extension was blocked by the Hindu state of Kabul and Punjab, ruled by Brahmin kings of the Shāhī dynasty. We have inscriptions of kings Kālakavarman, Bhīma and Jayapāla of this line and coins of many kings. After the capture of Kabul citadel, the capital of the Hindu kingdom was transferred to Wahind (Udabhānda). Jayapāla was Subuktigin's contemporary.

<sup>(19)</sup> The Rapputs—" Who were the Rapputs," is a question to which a satisfactory answer is yet to be given. Claiming descent from the Ksattriya heroes of antiquity, they proved themselves to have been the most redoubtable champions of Hinduism and even now they are distinguished by their fine physique and martial bearing. Yet, inspite of all these, they have been regarded as foreigners of low origin or as lower caste Hindus elevated to a higher social position. The main reasons for the adoption of these hypotheses are. (1) they arise suddenly in the VIIth century, (2) the legend of the origin

ın most kıngdoms Tust about the middle of th A D four great powers arose in the country -

(I) The Guriara Pratibaras (20) who had esta principality in the VIth century or even before that to a great military power and advanced to the Punjab be the plain of Hindustan They were destined not only t a bid for supremacy over central and western Hindustan but as a bulwark against Islamic aggression for nearly two centuri

of the Agnikutas points to their artificial elevation by the Brahmins to recruit fighters for Hinduism (3) similarity of some Rajput tribe-names to some of the non Aryan clan names (Huna Jit Takpaka etc.)

At one time it was fashionable to regard the Rajputs as Scythians after the views But more recently there have been new theorisings about the origin of the Rainuts On this point Professor D R Bhandarkar a Foreign Elements in Hindu Population (Ind Ant Vol. VL) is of great interest Sir V Smith a most recent views are to be found in his Oxford History of India (pp 179 174) Prominent among those who believe in the Krattriya origin of the Rajputs is Mr C \ \aidya the author of the

History of Medianal Hindu India (Vol. II)

A discussion about the origin of the Rapputs i ut of place here. But one or two points may be advanced to enable our readers t form a clear idea as regards the Kaatiriya origin of the Rapputs. First of all anthropological measurements go to prove that the Rajputs belong to the best Aryan type in India. Secondly we believe that a sudden con version or elevation of foreigners cannot possibly convert foreigners both in physical

characteristics and in mentality

(20) The Gu jara Pratikara Empire -The origin of the Gurjara Pratharas is shrouled in mystery. But whatever might have been their origin (which question must even yet remain an open one) a Gurjara kingdom was already in existence porth of Valabhi in the VIIth century A.D when Hinen Tsang came to India The first Pratifiars dynasty claiming descent from the Drahmin Haricandra wa probably I unded a cert 550 AD and exercised authority over a large tract for about twelve generation course of time feudatory princes of the Pratibara dynasty established other maller states. The Pratibaras gradually extended their influence and they had to fight during the early part of the VIIIth century the forces I tile Arab Governors who under I make Viad advanced up to Ujjain But the Araba were hurled back by a prince of the Pratihars who ruled in Avanti. The greatnes of this first we consult of t Nagabhaja who flourished during the middle 4 the VIIItl centur. A D

The Gu ja a P at haras and the r St nagt -After Nagathata if I mile of cred reserve at the time of Detaraja (at th. 1 od. (R1As f the offer coell) t after l'ei-thère was a number of powerful rulers. e.g. Vot seis. Nagall a II. Ben 11 lea

Blogs ( ir 610 AD) and Mahendra Pala (I t q arter of the Xih century)

(II) About the middle of the VIIIth century A D also arose in Eastern India the Pāla Empire<sup>(21)</sup> founded by Gopāla who was raised to the throne by the magnates and the people to end a régime of anarchy

In the height of their power the Pratibara rulers ruled over a vast empire, which was more or less feudalised. The empire, in the height of its splendour, extended from the borders of the Punjab and Sindh to those of Bengal, and included Magadha for some time. It included the greater part of the Gangetic valley and almost the whole of Central India and Bundelkhand. Guzerat and a portion of the Punjab were in that Empire. Prominent among the feudatories of the Empire were the Guhilot princes, the Cāhamānas (whose line was founded by Guvāka) and the Candellas. Kanauj, which had been taken from its local king Cakrāyudha, afterwards became the capital of the Empire.

With its vast extent, great wealth and powerful armies, as is proved by the evidence of Muslim writers and travellers (see Elliot, Vol I), the Empire lacked consolidation Bhoja and Mahendrapāla were the greatest rulers of the line and the monarchy did much to arrest the advance of the Arabs of Sindh

The supremacy of the Pratiharas was short lived They had to contend with powerful enemies The Pālas of Bengal under Dharmapāla and the Rāstrakūtas of the south were their bitterest enemies, not to speak of the Arabs (or the occasional Vatsarāja or Nāgabhata II had to fight with both raids of Kashmir Kings) Dharmapāla and the Rāstrakūtas under Dhruva But the death of Dhruva and the southern attack on Govinda the Rastrakūta King saved the Pratihāras from ruin Dharmapāla in the meanwhile advanced up to Kanauj and put Cakrāyudha on the Nāgabhata suffered again from the attack of Govinda III (807 808 A D) too, suffered an attack made by Devapāla, but towards the end of Bhoja's reign, the king of Bengal was discomfited while there was no pressure from the Rastrakūtas about 915 A D the Pratihara Mahipala suffered a signal reverse at the hand of Indra III, Rästrakūta, but was saved from destruction by the incompetence of Govinda IV After Mahipāla, the decay of the empire was fast The Candellas under Dhanga wrested much of the Imperial territories, Gujarat became independent, the Cedis asserted themselves, while the Kacchapaghātas became independent near Gwalior Rājyapāla, the last ruler of Kanauj, suffered an attack from Mahmud of Ghazni and then died in a war with the Kacchapaghātas and the Candellas The line ended soon afterwards ingloriously

(21) The Pālas of Bengal —Bengal during the close of the VIIth and the first half of the VIIIth century was divided into a number of small principalities. The Sailas and Khadgas probably divided the country and a large number of petty states existed. By the middle of the VIIIth century (cir 750 AD) the chiefs ended the period of anarchy by electing Gopāla to the throne (cf. Khalimpur plate)

The Pāla dynasty founded by him was a long lived one and produced eminent rulers and conquerors Dharmapāla, the son of Gopāla, claimed to have conquered nearly the whole of Northein India, and placed Cakrāyudha on the throne of Kanauj, after

(III) Almost simultaneously, there arose the who, under Dantidurga (758 AD) put an end to and took their place in the Deccan. But before the Cālukyas under Vikramāditya I had almost crui cal power of the Pallavas, so much so that they san ficance.

defeating the Guryar Nāgabbaja (Khalimpur I. 11 and 19) seems to have conquered Assem and Ralidge. After Devephis came Vig pills, Riyapalla, Goptia II, Vigrabapalla, and Mahipalla, who sedie Haijundra Cola. The imagious was probably weakened by this princes established themselves in western and southern Bengal. Ma by Nayapalla Vigrabapalla, Mahipalla II Serapalla (Manhali Ias.) and I the dynasty from steer rum and saved it from the revolt of Divyoù authority in a large part of the realm.

(32) The Rappachities—They rose to power under Deathdurgs, were a dynasty which had long been ruling in the Decoan. Their Krens, was defeated by Jayastimha of the earlier Calskya dynasty they were feedstories to the Calskyas. Deathdurgs who founded the and assumed pumpons titles was deposed by his unole Krens the next great king was Dirurus who carried on war on both from porth as well as on the south. He forced the Pallarus to pay a while crossing the Vindhyas be hembled Veinartia.

Govinda III (794-814 A.D.) the greatest moments of the smarriss over the region between the Visilityes and the Thigabhesti. Litja where he made his brother Indirectly average Afric Geria ornshing defeat on the Pratithira, Nagabhata II (cir 807 or 808 A.D. from internal complications which checked for a time late. Amoghavarpa had himself pre-occupied by the war with the E annulus of weak princes accossed him, and the next greet if the king of the Coles on whom had develved the test of energin prominent Decora Power of Takholess (949 A.D.).

The last king of the dynasty Karks II had to fight the Pustador the princes of the Chukya dynasty. When Mulkhed was at the me owners the Calukya warrier Tallo restored the older line, and este dynasty at Kalvini (973 A.D.)

The Colsips-Reprolitie Dual —The Reprolities as the protest bad in light the Gurjaran in the Horth, the Colon in the Resident the Resident Chickyon in an disbase of the older Chickyon out Vegariordhana, brother of Publishin II, in the proteins of Verjaiell 1970 A.D. and some of its hings fought the Reproduction of Ameghroupes I stiff A.D.) the war between the two equations Colas 157

(IV) And a few decades later the place of the Pallavas as the suzeram power in the extreme south was taken by the Colas, (23) who continued to hold a supreme position almost to the eve of

The Later Cālukyas—In addition to these, local Cālukya princes, who had probably become the vassals of the Rāstrakūtas, were ever ready to assert themselves. The dynasty of Taila also claimed descent from the older line and as soon as it was established, it had to carry on war on the two fronts. Taila (973-997 AD), the first king, had to fight Muñja of Malwa, who after sixteen successful raids lost his life in the 17th attack. The next kings, Satyāsraya, Vikramāditya and Jayasimha, had to fight the Colas. The war was a terrible one and went on with varying successes on both sides. In 1052 AD was fought the battle of Koppam in which Cola Rājādhirāja lost his life. Someśvara I (1040-1069 AD), who fought at Koppam, took up the cause of the Eastern Cālukya prince Kulottunga. He was however defeated at Bezwada and Kudal Sangam and committed suicide.

The war was continued by Kulottunga, an heir to the Eastern Cālukyas who ascended the Cola throne But during Vikramāditya VI's long reign, after the peace with the Colas, the Hoysālas made an attack on the Cālukyas Vikramāditya VI ruled for a long time (1076-1127) Within thirty years of his death, the Empire broke up and the Kalacuryas usurped authority in a large portion of the Empire, under Vijjala (1156 1167) But the Kalacuryas themselves were weakened by the usurpation of Vasava

(23) Tamil India and the Rise of the Cola Power—As stated already, in the Ist century A D the Colas had risen to power and welth under able kings like Kārikala the Blackfoot—But this early supremacy was destroyed by various causes and for some time the Ceras rose to power—Very soon, however, they were supplanted by the Pallavas and during their ascendency the Ceras, Colas and Pāndyas all had to remain rontent with the subservient position of feudatories

But the Pallavas as the predominant power of the South had to contend with a number of enemies, viz, the Cālukyas in the North and the Pāndyas in the South and other enemies

The Pallavas suffered defeat at the hands of Vıkramādıtya II Cālukya (741) and on the extinction of the Cālukyas, their successors, the Rāstrakūtas inherited the quarrel Govinda III inflicted a crushing defeat on the Kanchi rulers. In their weakness they were attacked by the Pāndyas under Varaguna (cir. 825), but the Pāndyas themselves suffered defeat

While this duel was going on, the Colas asserted themselves. The Cola king Vijayālaya recovered Tanjore while his son Aditya Cola defeated the last Pallava Aparājita and laid the foundations of the Cola Empire. The next king Parāntaka (906-953 AD) reduced the Pāndyas and invaded Ceylon. But very soon, the Colas took up the fight against the Northern power, the Rāstrakūtas. Rājāditya lost his life at the battle of Takkolam against Krsna III (949 AD). In 985, Rājarāja ascended the throne and made himself suzerain over a vast empire stretching from Travancore to the Kalinga border and including a large part of Mysore. He conquered the Maldives and Laccadives,

the Mussalman conquest of the south <sup>69</sup> As a result of this, four great political powers arose and warred for supremacy keeping under check a number of other kingdoms and feudatories who transferred their allegiance to the more successful conqueror. The mutual hostility of these kept them engaged and prevented them from presenting a common front to the Islamic hordes that continued to knock at the gates of India. The Gurjara Pratihāras continued to act as a bulwark to the further eastern advance of the Mussalmans who had however the good fortune of having an ally in the Rāṣṭrakūtas <sup>63</sup> Roughly such a state of things lasted for nearly two centuries. While these struggles were going on,

formed marriage alliance with the Eastern Calukyas and put down the Pāṇdvas. He was aucceeded by Rajendra Cola who not satisfied with a Tamii Empire advanced against the Pālas (assuming the title of Gangalkoņās) and sent an expedition against the kingdom of Strylaya in Sumstra. His unfortunate successor lost his life in the battle of Koppam while fighting with the Calukyas wilch work was carried on by his successors.

<sup>(24)</sup> Pāṇḍya Restrai — Vijavālaya a line was then ended by Aulottunga (1670-1118) This prince warred on to conquer kajlinga repelled the Calchysa and fught the Hoysāla The last powerful ruler was Rājarāja III (1210-1218) After bim the Colas declund and the Pāṇḍya Sin Maravarman became powerful capturing and burn ing Tanjore Jajāvarman Sundera Pāṇḍya (L.-1 1275) was a powerful ruler bet Moslem invasion under Malik Kafur brou ht the kingdom under Sultan Alauddin Khljil (2010 A D).

<sup>(25)</sup> Decline of the Curjara Pretilidres —The Gurjara Pratiliara Limpire uffered from decay after the death of Mahendrapalladera (908 A D.) who may be regarded a the last great Lord Sucream of North India. Mahendrapalla was socceeded by 10 js 11 land then by Mahipalla was a call Rajidhurija of Arvā arta by the poet 1345 ichhara and then by Mahipalla was a called Rajidhurija of Arvā arta by the poet 1345 ichhara it was probably in 1 is reign that the Moslem traveller Masach vidted India. He It was probably in 1 is reign that the Moslem traveller Masach vidted India. He has left a record of his foor great armies each numbering 700 (30) men. But the has left a record of his foor great armies each numbering 700 (30) men. But the has left a record at terrible beck at the hand of Indra III (cur 916 A D.). This Pumpur excerted a terrible beck at the hand of Indra III (cur 916 A D.). This Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack weakened the Impure though it d 1 at cru h it. After Mat plais Russellada attack w

or contain assumed it consume.

The Fratiblits did very great service to India big the troud of the Mac and most of 8 did a did break up of their Impire as a great cital rule. The anhalist in the and rebell a feedatories of the Empire non-book ad article of the weakness of the troud power and not sell as a served in legend in that the first fee. It is para and abstract of the substract of the s

on in the North-Western frontier the Kabul state held its own under its Brahmin usurpers till the end of the Xth century and the first quarter of the XIth

Feudal Disintegration —The Further middle Xth century witnessed great political changes and was signalised by great events which were to change the course of later history After king Mahipāla or Vināvakapāla, who had succeeded in restoing the foitunes of his family, the Guijaia-Piatihāia monaichy underwent a steady disintegration and the ruler of Kanauj suffered constant attacks from his feudatories who not only asserted independence but turned then aims against Promirent among these new states of Northern late master India were those ruled over by Rajput princes who made dynastic war and mutual hostility the sole objective of their existence The country fast moved on the path of catastrophe The danger of the common enemy who was knocking at the gates could hardly rouse these princes to a sense of duty

The danger of Islamic invasion became however greater day by day and though adverse political circumstances and the distance of the Indian frontier removed for a time the Arab menace, an offshoot the Samani kingdom ruled by the virile Turki converts was established at Ghazni. It was destined to become the point d'appur of the Moslem in his designs against the fertile plains of India. That state passed to the hands of able rulers like Alaptgin, Subuktīgin and Mahmud, the last of whom was destined not only to strike terror in Hindustan by his cruel and inhuman raids,

Among these may be counted the Candellas led by Dhanga who claimed imperial authority about 954 AD (Khujaraho inscription) The Cedi Laksmanarāja was another such king. The Cālukya Mularāja asserted independence in Gujarat, the Kacchapaghātas established themselves near Gwalior and the Paramāras asserted themselves as also the Çāhamānas of Sākambhari (see R. C. Majumdar's Gurjara Pratihāra, pp. 76.81)

but to absorb the state of Kabul and Lahore Islam gained ground every day and the religion of the Prophet spread among the wild hillmen partly by force but more through the excel lence of that religion over the debased Buddhism current in those places. The Kabul state under the renowned kings Javapāla and Anandapala fought against Sultan Mahmud but their weak forces though occasionally strengthened by contingents of neighbouring rulers could do nothing against the invaders flushed with zeal and superior in fighting capacity and brilliant general ship

With the fall of the Shāhī kingdom of Kabul (20) the natural barrier of protection passed to the ever vigilant Mussalman enemy who had in Mahmud s lifetime annexed the greater part of the Punjab Later on the weak successors of Mahmud found a refuge in this Indian territory (27)

From that time however the Mussalman conquest of India was a foregone conclusion though a respite of nearly two centuries was granted to the Indian princes of Hindustan through the

<sup>(26)</sup> Fall of the Shahls—Jayapala lost Lamphan and the regions to the west of the Indan to Subuktugin. After his death his son Anandapala Loght ill 1000 or 1010 when he was Jilled in battle. His son Telecanapala carried on the strongle bot he was forced to aubmit. Towards the close of 11 life he arems to have lost h. king! m (1021). His successor the last of the Britinapa Shing, Rhimapala deal in 1000. The creater part of the Punish including Labor pa we to Mahmud of Gharai.

<sup>(27)</sup> Gharmitte Saltons of Lohore—After the death of Sultan Mahmud Lis wn Ma and became long. He ruled his father's Propine and appedited a Kari and a Governor to rule the Ponjab. He seems to have also employed Hudo generals and soldiers. His general Nastingin carried on raids into Hunlu territery to the ext but being unfaithful to his matter he was killed. Maxand thought I make georgiest in India to the western part of he empire being attached by the Sult. In her returned from India and while on his way lost 11 iff. A number of weak kings then asten the throne of Glaum. For feety years, the throne was numped by a size r med Trestrat throne of Glaum. For feety years the throne a sumped by a size r med Trestrat Lastrand. Makemed a line was restored. Make two filters. It was a "Real of the Trestration of the size of the size of the lastrand with the throne yield to listram with the first the size of the size

weakness of Mahmud's successors (28) and the constant rivalry of the Ghaznivite and the Ghori princes. Northern India remained in the meanwhile a medley of principalities wedded to a policy of eternal hostility and mutual strife. There arose new princes and rival dynasties. But, in this new mandala the fighting energies of each state was neutralised by the hostility of its neighbours.

Rajput princes ruled in these states. War for supremacy became the objective of these ambitious princes and the boundaries of each state varied with the success or failure of the ruling prince. Consolidation of authority or the building of a stable empire was beyond the comprehension or genius of these chiefs. War for military glory continued the end and aim of their existence and the age was one of chivalic anarchy. States gained ascendency in turn. Able rulers like Bhoja of Malwa, Karna of Cedi, Madanacandra of Kanauj carried on the eternal struggle which did nothing but weaken the country before the very eves of the advancing enemy. Of the new Rajput families, the Cāhamāna ruled in Sambhar (29)

<sup>(28)</sup> The Decline and Fall of Ghazni—On Baliram's death his son Khasru became king. He lost Ghazni first to the Turks and then to the Ghoris. Khasru had to retire to Lahore where he ruled for seven years. The last prince of the house of Mahmud, Khasru II, was defeated, captured and killed by Shahabuddin Mahomed Ghori (1191 AD). Coins of the Ghaznivide Sultans of Lahore have come down to us and some of these bear Sanskrit inscription and are copied from Hindu Shāhi coins.

<sup>(29)</sup> The Cahamana Kingdom of Sambhara -It was founded by one Samanta, who and whose immediate successors distinguished themselves in the struggle against the The Bijolia stone inscription gives us an account of this line One Arabs of Sindh Vigrabarāja was a great ruler and was succeeded by important king was Guvāka After him came a number of princes (Govinda, Durlava (973 A D — Harsha stone) Vākpatī, Vījaya, Durlava, Vīgraha, Prithvīrāja, Ajaīpāla, Arnorāja) who consolidated the power of the line Some of these, like Arnoraja, had to fight not only the Mussalmans but also had to war with the kings of (rujarat (Kumārapāla) Visāladeva was a great soldier, poet and dramatist, who checked and punished the Moslems many times Visala deva ruled at least up to 1163 He was followed by a number of weak kings prince of the dynasty was the celebrated warrior Prthvīrāja, the ruler of Ajmere and Delhi, who once defeated Shahabuddin Ghori but was ultimately conquered and killed by Towards the close of the XIIth century, the Cahamanas barred the wav of the Turko Pathans to India.

and Ajmir the Paramāra in Malwa, (20) the Haihaya in Cedi (21) the Candella in Bundelkhand, (25) the Caulukya in Gujarāt, (25)

(80) The Parametra Kingdom of Malma with its capital at Dhara became nowerful during the latter half of the Xth century. The first king to assume independence was Sirakadera who was followed by Väkpatuäjadera Mufija and Sindhurajadera. Mufija who fought Tailana (973-997) was killed by him in battle Bhoia (1010-1055) was the greatest king of the dynasty. He was a great author lawyer noet and writer on various subjects and was the greatest ruler of his time. He fought the Mussalmans or Turnakas in addition to the adjacent enemy states of Guiarat the kings of the 2nd Calukva dynasty of the south and the Cedis of the east who were connected with the Calukyas by marriage During this struggle Dhara was once occupied by Bhima of Guiarat and once by Javasimha Calukya Bhola also fought the Turks. Probably he attacked the rear of Mahmud after the sack of Somnath and sent a contingent to help Anandapala. After Bhola there was disorder in the kingdom and Bhola a successor Javanimha was placed on the throne with the sid of Vikramaditva Calukva Kinn Udayaditya restored the fortunes of the family and his son Laksmanadera seems to have waged war on all sides. He was followed by \arayrnian (1100-1133) and Natovarman who suffered defeat at the hands of the Calukyas and Javasimha Siddharaja of Gujarat who imprisoned him in a cage His uccessor Javavarman wa defeated by Kumarapaladova of Gujarat and was decapitated Other kings ruled after 1 im namely Ajaya Varman Vindhya Varman (who recovered much of his ancestral territory from Gujarat and fought the Gujarat kings) Sullists Varman Ariuna Varman and Devapela Varman in whose line the main line of th I aramkras was ended with the attack of Sultan Rintmish.

(31) The Halkage Princes of Cedi were probably not feedatories to the Gurjara Pratihársa. From inscriptions we know that the earliest king was Rokkela. After himcame Dhavala. Blasharsa Yuverkjadova Lelyma a Soukaragana (Yuvarkja II) and
came Dhavala. Blasharsa Yuverkjadova Lelyma a Soukaragana (Yuvarkja II) and
completed Benares and fought Bhoja but was worsted After him came Karna wioccupied Benares and fought Bhoja but was worsted After him came Karna winext to Bloja was the greatest king in Aryavarta. He conquered many kings extended
next to Bloja was the greatest king in Aryavarta. He conquered many kings extended
next to Bloja was the greatest king in Aryavarta. He conquered many kings extended
next to Bloja was the greatest king in Aryavarta. He conquered many kings extended
next followed by Gayakarya Narasimha Varman. Java imba and Vija samha who
was followed by Gayakarya Narasimha Varman. Java imba and Vija samha who
reizened up to the end of the VIIII centory when the dyna ty fill with the attack of
the Mussalmana under Shahabuddin Glori and his successor in the Delhi Spilanase

(3°) The Candratreys o Candella Dyna by of B d like I with capital at klajurate was founded by a prince named Nannuka (see N Smith a art in Ind Ant. Not NXVII) the early kines were probably feedstones of a great I power if e.g. if Gary is Frat in The early kines were probably Vijaya Rabita Sillar Tale areas the being followed by Disagna a powerful king Rabita Sillar (100 10°) and the Was followed by Garda (1000 10°) continuing the Washington of the Sillar (100 10°) continuing the Sil

the Gāhadavāla in Kanauj, <sup>(31)</sup> the Pāla in Magadha, the Sūra, and later on, the Sena ruled in Western Bengal <sup>(35)</sup> Himalayan states

and was followed by Devavarman who called himself an independent monarch Kīrtivarman was a contemporary and enemy of Karna, the Cedi king, and the two fought for supremacy. He was followed by Sallaksmana who warred on Malwa and Cedi After him came (1110 AD) Jayavarman and Prihivīvarman (1120 1125). The next king Madanavarman repelled an attack by Siddharāja Jayasimha of Gujarat and humbled the kings of Malwa and Cedi, he himself being a friend of the Gāhadavāla king of Kanauj. The last important king of this line was Paramārdideva (1165 1203). He was worsted by the Cāhamāna Prihivīrāja (1182) and again by Kutubuddin who captured the fort of Kālaūjara. After him, there were three kings but the line had to fight the Turks constantly and sank into insignificance

(33) The Caululya Dynasty of Gujarāt, with its capital at Anhilwārā, was founded by Mūlarāja (Ath century) The Gujarāt kings had to fight not only the Cālukvas of the South, the Parmaras of Malwa, the Cahamanas of Sambhara, but the Arabs of Sindh and later on the Turks Mularaja was succeeded by Camunda (997 1010) He defeated and killed Sindhurāja of Malwa After two unimportant kings, Bhīma I became the uler (1022 1061) He was a contemporary of Bhoja and Karna Cedi and it was during his reign that Mahmud of Ghazni raided Somnath He was followed by His successor Jayasimha Suadharāja (1094 1143) fought the Arabs Karna (1064 1094) in addition to the kings of Malwa and Cedi Malwa was overrun cruelly, its king was treated larbarously and it was partly occupied. His successor was Kumārapāla He subjugated the Gululots and the king of Malwa, fought against the Cedis and was favourably inclined to the Jamas He was succeeded by an incompetent prince who was supplanted by Mülaraja II (1176 1178) He was a king though a minor and signally defeated Muhammad Ghori Under his successor Bhima II (1178 1241) and the next prince, the Baghelas usurped authority Four kings of this line, eq. Visaladeva, Arjuna, Saranga and Karna ruled till 1303 when the kingdom was conquered by Alauddin Khiliji (1303)

(34) Gāhadavālas of Kanaul -The first important king of the Gāhadavāla line of Kanaui was Candradeva (cir 1080) who conqured Kanaul from the local ruler, and captured Benares and probably Oudh He expelled the Turks to whom the Pratihāras had submitted and claimed to be the greatest monarch of Aryāvarta after Bhoja Paramāra and Cedi Karna After him came Madanapāla and next to him Govinda-Candra, who seems to have conquered the Cedis and extended his empire in the east and checked the Turks now established in the Punjab He ruled from 1114 to 1154 and was followed by Vijayacandra (1154-1170) who claimed a victory over the Turks Towards the close of his reign, the Cahamana Vigraharaja of Ajmer captured Delhi and made a bid for suzerainty in Aryavarta Vijaya's son Jayaccandra was the rival of Prthvīrāja, the last Hindu king of Ajmer Delhi Jayaccandra ruled till 1193 when his kingdom was conquered by Shabuddin Muhammad Ghori

(35) Bengal—It seems that towards the close of the Pāla period, their power in Bengal gradually decayed and passed to other dynasties. The Sūra dynasty was founded and we have the names of Sūra Kings. Names of other kings and of other dynas

like Nepal, Chamba Kangra, Kashmir and Kāmarūpa, became isolated from the influence of the political forces working in Hindustan, though maintaining their independence for some time

In the Deccan and in the South the same state of affairs subsisted. There too arose new dynasties ruling in various places, e g, the Yādavas<sup>(3)</sup> of Devagiri in Mahārāsṭra, the Hovsālas of Dvāra Samudra <sup>(3)</sup> (further south) the Kakatiyas of Warangal <sup>(3)</sup>

ties are also forthcoming. But during the MIth century the Senss of Lakimanavati became powerful. The founder of the dynasty was Samanasean who was followed by Humanaseans and Vijayaseans. The son of the last Ballillasean was proverful king and extended his dominions. Under his son Lakimanasean the country was invaded by the Turks under Muhmmmad I-bin Bakhtiyar but the Senss continued to rule in Eastern Bengal for some time more.

(96) The Yadaras of Deragari claimed descent from a feudatory of the Calukyas named Drdapsahara the ruler of a small kingdom established during the middle of the IAth century A.D. In his family came able feedatory princes like Bhilliams II Vengi and Bhilliams III Bhilliams IV declared his independence and established his capital a Deragiri (1187). His chief enemies were the Hoyatis Addaras of Defrasamiders. He ass succeeded by Jaituga and by Binhana the most powerful king of the line (1210-1217). While the Ghories were conquering Arykvaria, Sinhana was building up an empire and fighting the king of Gujarat. The next important king was Ramacandra (1271-1200) in abose time Alsaddin reduced the kingdom to vassalage. Afterwards it was annexed to the Turko-Pathan Empire.

(37) The Hoystles of Draw annatas were a Myechan draw by claiming descent from osals who was followed by \mayaditya (101 1100). The next great king was Bithidera who gave up Jamism and become a \text{Varyawa} (1101 1136) and made himself master of a large southern empire with Drafa annodra as capital. After him came Narammba I and \text{Vira Ballala III (1172 1910) who was concolidating his power again to be ladawas at the time when the Turks were establed into in Hindu tan \text{Nara inhala III (1120-11233)} defeated the Colas and the Fallara now with into in gnifector. He was succeeded by Sometivara (1233-1231) followed by \text{Nara inhala III (1221 1313)} and during the reign of the last the kingdom passed to the Pelbit Turks.

(38) The Kaketryos i Warangal were at first feedatories of the Western Fall type. The first important ruler. Tribbubanamalla Betmarija reviewd at H comb. Ja acert 1100 A D. Prolarija (1300-1162) e tabhished he mell femir and be h Wars gal. H soo was I ratiparules bera who conquerred the ladaras and th larged On. a. Maillers and Ga apan were the next great kings. Garapati ruled is Cl. year art was a powerful king. After him his das hier Rudramia rolid the largem to D. Prate. The last king was Prataparules II. n where two Katur conjunction or to Justice ruled for some time a a rest all and rate followed by Erra a liter when the king.

like Nepal, Chamba, Langra Lashmir and Lāmarūpa, became isolated from the influence of the political forces working in Hindustan though maintaining their independence for some time

In the Deccan and in the South the same state of affairs subsisted. There too arose new dynasties ruling in various places, cg, the ladavas<sup>(3)</sup> of Devagiri in Mahārāstra, the Hovsālas of Dvāra Samudra <sup>(37)</sup> (further south) the Lakatiyas of Warangal, <sup>(38)</sup>

ties are also forthcoming. But during the MIth century the Senas of Laksmanavati became powerful. The founder of the dynasiy was Samanasens who was followed by Himmanasens and Vijayasens. The son of the last Ballálasena was a powerful king and ext oded his dominions. Under his son Laksmanasens the country was invaded by the Turks under Muhummad i-bin Bakhtiyar but the Senas continued to rule in hastern Bengal for some time more.

(36) The Addgras of Deragiri claimed descent from a fewlatory of the Calukyas named

Disparahra the ruler of a small kingdom established during the middle of the I'vib cen ury A.D. In his family came able feedatory princes like Bhillama II vesugi and Bhillama III Bhillama IV declared his independence and established his capital at Divagui (1187). His chief enemies were the Hoyatla Yadavas of Divarsamudra. He was succeeded by Jatungi and by Sinhana the most powerful king of the line (1210-1217). While the Oliories were conquering Arykarta, Sinhana was building up an empire and fighting the king of Oujarat. The next important king was Ramacandra (1371-1202) to whose time Alauddin reduced the kingdom to vassalage. Afterwards it was annexed to the Turko-Pathan Empire.

(3) The Hoysilas of Dedessom des were a Myschan dynasiy claimin, descent from one dals who was I llowed by Vinaykhiya (1017-1100). The next great king was Diphila a who gave up Janjain in docame a Vai pa a (1101-1105) and made himself mater f a lare southern impressible historia amoutra a capital. After I in came-Narasimha I and Vira Ilalias II (11-2-1219) who was consolidating is power against the Yadanas at the time when the Turks were establishing in Hindustan. Nara inha II (11,01-13) def ated the Celas and the I allaras now sunk into in ignificance. If was seen celed b Someware (1133-12-13) followed b Nara inha III (1231-127) and Vira Ilalialia III (1-21-134) and during the rei in of the last the kin dom passed to the Delta

(3) The Additives I Warangal were at time feedations of the Witten Calabya for a unpristant ruler. Toth banamatla Belmaraja rei med at Hanumbaja aboot 11 to A.D. Indaraja (II.O.H.O.) tablidade himself firmly and but Wara ad His wa was I to himself about 11 the analysis of the himself and the himself about 11 the analysis of the himself about 11 the analysis of the himself about 11 thing. After him his day her Richamba rund the his him to 0 y start was a join if I hing. After him his day her Richamba rund the his him to 0 y start was I raised for more times had a reported the lastry. I take the most of the way had a solar when the hisperial.

the kings of Olissa, (33) not to mention a host of small principalities and feudatories owing allegiance to the nearest powerful prince of the locality

In the medley of states, there was neither cohesion nor any political purpose. The princes thought of nothing but eternal war and dynastic hostility. Despotic as they were, everything depended on their pleasure. The people had ceased to have any interest in politics. Religion decayed, the art of war became antiquated, and society stagnant. Nobody thought of the country's interest.

The Mussalman, flushed with victory and fired by his religious fervour, had long bided his time. In the person of Shihābuddin Ghori, the spirit of conquest re-awakened. The ground had already been prepared and after a short struggle, the Hindu military resistance collapsed with the second battle of Tarain and the death of Prthvīrāja. The Turko-Afghans carried everything before them Principalities melted away, armies were annihilated and the plain of Hindustan passed to the hands of the Turki conquerors almost within the space of a decade

Sudden and sweeping as the tide of conquest was, it failed, however, to break the spirit of the people. The aimies of Islam could conquer kingdoms but they could not put an end to Hindu culture. Patriotic Rajput princes and tribes carried on an almost continuous resistance. Many of them took shelter in the hills

became insignificant though it continued, till 1423, fighting the Bahmani Sultans by whom it was annexed

<sup>(39)</sup> Orissa had an independent dynasty of its own. The Keśaris (Somavamśi) ruled for a long time, but later on the Eastern Gangas founded their supremacy under Vajrahasta I (984-1019). The Colas under Rājendra Cola invaded the country (about 1021), but atterwards the Gangas became supreme. Rājarāja (1068-1076) and Anantavarman Codaganga (1076-1142) were very powerful kings. They were followed by able princes of other lines who maintained their independence till cir. 1565 A.D.

and deserts The maccessible South retained its independence for another hundred years till the military genius of Sultan Alauddin Khili, seconded by the zeal of Malik Kafur, enabled Islamic armies to penetrate the South Yet even then the Mussal man could not establish universal rule over India. The Hindu line of resistance, though broken showed a new front. The war against Islam and Mussalman advance continued all through the centuries till the advent of the European as we shall see in a subsequent chapter. Successive revivals took place and every time the Hindu made a bid for his lost political power and missed success only through unforeseen causes and circumstances which the historian of causes and events hardly explains accurately

From the above summary of Indian political history we can easily sum up the main political tendencies which operated during the whole period from the Hindu resurrection of the IVth century A D to the eve of the Mussalman conquest of Hindustan during the close of the XIIth century A D These appear to be the following —.

- (1) First of all, there was a continued tendency to a further break-up, though we meet with the periodic rise of strong powers like the Pālas and the Pratihāras. Along with this tendency to break up there was a further development of sub-infeudation and the rise of small local dynasties, which transferred their allegiance to the predominant power of the day. This received its culmination in the rise of the Rajputs and their vassal nobility
- (2) Gradual shifting of the centre of political interest from the East to the West, caused partly by the invasion and immigration of foreign races and partly through the establishment of the Islamic power on the border of north-western India
  - (3) The disappearence of Republics and Republicanism
- · (4) Perpetual dynastic war which wasted the resources of princes and weakened the kingdoms
- (5) Gradual disappearance of the people as an important factor in political life and the rise of regal irresponsibility, which brought with it the practical disappearance of all real checks on

regal power Taxes came to be multiplied, the king s voice became supreme in the state, though he could not as yet claim legis lative authority This remained as the only real check on royal irresponsibility

I The tendency to break up is remarkable and requires no elucidation. With the fall of the Mauryas, the idea of a ruler controlling the whole of India, up to the seas, almost passed away. As we have seen, India became divided into a number of littorals. Early in the IVth century A.D. five such littorals are recognizable with a paramount power in each and flanked by feudatory states. These included (a) the Trins-Indus regions (b) hashing and the hills, (c) the Plain of Hindustan, (d) the Decean (e) the Tamilakam. Inspite of changes of dynastics and the multiplication of new states, these divisions survived as in Harsa 8 time, when we have had (a) the Trans-Indus regions under their own kings (b) hashing under its own king (c) Hindustan under its surerain monarch. Harsa (d) the Decean under Cālukva Pulakesi II and (c) the extreme South under its overlord the Pallava Narasimharaman.

The reign of Harsa politically uneventful in the history of India is an important landmark. As in Asoka's case, we find his spirit of pacifism leading to another political entastrophe attended with foreign invasion, disunion and disruption. The idea of an Indian Empire strong enough to chastise the foreign for is not only almost forgotten, but receives rather a serious condemnation from B massho holds up the prospect of an ideal India ruled by innumer able princely families. Harsa's death was followed by an age of confusion and turmoit which saw Chines, interference in his langdom while hardly before he had closed his exess the Min at mans conquered the Mekran coast and by an to leaf raids into

After a century of such struggles and fightings, two new powers were established in Northein India, namely, the Pratihāias in the West and the Palas in the East The Deccan remained under its own suzeram power, though here a struggle went on between the iival dynasties of the Calukyas and the Rastiakūtas course of time, the Eastern Cālukyas also lose into prominence, and several dynasties, the Somavamsis and Gangas, held sway the northern part of the Coromandal coastal region. the extreme south, the Pallavas held suzeram power for a long time but were supplanted by the Colas, the Pandyas and Ceras remaining under their sway In the Trans-Indus region, Sind and Multan passed to the Alabs, but the Shāhiya kingdom, with its capital first at Kabul and later on at Wahind (Udabhānda) under a line of Brahmin rulers, continued to hold out for nearly two more centuries

With the dawn of the XIth century, we have had a new political condition characterised by a further break-up Kabul state was annexed to the Ghazni Empire after it had waged a bitter struggle against Sabuktigin and Sultan Mahmud the same time, the Pratihaia monarchy, which had defended the frontiers of India for nearly two centuries under-went decay and Its place was taken not by a single power but dismemberment by a large number of new states ruled by Rapput dynasties, namely, the state of Almere-Sambhara under the Cahamanas, the state of Kanaul under the Gāhadavālas, the state of Malwa under the Paramāras, the state of Gujarat under the Caulukyas, the Cedi state under the Kalacuis, the state of Jejākabhukti under the In Eastern India, the Pālas were driven from Bengal, which passed under the Senas In the South, the Deccan, hitherto dominated by one power, was subdivided into the states

of the Yādavas of Devagiri and the Kākatiyas of Warangal, with a part passing to the Hoysālas of Dvārasamudra. The Colas ceased to exist their northern territories passed to the Gangas while the Pandyas also asserted themselves for a time

This continuous war and the tendency to break up contributed to the multiplication of feudatory families and we reach an overwhelming total towards the close of Hindu independence. Hereditary feudatory lines ruled in districts and divisions and a large part of the territories of a kingdom passed into their hands. Their existence not only weakened the central authority in the kingdoms but also intensified the magnitude and the bitterness of wars.

It is impossible to make as yet a catalogue of these feudatory families but their increasing number is apparent from the records which have come to us with perhaps a large number yet to be discovered Most of these were ruled by princes of a new fighting aristocracy known as the Raiputs The real history of the rise of the Rapputs their organisation into thirty six Kulas and their gradual spread over the greater part of Northern and Central India is yet to be written. Of the principalities in the region of hills must be mentioned small states like Chamba, Mandi Suchet or Not Kangra which sometimes acknowledged the supre macy of a powerful neighbour but asserted independence whenever New lines come to our view in the plan opportunitus came of Hindustan or in Rajputana. New states arose on the eastern border and new dynastics arose in Nepal A Rastrikuta dynastic established itself in a part of Magadha. Another minor dens to rose near Badaun, while others arose in regions near about namely the Gautamas (mar about Patepur) and the Sengaras of Kanar who were abordinate to the Gahadictles. A Refrikuja

dynasty arose with capital at Bijapur and another at Hastīkundī A branch of the Cedis established themselves at Ratnapur, ruling Southern Kosala Yādava families ruled near Mathurā and Mahāvana Petty Cāhamāna dynasties arose at Nadul and Brahmapātaka with innumerable princelings under them These as well as minor Paramara dynasties like those of Candravatī or Abu acknowledged the supremacy of the Gujarat princes or other powerful kings. Minor Tomara families in addition to those ruling at Delhi also existed Bhattī Rajputs ruled in many places of the Punjab Kathiawai was parcelled out among the Guhilas, Cudāsamas or Yādavas, the more important Guhila family being that of Mangiol The Kacchapaghātas (oiiginally ruling at Narwar and acknowledgeing Candella suzerainty) established themselves in the region near about Gwalior, with a branch ruling at Dubhakunda These princes percelled out the country among them and held as well as granted tracts of land on militery service. While greater families perished these princelings continued to exist and waited against the enemies of then clan as well as the Mussalmans To ensure the interest of then families and to command an aimed retinue they parcelled out their lands among their kinsmen or the Kulas In course of centuries of warfare, there arose a type of clan-feudalism which still subsists in Rajputana and many of the leading families of mediæval and modern India claim descent from these Rajput princes

II During this period the centre of Indian political activity moved again to the west partly on account of foreign invasions and partly owing to the immigration of races like the Hūnas, the Jāts and the Guijaras In Hindustan, since the days of Haisa, the seat of reputed imperial power was located at Kanauj Some-

time afterwards the pre-eminence of Kanauj passed to Delhi when the Cahamānas established themselves and fought against the Turco-Afghans under Muhammad Ghori

Disappearance of Republics—Side by side republics decayed The Vijayagadh inscription solemnising the victory of a nameless Māhāraja and Mahāsenāpati of the Yaudheyas (G I No 58) is practically the last record of a non-monarchical state, if we except the traditional republican confederation of the Brahmanas of Kerala. According to local tradition the Kerala Brahmins subdivided the land into 64 districts and had it ruled by an elected official and an assembly of 64 chiefs each representing one of these divisions. After a time there was internal discord as a result of which power was handed over to the Perumal or local sovereign who assumed royal authority

With the exception of this we have practically no information about any non-monarchical state or community subsisting in medieval India. What became of them and why they perished is the question which troubles a historian. At one time non-monarchical states were a political power in the country but as we have noticed they became fewer and fewer and in the age succeeding that of the Sainhitäs they existed only in the fringe areas or in macressible mountainous regions. Even in the 121 of foreign domination these republies, though few succeeded in maintaining their existence and resisted their foreign and home enemies. But after the VIth century A D, they existed to exist altogether.

In the absence of ewell recorded history the chief causes that we can as up to their di appearance are to be sought for in the chain of social and political condition of the country. As we have neticed they had always come in conflict with the monitolical

principle and decayed with the rise of monarchical authority

Indeed the rise of Magadha and Kośala had led to the destruction of a large number of them even in the Vth century B C Magadha absorbed a large number of those states which existed in the lifetime of Buddha, while the Sākyas, the kinsmen of Buddha, were destroyed by the tyrannical Virudhava. The despots of these days regarded these non-monarchical tribes as thorns in their own flesh and constantly sought opportunities to destroy them. The desire for the unification of the whole country also brought them face to face with these states. This is apparent from the teachings of the Arthaśāstra, which calls upon kings to bring Sanghas to submission.

But there was another significant and more powerful cause As time went on and social complexities arose, these non-monarchical states lost the solid foundation on which they once were established It is needless to point out that in most of these states, a ruling oligarchy had the sole voice in the administration They thus dominated over a subject population In course of time, the which had no political power latter gained in strength Economic necessity made the ruling tribe look to their assistance The subject populations seem to have multiplied and as they increased in importance, the rule of the oligarchy became something odius to them The domination of one clan or of few families could hardly be tolerated, and thus it contributed to the weakening of the non-monarchical states Monarchy, on the other hand, stood on a higher level king, however despotic or tyrannical he might have been, could not but recognise the needs of the classes and the castes monarchical rule the castes received not only protection but a recognition of their caste-laws and the customs and usages of their

community Caste in later time took a turn towards a racial federation and the castes retaining a certain amount of internal autonomy gladly accepted royal rule which looked to the recognition of their rights and customs as an accepted principle

The next cause was the internal jealous between the chicfs and families. Nothing more need be said on this head. The history of the Yādavas proves it. Buddha too warns against mutual jealousy and the crafty monarchist of the IVth century B C clearly shows how corporations could be easily destroyed by adding fuel to the fire of jealousy existing between families or individuals.

All these factors contributed to the weakening of the republican clans or tribes. Then, with the weakening of the Gupta power in Hindustan there began another series of foreign invasions and migrations of trans frontier peoples to India. In the midst of this turmoil, tribe leaders or oligarchs were compelled to change their old attitude of local independence and political isolation. Many such turned their energies to greater advantage by allowing themselves to be merged in the new fighting aristocracy and turning dynasts themselves. Instances of such are not wanting the Licchavis established a dynasty in Nepal while the Yadayas so long associated with the non-incorrelical principle established principalities for themselves and one of these ruling families established a considerable empire.

India a Medley of States—Thus on the eve of Mus all man invasion India was transformed into a medley of states owning no suzerain and having no political purpose and the country suffered from the cycle of perional dynastic wars. Its ruling princes were continuou to highling against one another without degran, to think of peacefully

governing their states or respecting the rights of their neighbours. Each state had its enemies on all its flanks with allies in the real of these enemies. The country suffered from the evils of an unstable political equilibrium War was the normal objective of princes, war for self-preservation on the part of the weaker kings, and war of aggression for the stronger Once a war broke out, the commotion was felt throughout the country and princes held themselves in readiness for resisting enemies or coming to the succour Ambitious conqueiois traversed vast distances to impose then suzerainty upon weaker princes Thus, the Palas under Dharmapāla advanced as far west as Kanaur, the Pratihāras advanced from western India to the heart of Hindustan, and the Rāstiakūtas tiaveised the whole of the south and the Deccan to wiest the sovereignty of Kanauj from the Piatihāias state had its enemies on all sides. Thus the Palas suffered attacks from the east, from the west by the Pratiharas and from the south by the Colas and later on by the Senas Pratihāras were similarly assailed on all sides They were attacked by the Pālas from the east, the Rāstrakūtas from the south, by their feudatories from Bundelkhand and the Mussalmans from the west The Calukyas and the Rastrakūtas of the Deccan were similarly assailed by the Tamil power from the south while they had to resist the attacks of the northern powers predominant Tamil powers, the Pallavas and the Colas, were in then turn constantly fighting then northern enemies in addition to their own rebellious vassals

During the last phase of political existence, the evils of this internecine warfare appear more prominently. Chivalrous and brave as the Rajputs were, their narrow-minded clannish patriotism did nothing but plunge the country into the evils of perennial warfare. Each Rajput clan had its circle of enemies

all round and the attainment of superior position by any ruler was sure to cause a series of attacks on it Thus the Paramaras of Malwa waged war on all sides and were attacked in turn by the Calukyas from the south the Cedia from the east and the Guiarat Calukyas from the west. They, in their turn, did the same act of aggression to their neighbours and such wars were always accompanied by acts of cruelty King Mudja led 16 expeditions against the Calukyas, only to be defeated and put to death by the enemy in the last expedition The Calukyas of Gujarat warred with tenacity and vigour on all the adjacent states namely on Malwa and Armer Similarly the Cahamanas were waging war on three fronts namely against the Caulukyas in the west against the Candellas Tomaras and Gahadavalas in the east with the Mussalmans on the west Similar was the case with the Cedis and the Gahadavalas of Kanaui. In such a state of affairs the resources of princes and of dynasties were sure to be spent up in course of these internecine wars. The maximum life of a dynasty was not more than two centuries and unless an able or warlike king was succeeded by an efficient prince on his throne a catastrophe was sure to follow - Foreign invaders and rebellious vassals often completed the ruin of great royal lines

Savagery in Warlare -The wars of the period Wi re which characterised by a savagery and inhumanity LIVE the country a foretrate of the brutahties of foreign con the laws of outrors later on . In course of these struggles were often forgotten and harrible inflicted on the unoffending people of the contending states Populous cities were often plundered with inhumanity or were destroyed with his and sword. Very few of the capital cities thus escaped destruction by encines. As in times of these we may cite the burning of Vitapi by the Pallay is suil the repeated

sacking of Kāñcī by the Cālukyas who dmoinated the Deccan We have information on these points from the conquerors themselves, since the princes of this period were not ashamed to proclaim their own brutal exploits. And we may cite the boast of a Rāstrakūta king that he had reduced the great city of Kanauj into Kuśasthalī. Similarly, the Colas assumed the title of Madhurāntaka to signalise their destruction of the city of Mādura Another Cola king boasted of having burned Kalyan, the capital of the later Cālukyas. Other capital cities like Mānyakheta, Dhārā or Anhilawarpattana fared no better. The Paramāra Siyaka sacked Malkhed, while Dhārā repeatedly suffered at the hands of the Cālukyas and other enemies. Anhilwara experienced the same fate.

Not to speak of cities, provinces and countries suffered The sack of Gujarat by Kulacandra became proverbial The Colas claimed to have buined the Kalinga country (SII Vikrama Cola claimed to have burned not only the TTT 79) Kalınga country but also the city of Kāmpili as well as the whole As to the burning of the Rāstiakūta country by of Rattapadī Rājendra Cola, we have an account in the Soratur inscription According to that record, the Cola army numbering 9,00,000 pillaged the whole country slaughtering Brahmanas, women and children and destroyed the modesty of women by forcibly carrying Another Cola record speaks of the destruction of nonthem off combatants while the Hoysāla Visnuvaidhana claims to have burned enemy towns and territories (Fleet, D K D, p 496) course of these savage wars, little consideration was shown to fallen enemies and victors did not hesitate to take the lives of their defeated rivals Emment princes of this period like Pulakesi II, Muñja, Tailapa or Bhoja suffered death at the hands of unrelenting enemies. The story of the cruel indignities heaped upon Muñja and his sad end is almost shocking. His death was avenged by Bhoja who in his turn suffered a cruel death at the hands of the Calukyas Sindhurāja was probably killed by Camunda of Gujarat The Rastrakuta Amoghavarsa I claums to have put to death some Eastern Calukya prince while the same boast is made by Jastrapāla the Yādava king of Devagiri who put to death in cold blood the defeated Kakativa prince Rudradeva record of the Colas is worse than shocking. We have repeated mention of the decapitation of the conquered Pandya king and of other rivals. In some other records belonging to Rajadhiraja and Vira Rajendra I we have the account of Manabharana Pandva being decapitated while a Kerala prince is described as having been trampled to death under the feet of an elephant - Brutal also is the record of the Gujarat kings and Kumārapala supposed to have been a Jam boasts of having put a conquered king of Malwa in a cage while he had the severed head of another sus pended at the gate of his own palace

Ladies of princely families very often suffered at the hands of the enemies of their family. Thus Harsa's sister Rapvasri was put in chains. The Cola Vira Rapendra I boasted of having captured and enslaved the wives of Thavamalla. We have still something worse and Vira Rapendra boasts of having killed a chief custaced that sister and daughter of a conquered prince and ent off the cars and nose of the mother of a defeated enemy. (S. 1. I. 111. No. 20)

The de truction of sacred places was not unknown. One We t Calakya inscription formally access the Coleking of leveng burnt. Jam temples in the Belvola province. The Variances of the South fixed similar charges against the Coles.

## THE PEOPLE AND THE PROVINCES

The People —In the midst of this perennial warfare, the people ceased to be an important factor in the political life of the country They had neither the right nor the voice to control then kings. They became more or less a passive agent in the domain of public adminstration and their business was to obey then masters, leaving them to mould then destiny In the big military monarchies of the day, no representative Assemblies existed in which the people could voice their sentiments The ministers only and the feudatories could speak before the king, but the former depended on the king for advancement while in the case of the latter, their importance depended on their military strength The priestly classes enjoyed a position of privilege, since the Bıāhmana was the saceidotal order and expounded the law, but even then they worked more to their own interest by living in peace than force their will upon kings. The latter also did then best to protect or reward them

This condition of abject dependence of the common people was, however, ameliorated to some extent by the excellent system of local autonomy which prevailed in the different provinces of India Everywhere, the village community flourished with unabated vigour. Like small self-sufficient republics they managed their own affairs, adjusted their own socio-economic arriangements and carried on life inspite of wars and invasions. In addition to village communities, the merchants and artisans had their guilds and these often took upon themselves many of the local duties. They managed the affairs of temples, organised poor relief, established endowments for various purposes and did everything in their power to ensure local peace and prosperity

In course of time, municipal bodies arose in towns of virious provinces and these carried on the administration of the localities

The activity of these bodies often comparisated for the neglect or preoccupation of the central authority and these did much to ensure the economic prosperity of the country. But often, the evils of despotic system told upon the people and in extreme cases of continued misrule, they rose either in rebellion or well coined successful usurpers to end the tyranny of princes, who added to taxes violated the primary rights of the people or denied justice to their subjects. In theory the moral right of revolution resided in the people and they chose new rulers to supplant tyrants who had proved themselves incompetent to rule

The large number of states which existed in India hardbpossessed any permanent boundaries or linguistic or ethnic
peculiarities. They varied more or less in extent and population and their prosperity or decline depended on the character
and military strength of their rules. At first, the tribal
principle predominated in the states but gradually that was substituted by the sovereign authority of a ruling dynasty. I rom
the Vith century B.C. the process of unification was launched
by the contemporary rulers of I astern India. Under the
Emperor Nobas the unifying movement received its high water
mark but with the disruption of the Empire and the foreign
invasion the ideal of an All India Empire pages of ivity.

After the revival of Hindu political influence India came to comprise different geographical units each dominated by empowerful dynasty keeping under check a number of feudatories in the mid-t-of-percumul war dynasties changed and feudatories multiplied. But in the mid-t-of-this turnoof, it is difficult field to note the ever-growing conseiculus of local sparatism and

divergences of manners and customs made more defined and reinforced by the growth of the Piākiit dialects.

Local feeling had been growing ever since the spread of Aryan culture in India, and even in the Dharmasūtras, we find a discrimination between the land of the Aiyans, and the land of the outer settlers, together with a denunciation of the men of the finge areas like Vanga, Anga, Kalinga At the same time, the great difference in the manners and customs of the North and the South is emphasised In course of time, local differences were intensified by local influences The varied degree of foreign domination as well as the growth of the various Piākrit dialects and Apabhiamsas contributed to this local By the time of Vātsyāyana, the people of different separatism localities came to possess 'certain peculiarities in social life and mentality and he notes these with a view to emphasising the differences in social and sexual life Of the localities differentiated on the basis of these pecularities, the following are prominently mentioned (according to Deśasātinya) —

- 1 Madhyadeśa—Between Himalaya and Vindhya, up to Piayāga in the East Comm
- 2 Bālhıka—Uttarāpatha Comm
- 3 Land of the Indus Rivers—The Punjab
- 4 Avantī—Region about Ujjain and western Malwa Comm
- 5 Lāṭa—West of western Malwa
- 6 Mālava—Eastein Malwa Comm
- 7 Aparanta—Region bordering the western seas Comm
- 8 The country of the Abhiras-Near Sirkantha and Kuruksetia.

- 9 The country of the Nāgarīkas—Region about Paṭaliputra
- 10 Kosala and Strīrajva
- 11 Andhra-Last of the Karnata region Comm
- 12 Mahārāstra—Between the Narmadā and Karnata Visava Comm
- 18 Dravida-South of Karnata Visaya Comm
- 14 Strīrājya-West of Vajravanta country Comm
- 15 Vanavasī-East of Kankana Visaya Comm
- 16 Gauda-Eastern India

Coming to a study of the events of Indian political life we find a considerable element of consciousness in the minds of the The most prominent of such locali people of some localities tis are Mahārāstra Karnāta and Tamil India (lund of the Dravidas Colas and Keralas) Between the Tanul powers (Cola or Pallava) and the power in Mahārāstra there is a feeling of percumal cumity. The Andhras too are on the way to developing a separate ethnic unit under their kings and a similar spirit The Gaudas display their consciousness is discernible in Orissa in resisting the supremacy of the Guptas and other Hindustin powers and gradually Pragrectisa is on the way to separation poli-Local separatism is fostered in Nepal and in Kallmar by their local isolation. A similar tendency is noticeable in Gujarat - In the Punjab and in the extreme north we tern border region the constant influx of new peoples and foreign invulers tends to give the people of those regions a new turn in their politi cil aspirations. Malaya comes to be regarded a a unit ethincally and geographically by its rulers who take the fifth of Malaya Cakrivarii Similar is the feeling in Kalinga whose king take the title of Trikaling chathaAs yet, however, this separatism did not give rise to a spirit of what we call nationalism. But the process of separatism was being fast accelerated. The provincial vernaculars were on the way to their evolution and the writers of Nibandhas were noting down the peculiar customs of the different localities. The normal process was, however, far from its culmination when foreign invasions brought a new political condition.

In such a state of affairs, the dynasties remained the more active agents in moulding the destinies of the localities. These dynasties were many and numerous and produced powerful rulers, but none among the latter could seriously think of establishing a real Empire, after the old Mauryan ideal.

As a rule these dynasties ended with a few generations of powerful rulers and most of them were short-lived, being either swept away by foreign invaders or by rival princely houses. The average life of royal lines hardly exceeded two centuries, the more important of the long-enduring lines being the Guptas, with their branches, the Eastern Cālukyas, the Pālas, the Colas. It was a misfortune that the dynasties of the Cālukyas of Badami (c. 550-752), the Rāstrakūtas (c. 752-973) or the Pratihāras (c. 750-980) did not subsist more than two centuries. Perhaps, the constant warfare of their kings exhausted the resources and the genius of the family earlier.

The history of the states of India is practically the history of the great dynasties

## Kingship

The supreme authority in all states was vested in the king who took pompous styles and titles to designate his sovereign authority. In theory he was bound to take the advice of his ministers and to consult the opinion of the people. But in reality Hindu kings of this period were irresponsible and their power depended on their own personal qualities as well as on the strength of the army The consolidation of the army maintenance of its proper discipling and the preservation of the loyalty of the military chiefs were of prime concern to the king since otherwise the king a hold on the throne and the kingdom was bound to be First of all without the army, the security of the state could hardly exist masmuch as in the contemporary politic if world there was hardly any political equilibrium. No prince could rest in peace in his own kingdom, but every moment expected attacks from his powerful neighbours. Takewise when a king found limiself in possession of a strong military force he considered it beneath his dignity to remain it perce, since a wir of conquest was the normal object of a king's life Once I war broke out it was bound to cause complications throughout the whole circle of states. The conqueror's allies is well as those of his enemies marshalled their forces and the shock was bound to to felt throughout the country

Next to this wir against outside enemies, the king find to ensure his own safety by maintaining a strong hold upon his feudatories, who were ever ready to revolt Except the smaller feudatories who had no other alternative than to remain content with their limited territories or resources the other feudatories were often bent on creating trouble, and it is well-known to readers of Indian History how powerful monarchies like those of the Guptas or the Pratiharas suffered dismemberment as soon as the king's authority decayed, which occasion was snatched by feudatories to establish independent rule Weaker feudatories merely remained content with transferring their allegiance to the more powerful conqueror of the day In some states feudatories often leagued either to destroy the central power or to put a nominee of their own on the throne The Sanjan plates (Ep. Ind. XVIII) give us at least two instances of the rising of the chiefs against the Rāstiakūta king Fiom the Kalasa Ins (I A XIII-19), we know that the revolt of Arrkesarin was the cause of Govinda IV's downfall

His Functions and Duties—War and diplomacy thus absorbed the main attention of Indian rulers, and the work of civil administration was generally left to ministers. With the exception of some south Indian kings or the founders of the greatness of the different dynasties, kings generally ceased to be as hard working in the cause of their subjects as in the days of the Arthaśāstra or of the Emperor Asoka

Under such circumstances, kings generally divided their time between the life in the camp and the pleasures of regal life. The prominence of camp life is obtainable from the repeated mention of the Jaya-skandhāvāra in the inscriptions of the various dynasties and in the case of Bengal kings it is difficult to find out their capital or to decide whether they had any fixed capital city at all

While in the capital city, kings generally attended their durbar and heard law-suits because they were the highest judges in

the realm, according to the principles of Hindu law. But as a rule, towards the close of the Hindu period, their work had been vested in Prādvivākas or trained judges and only in rare cases kings exercised the right of appeal. Some Kashmir kings like Candrāpīda made themselves prominent by their judicial activity

Apart from their judicial functions kings commanded the army though feudatories or professional military officers headed contingents or led military expeditions. Kings however could not put implicit trust in all of them because ambitious generals had more often asserted independence or had put an end to the lines of their masters like Pusyamitra or Vijjala Kalacurya who usurped the Cālukya throne

While at rest from military pursuits kings generally issued their commands to district officers or heads of department or supervised grants of land to individuals or the grant of privileges to commines. They often modified the items of taxation levied new ones or sometimes repealed those which prived he is it on the people. Remissions of such taxes were however few if any On the other hand, the items of royal exactions went on increasing day by day as we shall see later on

Prerogatives of Royalty—The king a powers and prerogatives were almost unbounded. The supreme head of the executive the highest judge the commander in-chief of his army the king was also the first man in the state. His person was clothed with moral sanctity and he had a number of legal privileges which we have already mentioned (Pt. I. p. 301). He was immune from arre t and trial in a law court his proprietory rights did not suffer from pre-scriptions and he was the hind owner of all good, and chatters lost as well as of property without hear. He also had the right of claiming ho pitality and had the power to require to dip pute. Inter-hims if and the army. In social matter, and each of hims later.

Hindu kings often intefered and we may mention Ballālasena of Bengal prominently in this connexion

As regards the making of laws, however, the king had no right or authority. That was left to the law-givers and commentators and in the absence of laws, customs had the authority of laws. Kings however issued edicts to repeal obnoxious customs as we know from the evidence of the Daśa-kumāra-carita

Styles and Titles—Kings assumed various styles and titles Generally speaking, a suzerain and independent king assumed the title of Parama bhattāraka (or in Kanarese Bhatara, in the south) Paramaśwara and Cakravartin—The other titles usually were Mahārājādhirāja, but towards the close of the Hindu period, this title had also been assumed by feudatories of the Pratihāras

these, other titles describing addition to king's allegiance to a particular derty were Thus the Guptas designated themselves Parama-bhāgavata, the Saka Satiaps called themselves Parama māheśvara, the called themselves Parama-saugata, while Pālas kings called themselves, Paramasome the Vākātakas, Bhanava-bhaktā Ot later princes, the Gāhadavālas were designated by themselves, Parama-māheśvara while among the Pratihāras, we have Parama-māheśvaras, Parama-varsnavas, Parama-sauras and Parama-saktibhaktas as well The Eastern Cālukyas assumed in addition the title of Parama-brahmanya, while the Kadambas, Pallavas and some of the Gangas and other kings assumed the title of Dharma-mahārāja The Gangas and some of the princes of the southern lines assumed the title of Permandi (Fleet, D K D 303)

Each family assumed in addition other titles designative of power or might. The Gupta kings assumed titles ending in Ādītya like Vikramādītya, Kramādītya, Mahendrādītya etc. The

Raştrakütas assumed titles ending in Varsa and Tunga in addition to Vallabha Srīvallabha or Sri Pṛthivī Vallava narendra. The names of the Cālukyas of Vātapi end occasionally in āditya and they take the high title of Sri Pṛthivī Vallabha or merely Pṛthivī vallabha. Thus Krisna I was Ikālavarşa ind Subhatunga, Dhruva was Kalivallabha and Nirupama, Govinda III was Prabhutavarşa Jagattunga Janavallabha, as well as Srī Pṛthirī vallabha and Sri vallabha narendradeva etc. Amoghavarsa was Nṛpatunga, Sarva Atisayadhabala, Mahāraja Sainida. Krisna II was Al'alavarsa and Subhatunga Govinda IV was Nṛpatunga ind Prabhūtavarsa and Hiranayavarsa. Krisna III was not only designated by the usual titles but was a parama māhesvara, Il alavarsa, Sainastabhubanasrava, Kandharapuravarādhisvara

The later Calukyas of Kalyan generally assumed titles ending in Malla in addition to other such. Thus Taila II called himself Samastabhuranasraya. Sri prhivicallabha, Satyāsrayal ulatilal a Calukyabhusana and Bhujabalacal ravarin. The eastern Calulya kings assumed names ending in Siddhi (Visamasiddhi, Riasiddhi, Lijayasiddhi, etc.) and called themselves Parama brahmanya.

The Kalacurya Bijj da took the titles of Kalacurya cakriv irtin or Kalacurya bhujab dacakravartin in addition to Samasta bhuvan israva and Sripithiyibidhya. His successor Somuleya cilled himself Rayamurari and Bhujabal malla. The Hoysilis took the iddition of title of Hoysilis Cakravartin and Vadiya Cakravartin in addition to Samistabhuvanisaya and Sripithiyiballaya. Some princes took the title Nibsanka Cakrivartin the Vadiya of Devagin cilled themselves Dyaravarpin adhison a moddition to Samistabhubana riya and Sripithiyiballaya.

The Pritihares cilled themselve. He spots while some king of Bengal as well as many of Kahnga were known a Cappata. The Galandwide of Kamany and the Cell of Hadawa later enassumed the triple title of Hayapati, Gajapati and Narapati. The Yādava Sinhana called himself "Mahodaya-praudha-pratāpa Cakravartin" In the south, the Colas assumed pompous titles like Tribhuranacakrarartin while princes like Vīra-rājendra added to it epithets like Sakalabhuvanāsraya, Srīmedinī-vallabha, Pāndya-kulātanka, etc. Among them there was the custom of taking the title Parakesarivarman and Rājakesarivarman alternately. The Orissa and Cedi kings called themselves Tri-halinganātha while some of the Paramāra princes assumed the title of Mālava-Cakravartin. Samudragupta was called Sarva-rājo-cehettā.

Individual princes assumed peculiar titles showing their learning, military exploits or other attainments. Thus Govinda-Candra called himself Vividha-vicāravācaspati. Some of the Colas called themselves Panditas. Kumarpāla prided himself on his conquest of Arnorāja. Govinda Rāstrakūta calls himself Sāhasānka, Rattakandarpa, Nipati-Trinetra. The Colas called themselves Madhurāntakas and sometimes Simhalāntaka. Narasimhavarman Pallava called himself Valapi-konda while Rajendra Cola called himself Gangai-konda (E. I. XVIII, No. 4). The immunerable names of the Pallava king Rājasinha are found in Kāñcīpuram temple inscription (S. I. I. pp. 14—18).

Emblems and Crests—The different families had then distinctive banners, crests or emblems, in addition to the ordinary insignia of royalty namely, the white umbiella, the crown, the throne, the royal coach, the fan (vyajana) and the chown (cāmara)

Thus the Guptas had the Garuda as then banner—The seal of the Valabhi princes was the bull—The boar was the distinctive emblem of the Cālukyas of Badami who had also the Pālidvaja banner, the sign of Gangā and Yamunā and the Dhakkā drum, which they obtained by advancing to the north (I A IX P 129 Flect D K D P 368) While the Rastrakutas had the Pali dvana banner and the Garada seal (mudra) and the Oka Keta (bird (See Sirier Ins. D. K. D. P. 402) The Sennas or Yadayas had a standard bearing the golden Garuda The Kala curyas had the flag with the figure of a golden bull and the bull seal (Rice 78) The Rattas of Saundatti had the elephant crest and the Garuda banner The emblem of the conqueror lasodhar man was the aulthara (aulthara lanchana) (see ( I P 151) meaning either the sun or the moon. The Maukhari scals con tain a bull walking to the left with two attendants. In the south, the flag of the Banas displayed a black back and their crest was a bull The Pala records contain a peculiar Buddist representation

The emblem of the Colas was the tiger. The Kalneuryas carried the golden bull banner (Surarna resubha dhruja) and the Dunaruka heralded them (D K D p 169) The binner of the Kadambas was the monkey (sakha cura narendra-dhy 111) but they had the hon crest (sinha lanchana) is well as peculiar musical instruments. As regards the Pillavas, the Kurrum plates bear the usual Pallava seal of the sitting bull (See also Bukuntha perumal lus 5 1 1 1V) their other emblems were the Khatfranga and the Samudraghosa drum (Fleet D. K. D., p. 319) The Vinhak aladati Haritipatra Satakarni had as his emblem a tive booded cobre (Fleet D. R. D. I. T. A. N. D. 1311) temps of talked had the rutting elephant is their hanner whil their erest was the prechadlergy or feather banch (Rus p. 10) D. K. D. p. 299). The Nalis had the three flag emblem (NIX The emblem of the Horsalis was the figure of a man killing a figer while their seil contained the representation of a dead trace with a red. Some of the hakativa record contain exect

with representation of the sun, the crescent, the boar and the cow The Sindas of Sindavadi had a blue flag (Nīladhvaja) with the tiger and the deer crest (Rice, p. 147). Some other branches had the tiger crest and hooded snake banner. Another southern dynasty had the banner of snakes (E. J. XIX, No. 29) Senavaras had the scripent flag and the hon crest. The emblem of the Pandyas was the twin fish. The Sendiakas had the elephant emblem though they called themselves Bhujagendia family. The Guttas of Guttal had the hon crest and the fig tree and Garuda banner. The Yādavas of Devagiri had (in addition to the Garuda banner and the Garuda seal) sometimes the Hanumat crest Some of the Rästrakütas had on then seal the god Siva The Paramāras had the Garuda emblem, while the Cāhamānas had on their coins the figure of a horseman The Cedis of Ratnapura had the Gajalakshmī as then seal The Candella plates contain the figure of Laksmī

Private Income —To maintain their dignity, kings had ample revenues arising out of various sources which differed in the different provinces

They seem to have in addition their own demesnes or Srabhogas, which supplemented their personal income. Out of these, grants were made to queens or royal princes as we find in the Karnāta inscriptions.

In those days there was no distinction between state income and the income of the king as was the case in mediaeval Europe. The revenue of the state was the king's revenue and he was the best judge in matters of expenditure. The amount of expenditure on the different heads cannot be ascertained. The Sukranīti, however, makes an attempt to lay down the amount to be spent on the king's own household.

Patronage of Learning -Many of the kings of this period distinguished themselves as patrons of learning. Samudragupta as well as many of the Guptas were poets themselves and patrons of learning The Andhra Hala was not only the author of the Gathasantasati but also of the Katantra grammar Some of the Valabhi princes prided themselves upon their learning a poet and dramatist branches Harsa was author of Nagananda and Ratnavali Pallavas plumed themselves upon their devotion to learn ing and one at least Mahendraverman was the author of a work on painting and on music and of several dramas. The Ganga Swamara was well versed in many sciences and wrote a work on elephants Among the Calukyus of Kalyana Vikramadityi VI was himself a man of learning and the patron of Vijnaness iri and under the patronage of Somewara III was composed the celebrated encyclopædia Manasollasa or Abhil isitartha cintamani Several Cola kings were patrons of learning and some of them took the The Pratibary Mahipuli was the patron of title of Pandita Rajasekhara I alitaditya of Kashmir was the patron of Bhaya bhuti Bhoja of Dhari distinguished himself equally is a poet philosopher and writer on various subjects being the author of the And tilalpulary and a large number of commentaries on differ ent branches of philosophy is well as on many secures. Absala Kuns (edi wis i pation of deva Cilimana wis a demotist learning and the author of the Harskeh drums Kirtivarman was the pation of Krynamara the author of the Probodly) Condroday) Paramendar of the same family define guished himself by his pationage of learning. In Gujarat, Java Sinha Siddharaja as well as foundrepals were an it patrons of learning and under them flours had the Jam poet plufe sopher and lexicographer Hemiciadre. In Bengal Josh Ballidiana and lask managers were ration of larning and with roll great

works The Gāhadavāla Govinda-Candra was a patron of learning and took the epithet of Vividha-Vicāra-Vidyā-Vācaspati In the south, Jaitrapāla Yādava prided himself upon his learning while Rāmacandra was the patron of Hemādri, the author of the Caturvarga-Cintāmani Great kings of the different dynasties were great builders and patrons of art and religion. The Cālukyas patronised the building of Ajanta while Rāstrakūta Kisna built the Ellora caves. The Pallava Mahendravarman was credited with the building of the Seven Pagodas. Princes also became patrons of religious orders and particular sects.

Queens and royal princesses often proved themselves patrons of learning and of religious teachers

Inscripty—The polygamous autocrats of the period had always to take precautions for their own safety as well as for their thrones—Dramas like the Mudrārāksasa, biographical works like the Harsacarita and historical works like the Rājataranginī give us an insight into the insecurity of the lives of kings, and the precautions they had to take—The Harsacarita like the Arthaśāstra and the Bihat-samhitā contains the stock list of kings killed by their own relatives or assassinated at the instance of their enemies—(See H. C., Ch. VI)

Within the historical period we have more than one instance of kings losing their lives or thrones through their own unguardedness. Consequently, kings protected themselves in all possible ways. Large numbers of spies in various garbs existed as before, while some of the dramas speak in clear terms of the female guards recruited from Yavanī women. Kings took particular care against poisoning and all writers on Nīti text-books devote chapters on the examination of food intended for the king. One Hindu king sent two Cakora birds to Mahmud of Ghazni and the gift was appreciated. Murders, assassinations and depositions of princes

were common as we shall see very soon though very few details have been preserved in the inscriptions and records which increds glorify victors but are more often silent on their musleeds. In Kashmir alone, we have a picture of the real state of affairs preserved by the versatile pen of Kalhana, and the picture we get from it is too vivid to be imaginary. The state of affairs was not far removed from that which gained ground under the Turco-Mghans. Whenever the king was weak or a minor or given to dissipation power passed either to favourites or to women. Some times ministers usurped authority or the feudatories raised their heads sometimes, the soldiery put an end to the life of the king and sometimes kings suffered death at the hands of unbitiousins or wives. Sometimes tyrants were deposed at the instance of their rivals and more often these rivals strengthened their hands by gaining popular support.

Comprehensive accounts are infortunately lacking but from what we have instances of murders of kings by ambitious ministers revolted subjects or the soldiery are frequent. In Gujarat Kumarapala's nephew. King Ajayapala was killed by a sentry of his. In Kashimir, three tyrannical rulers namely, 8 mbaray arman. Cakrayarman and Harsa were killed by their subjects. The Queen Susandha was deposed and put to death by the soldiery the elangus. Icaliana preserves the records of others killed by witcheraft and poisoning. King Hariraja was murdered by a general Timea. Partha an ex king of Kishimir, was put to death by assessing employed by his son king. Unmattayanti who glorified the murder of his father (R. J. V. pp. 132—133) and rewarded the culprits. King Utkar economitted unches

Retirement —I wing in such a state of inscenity, kings often followed the old rule of retirement and in some case, they put an end to themselve, being tired of contant war. Not to good

of traditions about Sudraka's self-immolation, accounts have been preserved of such retriements and voluntary deaths Rāstrakūţa Dhruva Nuupama thought of abdicating in favour of his son Govinda III (E 1-1 D, p 49, also kavi giant) In Kashmir, Kuvalayapida, as well as King Ananta and Sūryamatī retned leaving Kalasa on the throne. The Cedi Gangeyadeva retired in his old age to Prayaga where he died, while the Ol Dhanga eithei died at Prayāga himself According to the Jodhpui Ins (E I XVIII, No 12), Jhota and Bhilladitya retired in old age after crowning their sons Similarly, Someśvara I of Kalyāna, sick of life and suffering from malignant lever, drowned himself in the Tungabhadia, and according to many authorities, Vijjala, the Kalacurya usurper, abdicated ın tayonı of his son The last Rāstiakūta India staived himself to death after the loss of his throne Vira-Vallala II also retired after placing his son Narasimha on the throne (K & M Rice, Several Caulukya princes of Gujarat became ascetics

Succession—In an age of personal rule and polygamous princes, the order of succession was hardly regulated, though the principle of Hindu law of primogeniture and herrs male still remained strong. To obviate difficulties and to remove chances of disputed succession, the princes of the Gupta dynasty often followed the practice of selecting the herr from amongst their many sons. Thus, Samudragupta was selected by Candragupta I while Candragupta II was chosen by his father to the exclusion of his other brothers, according to his inscription. The practice was good for whenever there was no such selection, dynastic troubles arose and weakened the dynasty. Such troubles were not rare in Hindu history as can be gathered from the inscriptions and other records. Another important practice was the inauguration and appointment of a royal prince as Yuvarāja and we find that among

the Pallavas Yuva mahārājas are expressly mentioned in the In spite of these precautions we have repeated inscriptions instances of wars of succession in the history of almost all the prominent royal houses that excreised authority in India or in the different localities Many historians have recently discovered such a dynastic trouble among the Guptas According to a recent paper by Dr. D. R. Bhandarkar, Candragupta II deposed Rama gupta and became king after marrying his wife. The case of Skandagupta and Puragupta though not clear is mother instance of dynastic quarrel. From inscriptions we know for certain that the great Pulakesi II had himself ascended the throne after de feating and killing his own uncle Mangalesa (or his heir?) Among the Rastrakutas again dynastic troubles were more numerous According to Fleet Kṛṣṇa the second of the Rāsṭrikuṭa kings had assumed the royal power after setting aside and probably killing his nephew Dantidurga (or his heir?) the founder of the great ness of the house, who had taken to evil ways (Heet D. K. D. p 391 f f M p 168). Other princes were also deposed namely the sensual Govind's II was set uside by his brother Dhrava (Deoli Grant I A M p 62) Govinda III similarly displaced his older brother while Amoghavarsi was deposed by The charitable and amorous Govinda IV was Govinda 18 himself set aside by his nucle Baddiga or Amogh warsa II Among the Vakatakis Narendrasena probably gained the throng by deposing his cousin

Among the later Cilikvas of Kalvani, we have similar instances the most prominent being the deposition of some variations brother Vikramadity i VI the hero of Bilbana's poem Vikramadi Cariti

Among the Pallay's there were under dyna the was. The death of Farances reasonant II the Let prince of the Sindewe nuline (C. 71) AD) was followed by a period of war and anarchy at the end of which Nandi-varman II, a cousin of the last king, became successful and ruled (715-775). In the history of the southern Gangas, Erevappa's son Rāchamalla was defeated and killed by his younger brother Būtuga who got support from the Rāstrakūtas.

Among the eastern Cālukvas, we have repeated instances of such depositions, usurpations and dynastic troubles. Thus, a record of the Eastern Cālukvas (I. A. XII, pp. 91-96) speaks of the deposition of a minor Vijayādītya, from other records (see S. I. I. Vol. I), we know of the expulsion of Kokkili by his elder brother, and of Tādapa by Vikramādītva after a reign of one month. This Vikrama ruled for eleven months. His successor Yuddhamalla was displaced by another. After some more princes, there was a long anarchy in the kingdom

Among the Yādavas of Devagii, Bhillama (1187-1191) seems to have ascended the throne after setting aside his nephew Ballāla and Rāmacandra seems to have become king setting aside Amana—Among the Cālukyas of Gujarat we have an instance of disputes for succession, after the death of Javasimha Siddharāja and before the accession of Kumārapāla—In the Cāhamāna records, we find Viśāladeva's minor son displaced by Prithvibhata or Prithvirāja II—Even parricide was not unknown, since we have the murder of the Cāhamāna Ānā by his son, Tagadeva—The latter was set aside by his brother, Viśāladeva, the great conqueror

In Kashmu we have also innumerable instances of dynastic disputes, usurpations and fights among rivals, in which queens, ministers and even the royal guards, the Tantrins and  $Ek\bar{a}ngas$ , as well as the  $D\bar{a}maras$ , take a prominent part. Thus, after the deposition of Pārtha, there was a war for the throne which lasted for a long time and rival princes fought with the help of  $Ek\bar{a}ngas$ .

King Harsa revolted against his father. In Bengal there are similar instances and many scholars think that Madanapāla ascended the throne by deposing Gopāla II. Rāmapāla probably displaced Surapāla.

Changes of succession or exclusion -We have already referred to changes of succession at the instance of powerful kings who often selected younger but abler sons to the exclusion of their eldest sons. The selection of Samudragunta and of Candragupta II by their fathers have already been alluded to Other more important instances are furnished by the Rastrakuta records and those of the Calukyas of Vadami. The great Pulakesi II seems to have chosen his favourite son Vikramaditya I as king to the exclusion of the cldest Candraditya, and from the Manne records (see Rice Mysori and Coorg p 69) wi know that Dhruya Dharayarsa Servallabha selected his son Goynida III as the hear to the throne putting his eldest son Kambharasa. in charge of the Gangavadi 96 000. This led to succession disnutes in which a confederacy of 12 kings fou\_ht with Govinda III But the latter attained success The Caluky (Kalyum) Somes vara I similarly preferred his younger son Vikramaditya VI who gained the throne by deposing his elder brother

Dirition of the Empire—Empires and kingdoms were often divided at the instance of princes who wished to provide for their brothers and counger sons. We have many uch in times fluss under Pulakesi II has brother Kubje Vi nu Vardhana received in perpetuity the societants of Venat which remained under the Lastern Caluky is for a long time. Another imperiant instance was the creation of Lagrando a separate principality for a vounger brinch of the royal family both under the Caluky is and under the Rigitakus is Vikramadity), the son and in secret Pulake is any Late to his year, a brother the LLTD p. 120

Similarly, Govinda III assigned Lāṭa to his younger brother India (Scc Kayi Plate, T.A. V.; Baroda Grant, etc.) Sometimes states were divided between the rival brothers. Thus the Kalacurvas of Kalyana, Khayamalla and Sankama divided the kingdom (Fleet D. K. D., pp. 488—489) and similarly, on the death of Nārasimha II, his two sons, Narasimha III and Rāmanātha divided the Hoysāla kingdom in 1254 (Rice, p. 106)

Usurpations of the Throne—Under such circumstances, internal revolts and occasional usurpations of the throne were common, whenever the king became weak or lost the confidence and love of his great officers and feudatories. We have attempted to give a list of important instances of dynastic disputes. But in addition we have instances of usurpations by outsiders, or officials who set aside the royal line and founded dynasties of their own

In addition to the well known instances of Pusyamitia and Kānva Vāsudeva, we have the usurpation of Magadha throne by an ambitious minister on the death of Harsa — According to some, there was an usurpation of the Pallava throne (710 A D ) by Nandivarman, who was distantly related to Parameśvara Varman II

We have also the usurpation of the thione of the later Cālukyas by Vijjala Kalacurya and of his throne after his death in its turn by the minister Vāsava, the founder of the Lingayats In Bengal and Magadha, there is the well known usurpation of the Pāla power (though temporarily) by the Karvarta leaders Bhīma and Divyoka—Later on, in Gujarat there was the usurpation of the throne of the Cāpotkatas by Mūlarāja, the sister's son of the last Cāpotkata King—This led to the establishment of the Caulukyas of Anhilwara and after a considerable period of Caulukya rule, there was the usurpation of the authority of the

Gujarat Caulukvas by the Bāghelas Lavanaprasāda and Virā dhavala after the feudatories had practically renounced the authority of Bhima II

In the history of Kashmir we have many such instances of usurpations. Towards the close of Hindu rule, there was a long continued struggle between two rival princes one of whom a usurper introduced Islam and put his son under a Mussalman. This last named. Shah Mir made himself the first Mussalman king of the country marrying the widow of the last flindu ruler. But that princess Kofadevi committed suicide on the night of her marriage.

Independence of Feudatories and Ministers—Ministers and feudatories often assumed supreme power and asserted in dependence in suitable localities. We have innumerable instances of such. Of feudatory familes, the Senapatis of Vilibhi rused themselves to supreme power. The Yadayas and Hoysalas the Colas and later on the Pandyas proclaimed their independence of the weakness of their suzerams. Similarly, in northern Index the weakness of the Pratiharas led to the independence of the Calia manas, the Candellas and later on of some of their feudatoric.

In eastern India in the time of Kumurpala a mini for of his Vaidy idea i laid the foundation of his independence in the Blukti of Pragnotisapure where he had been sent out is governor

Regency—On the death of a king of a minor accessed to the throne regents generally managed the affors of the Cite Sometimes the uncles of a minor ruled as when the box light path became ruler of Kashmir (R. 1. pp. 664—672). Sometime mini ters became all powerful is in Kashmir (R. 1. pp. 710–711) where Cankumar (IV. p. R.1) invoked the people to effect a section of term of terms of the form of the prophetical entropy.

ministers who became regents in Kashmir but many of them were too selfish to look to their own personal interests

Queen Regents —Queens dowager often managed the affairs of the state during the minority or weakness of their children Such instances are numerous in Hindu history and we have innumerable epigraphic records to prove it. Thus we have in Andhra history, the instances of Queen Nayanikā (of Nanaghat) and Bālaśrī. Similarly, one Vākātaka record tells us of the regency of a Queen Prabhāvatīguptā, daughter of Candragupta II during the minority of her son (E. I. XV, Poona Plate). At Kanauj after the Maukhari Grahavarman's death Rājyasrī seems to have acted as regent.

Later on, in Gujarat we find Queen Naikidevī, daughter of a Kadamba king, acting as regent during the minority of her son Bāla Mūlarāja and she was capable enough to expel the Mussalmans who had invaded Gujarat. She also acted as regent during the minority of Bhima H.—The Cedi Queen Alhandevī is supposed by some to have acted as regent for some time for her son Narasimha-Varman.

In the Gāhadavāla history, we find two queens Rālha-devi and Pithivīšiīkā exercising some influence, during a period when king Madanapāladeva was ill or absent on a foreign expedition (I A XVIII, pp. 11—15, E I II, p. 359, etc.)

In Kashmii history we find many queens acting as regents in addition to the traditional Yasomatī who was placed on the throne enceinte by Vasudeva Kisna. Of the queens who acted as regents, were Sugandhā, Bappatadevi, Diddā and Srīlekhā. This Diddā at length ascended the throne and towards the close of her reign made Samgrāmarāja king. Similarly the last Hindu rulei of Kashmii was Kotadevī (widow of Udayana) who put an end to her life on the night of her marriage with Shah Mii, the Mussalman

usurper (For a brief summary see R C hak's article in Journal of Indian History 1926)

Queens Regnant —As there was no bar to female succession, princesses often ascended the throne on the failure of male issues and we have more than one instance of such. In the Kākatiya annals we find Queen Rudrambā acting as regent and probably acting as queen regnant for some time.

In addition to Rudrambā we have at least one important instance of a queen regnant namely, Dandimahādevi who calls berself Paramesvarī and Paramabhattīrikā in her inscriptions (Ep Ind VI)

lecession —On the death of a king his successor was proclaimed without lapse of time. Why and how this practice arose is difficult to say. But it had a good political effect in removing the cycle of a vacant throne. We have very little of inscriptional cyclence but the Rajanitiprakasa (Virumitrodaya) quotes a signilicant passago from the Visnudharmotture (V. M. p. 61. Benares Edition)

> मृतं राष्ट्रिन कालस्य नियमोऽत विधीयतं। तत्रास्य स्वयन काय विधिधत्तिसस्पर्ये ॥ चोप्रसित्तः जय पास्य साम्बन्धरपुरीशितः। प्रमासनोपविष्टस्य दगयेता जन गर्ने ॥

Coronation Geremonial —Then after finding out a proper and suspicious day the coronation took place. The absence of autiput ous moments or internal troubles often delayed the coronation ceremony for months and sometimes years as in the case of Asoka Maurya who was crowned four years after his necession to the throne.

The later coronation ratiod was a long and classific process and comprised rate, which had been handed down from Vedic time as well as ceremonies which had come into vogue in subsequent periods . The ceremony consisted of .—

- (1) The proper purification of the king by oblations to fire, ritual baths, touch with varieties of earth and the dispelling of all evils by the sacred herbs by the priests, with a recital of the great varsas, the mountains and rivers and with invocations to the various Vedic and Paurānic gods and goddesses and the recital of the great kings of the past
- (2) Consolidation and vesting of universal sovereign authority with Vedic hymns and rites of purification namely Rik (X 173) and Yajus (IX 22) mantias after making the king take his seat on the tiger skin
- (3) Sprinkling of the water of rivers and seas on the king's head by men and women (chaste and with children) of all castes including Sūdras
- (4) Administration of the old Artareya oath at the instance of the priest
- (5) Solemn invocation and the enumeration of duties by the priests and ministers

A complete account has been preserved in the Vīramitrodaya which quotes from the Aitareya Biāhmana, the Rig-vidhāna and the Visnu-dharmottara—It is curious to note that the Vīramitrodaya which preserves the old ritual, quotes the Vedic coronation hymns and prominently mentions the royal oath, which reminded the king of his duty to the priesthood and the people—The mention of this invocation reminding the king of his duties is also significant, masmuch as it shows that the Hindus of a later period entertained the same ideas as to the duties of a king as their Vedic ancestors—Cf

तिष्टन् प्रस्यक्ष सुख्ये त्रु याध्ययत प्रियमिमिमाम् । धर्म सो निखिसो राजन् वर्धता पात्रय प्रजाः ॥ वर्धस्त्र च चियौ पुट्यो जवायाभ्युद्वाय च । राजान सन्तु ते गोषो सतीऽप्रतिरय अपेत्॥

The coronation of a new king was associated with the release of prisoners and possibly with the freedom of debtors

Lapse of Heirs -When the king ceased to have heirs of his body he along with his ministers chose a scion to fill the throne But when the royal family was extinct the magnates and the people of the country took upon themselves the duty of electing a new king either a distant scion or a stranger. This shows that in theory the right of electing a king resided with the people have inscriptional evidences showing instances of kings cluming the throne by popular choice. Even when a prince won his throne by his own might he strengthened his claims by the fiction of a popular election. As instances of such we may cite the examples of Rudradanrin who claims to have been elected to king hip by men of all the castes. Gonala who claims to have been elected by the people to end the evils of Matsya mana Nandivarm in Pillavi malla who during the anarchy following the death of Parame vira virman II proceeded to Ivanet and was elected by the fend story princes the merchants suild and by the Mulapraketis (Vaikuntha Permind inscription S/I/I/p/359/I/A/MII/No/14) Wi mnumerable examples from Kalimir history recording to Kallein (II b) mini ters put Pritipolity con the throne after the expulsion of Andha Yudhi ghiry

Vain when king Jivendry died without feir Suddiment (Treverge) escended the throne en the report of entrens (H-80 H8). On he abdicate a Meghavahana was elected by the subjects Sugandhā also ruled the country at the bidding of her subjects (V 243) On the deposition of Unmattāvanti, Yaśaskara was made king by the people in the meeting of the Brahmin Assembly (R T V, Nos 469—475)

Average type of Hindu Kings — The average type of a Hindu king of this period is not far removed from that elsewhere under The majority of them merely thought of an autociatic regime carrying the system which they found existing. A prince who was strong enough to protect himself thought of enlarging his kingdom by subjugating his weaker neighbours India produced great conquerors and fighters during the greater part of the period and in this connextion may be mentioned Samudiagupta, Candiagupta II, Harsa and Dharmapāla, Yasodharman, Bhoja and Mahendrapāla in Hindustan, Pravarasena and Harisena, Vākātaka, Pulakesi II, Cālukya, Govinda III and Dhiuva Rāstrakūta, and Vikiamāditya VI, Cālukya of the Deccan, the Pallava Naiasınhavarman, Rājendra and Rāja-Rāja Colas of the South diately on the eve of Mussalman conquest, there were such warring kings like Bhoja Paramāra, Karna Cedi, Bhima, Karna, Javasinha and Kumārapāla Caulukyas of Gujarat, Dhanga and Ganda Candellas, Gonvindacandia, Gāhadavāla, Visāla-deva Pithvīrāja Cāhamāna, not to speak of a host of others whose inscriptions are replete with their boasts of conquests

But with all these warlike exploits, the country did not progress. Peace was unknown to India and a stable political equilibrium was absolutely wanting. Very few princes refrained from wars of aggression and a generation or two of military activity led only to a sudden collapse or relapse into anarchy and disorder arising out of the imbeculity of a monarch or his addiction to a life of dissipation. A continuous political existence of a dynasty with unabated vigour or normal progress was a thing almost un-

known and a period of conquering activity followed by anarchy and disintegration was the main political phenomenon which characterised the monarchies of the period. In the face of anarchy or foreign invasions, dynastics like that of the Cuptas arose. The power of such a dynasty was consolidated by two or three generations of able and warlike princes, but hardly had the consolidation been complete when a foreign invasion, the attack of a neighbour or a dynastic quarrel weakened the ruling line. The exils of such invasions and dynastic quarrels have been narrated afready and they were more numerous than is often supposed.

The people gradually lost all political significance and every thing depended on the will and character of monarchs or their trusted advisers. Weak and tyrannical princes like Mahipala II or Govinda IV often brought rum on their families and numeters or feudatories often usurped royal power or set up nominees on the throne.

Able and warlike princes were not rare but most of them devoted themselves to wars and conquests. Of these princes many were artificiated by literary patronage charity to Brahmins or liberality to religion but the rest remained mere figure heads while not a few of them devoted their time to lixary or designate in

The history of k ishinir supplies informations which curble us to form our opinion as to the nature and character of the Haida rulers of the time. That country produced conquerors like Laht adity a Tryapida or Sankarvaria in but very few kind he cried and just administrators devoted to their subjects like Candrapi Langalay unity a or Yasaskara. An anta or his queen Survamati or techale whose drafts the subjects could deplace. But as regard, the return country in the foreigner Mihirpula, in promium to relate used their needs in too dark for any agent in china. Since he surkers

varman or Harsa distinguished themselves by their fiscal oppression, by their disregard for morality and their plunder of temples. Others like Cakravarman, Unmattāvanti, Kalaša or Harsa devoted their attention to carnal pleasures and transgressed all limits of decency or human decerum by inhuman murders, or incest and fornication of the worst type. Unmattāvanti, justly so called, delighted in stabbing women to death, ripping the wombs of pregnant women and cutting off the limbs of workmen (R. T. V., 414—448). To the credit of Harsa, we have not only the spoliation of the subject, the systematic plunder of temples under specially appointed officials but incest with his own sisters and even with step-mothers.

Such misgovernment only brought ruin on the country. The tyranny of a king sometimes made subjects rise in rebellion or encouraged the soldiery or the nobles to have their own way. Goaded into rebellion, subjects sometimes put an end to the power of such tyrants and they were put to death. Of such unfortunate tyrants may be mentioned Sankaravarman (R. T. V., 210—211, 218—219), Cakravarman (V., 406—413), Harsa (VII., 1606—1724), in addition to Queen Sugandhā (V., 250). Bhīmagupta was put to death by Diddā (VI., 332), while a good many like Candrāpīda and Tārāpīda were poisoned, though described as being killed by witchcraft (IV., 124). The soldiery, the tantrins sometimes usurped power and set up their nominees on the throne (R. T. V., 266—277).

The record of Kashmir kings is thus a sad tale of inhuman cruelty and misgovernment But throughout the rest of India probably such a state of affairs did not exist. Elsewhere there was a strong public opinion restraining a tyrant from committing enormities and even in Kashmir we have repeated protests by subjects as well as by the assemblies of Brahmins. These latter on three or four occasions assembled to protest against tyranny and even elected kings when the throne was vacant. Many kings prided themselves upon their literary patronage kind treatment of subjects and kindness to religious orders. Not a few kings prided themselves upon their being the father or mother of the people as we shall see in a subsequent chapter.

## Ministry

For advice or consultation, as well as for the discharge of the duties of various departments, kings had to employ a large number of ministers and officials who carried on the functions of central government. As the kings of those days were engaged in constant fighting, much depended on the activity and energy of these ministers. Ministers helped their masters by their advice and counsel though during this period, there existed no Mantriparisat, in an organised form as under the Mauryas

Ministers or advisers forming the "Central Executive Body" were either selected from learned Brahmins well trained in the Arthaśāstra and the nīti literature, or were selected from the near relatives and dependents of the king. The names of the high officers were not the same in different states. The titles and designations often varied. The inscriptions do not always furnish full informations.

Generally speaking, the chief officials forming the Central Executive Body were—

- (a) the Mantrinah (for deliberation and advice),
- (b) the Amātyas (carrying on civil administration),
- (c) Mahāsāndhivigrahika or minister for war and peace (modern foreign minister),
- (d) Mahā-Pratihāra (in charge of the defence of the capital),
- (e) Mahā-Senāpatı (Commander-ın-Chief),

- Mahākṣapāṭalika or Mahākuranika (keeper of records),
- (g) Mahâ bhândāgārika or Koṣādhyakṣa (Trea surer),
- (h) Mahadharmadhikarın (Chief Judge or Judicial officer)
- (i) Mudrādhykṣa (keeper of royal seals) in addition to Purohitas Dharmādhikārin heads of depart ments of assessment collection and capendi ture the chief feudatories trusted army leaders and other officials

Of the higher officials employed by kings the Mantrins Amatyas or Sacivas and the Sandhivigrahikas enjoyed a higher status. Mantrinah or Mahamantrin gave advice on general policy. Amatyas were more often given inhitary and executive authority. The Sandhivigrahikas attained a high position because in those days of constant warfare their advice was constantly sought by kings. The Pratt hara was in charge of the royal capital and had military functions. The Senapati led the army. The Bhanda garika or koyadhya ksa was in charge of the treasury.

In some states the highest advisor was called Mantrin or Maha mantrin. Occasionally, Purchitas or Dharma dhyaksas exercised great influence on kings. The advice of able queens and princes as well as of the Samantas was often sought for by kings.

In times of stress during the king sillness or when the king was away on the battlefield ministers had to carry on the administration. We have instances of such teg it cases though regeners more often went to queeks or queens-dowagers during the minority of princes. In the time of Harsa, we find Bhandi and the ministers carrying on government at the time of Prabhākara-vaidhana's death Under Madanapāladeva of Kanauj we find a similar exercise of authority by ministers along with the Heir-apparent and the Queen In the Rajatarangini, we have many instances of Mantrins acting as real rulers or regents during a minority or under a weak prince Powerful ministers often became king-makers Thus Khankha raised Durlabha-vardhana, the founder of the Karkota dynasty, to the throne, on the death of Baladitya Again on the death ot Lalitaditya, the minister Camkuna was instrumental in raising Kuvalayāpīda on the throne (IV, 362) towards the close of Karkota rule, ministers like Utpala and Ratna practically ruled the kingdom and the minister Sūra raised Avantivarman on the throne (R T IV, 715-On the death of this prince, the Pratihāra Ratnavardhana made sankaravarman king (R T V, 128) his death, the minister suppressed the news (V, 223-224) and made Gopālavarman king (V, 228) Unmattāvanti was made king by Sarvata and other ministers Later on Phalguna the Sarvādhikuta (VI, 198) and later still Naravāhana became the real rulers of the kingdom Some of these men were upright and honest but not a few like Prabhākaradeva or Tunga the Khaśa (VI, 318-320, etc.), tried to consolidate personal power in league with queens or party factions

Some Great Ministers—The inscriptions are full of references to ministers and loyal officers who attained high rank, through ability or loyalty to the dynasty

Thus during the Gupta period we may mention Sandhi vigrahika Harisena (who also was a Mahadandanayaka and Kumaramatya) who served his master Samudragupta and composed the Allahabad prasasti. Another such high dignitary under the Guptas was sava or Virasena the Sandhivigrahika under Chandragupta II. Under Skanda gupta and Kumaragupta there were also many such high dignitaries.

Under the Vakatakas, there were also important officials enjoying positions of honour and trust. Many are the names that occur at the end of inscriptions as writers or Dutakas. But of these one name that of the Brahmin

Hastibhoja is important (A S W I IV.)

Among the ministers of the eastern or north Indian kingdoms we find many men of outstanding merit minent among them were Garga Darbhapani Somesvara Misra Kedara and Gurava Misra under the Palas (Badul Ine E I II pp 160-167) Prajapati Nandi was the Sändhivigrahika of Ramapala Vaidyndeva was one of the ministers of the last Pala king Kumarapala Under the Kanauj king Govinda candra we find his Sandhivi grahika Laksmidhara who composed the Vvavahara Kalpataru occupying a high position Halayudha under Laksmanasena was the Dharmadhyaksa. Under the Vadavas of Dovagiri the well known writer and scholar Hemadri occupied a very high position as Mahamantrin Under the Candellas (Man Ins Fp I I No 24) there was the celebrated Swannga. The minister Vatsaraja under Kirtivarman captured Devagadh while under the Cedia there was a line of important Brahmm ministers In Malwa

under Vindhyavarman, the poet Bilhana was Sāndhivigrahika (Luard & Lele, p. 37)—Similarly Muñja had an able minister in Rudrāditya—In Gujarat under Kumārapāla, there was the Mahāmātya Bahadadeva—Under Jayasinha Siddharāja there was the Mahāmātya Aśvaka while Dadaka was the keeper of seals—Under the Baghela Sārangadeva there was the Mahāmātya Sāndhivigrahika Madhusudana

The names of the ministers of the great Cālukyas of Vātapi and Rāstrakūta rulers are not always given in the inscriptions One inscription (I A VI, p 28) mentions the Sāndhrvigrahika Rāmapunyavallava under Vikramāditya I Under the Calukya rulers of the Deccan (Kalyāna) there were men of high position and high sounding titles combining many functions and offices Someśvara II we have officials like Mahāpradhāna, Heri-Sāndhıvıgrahıka, Manevergade Udayāditya and Someśvarabhatta Under Vikramāditya VI, we had the high official, Mahāpradhāna, Banasaveggade and Dandanāyaka Anantapālayya (who ruled the Banavāsi 12,000, Bevola 300, and Purigere 300, and managed the Pannaya tax of the  $7\frac{1}{2}$ lac country, (in AD 1102-03) and a subordinate Dandanāyaka Govindarasa managed the Mel-vatteya-Vaddaravuli, Eradubilkode and Peajunka taxes (D K D, 429) Another important official and chief uniting many offices was Mahāpradhāna, Antah-purādhyaksa, Heiilātasandhivigrahika, Manevergade and Dandanāyaka Bhivanaya (On his behalf the Mahāpradhāna Dandanāyaka Padmanavyya was ruling the Vanavāsi Later on, the Dandanāyaka Govindarasa was promoted to the rank of Mahāpradhāna, Mahādandanayaka and Mahasamantadhipati Other officials were Mahā Sāndhivigrahin and Mahāpradhāna Banasaveggade and Acepañcayadhisthayaka Bammarasa and Maha pradhāna Kannada Sandhivigrahin Sri patiyarasa Under Jagadekamalla we have a Mahapradhana Senadhipati Kannada Sandhivigrahin Hiriya Dandanayaka nayya who got the higher title of Heri Lata Kannala Sandhivigrahika, Mahasamanta and Manevergade Somesvara, Vijjala Kalacūrya ruled all the provinces and later became king by usurping the throne Under his son an official Bolikeya Kesimayya was called Sandhi bhattara niyogadhisthayaka Mahapradhana Sarvadhikari Maha pasarita Sunka-pannayadadhisthayaka and Kannada herilala Sandhivigrahin Other officials had titles like Pradhana Hiriyadandanayaka Hattabova Sunkaveggade etc Under Sankama an official Laksmidevyya had the additional title of Lalakhandeva karādhisthāyaka another Sovannyya has the title of Sarvadhikarin another had the title of Bhattara nivogadhisthayaka

Under the Hovsåla Visnuvardhana there was the important official Mahāpradhāna Hiriyadand māvaka Gangirāja. Under Narasinha I there was the Mahāpradhāna Sarvādhik iri Hiriyabhāndāri Halla Another Viraballāla had the title of Parama Visvāsm

Under the Vadavas of Devagiri we have the officials of Bhillama hearing titles of Mahapradhana. Bahattara myogadhipati Patjasahanadhipati ete all these having been apparently horrowed from the Kalvan Calulye Under Sinhana we find an official styled Mahapradhana Sarvadhikarin Paramayisyasin Mayadey quadita Officers

with these titles ruled provinces like Konkana, Karnāta, etc (D K D, p 524) Under Krsņa, we find an official Malla bearing the title of Sarvādhikārin and Amātya, the royal guru the Rājarājaguru Someśvara-Bhatta and the Mahāmātya Mahāpradhāna Chaundrāja Hemādri was one of the ministers and had the title of kahāmantrin serving under Mahādeva and Rāmadeva The other impoitant officers were Mahāpradhāna Acyutanāyaka and Maneya-Samasta-sainyādhipati Saluva Tikkamadeva

Under the Hoysālas, the high officials had almost all these titles,  $Mah\bar{a}pradh\bar{a}na$ ,  $Samasta-B\bar{a}hattara-niyog\bar{a}dhipati, <math>Hiriyadandan\bar{a}yaka$ , etc. A Kākatiya minister Devarāja under Ganapatideva is eulogised in an inscription (E I XIX, p 41)

In the absence of details or careful interpretation of these terms, it is difficult to generalise as to how the different departments were managed Broadly speaking the ministers had no collective responsibility. Each one had his separate office and department Ministers of revenue and collection department kept records of details and made forecasts of income and expenditure Ministers like Darbhapāni were highly honcured as we know from the Badal Inscription (E I, II, pp 160—167), the king offering them seats and asking for advice But under tyrannical kings their position was insecure Upright ministers sometimes resigned their appointments when kings rejected their counsels But sometimes tyrannical kings put them to trouble, cast them to prison or even put them to death Sometimes they fought amongst themselves and suffered at the hand or rivals Thus according to Kalhana, Didda

dismissed Phalguna but recalled him (VII, 516) The minister Vijja and his friends were cast into prison by king Kalasa and in his place Väinana was made Sarvādhikārin Tho all powerful Tunga had to be removed and killed (VII 84) Again Kalhana preserves the account of a righteous minister's resignation (VII,601—603) The tyrannical Harsa put his father's ministers to death (VII, 887—592) Ministers on the contrary usurped authority whenever there was any opportunity and scrupled not to murder kings such instances are very common

Heredity -Very often important offices passed from father to son and we have instances in the inscriptions of Thus sava the minister hereditary ministerial families of Candragupta II speaks of his holding the office of Sandhi i igrahika as passing by hereditary descent (ani aya prapta Udayagiri sacıı yaı yāpṛta sandhıvıqrahah Vakataka inscription gives the line of the minister Hasti bhoja (ASWI IV p 623) The Pala inscription of Badal mentions the four generations of Brahmin ministers (Gargi to Gurava) The Mau inscription of the Candellas (Fp 1 No 25) gives the line of the minister sivanaga while an other inscription (Fp. I. VI) gives the history of a line of Brahmin Prime Ministers under the Codis Candella inscription of Bhojavarman gives (8 the genealogy of a Kayastha official (F I I)

Heredity however was not the chief principle and we have instances of elevations of men of ment from humble

situations

## ADMINISTRATIVE OFFICIALS AND DIVISIONS

The rise of the monarchies of the Resurrection marked the growth of a new type of administration. So far as Northern India is concerned, the records of the Gupta kings are of great interest to us, since, with the rise of the Guptas, a new type of administration was established and this administration exercised the greatest influence on all subsequent monarchies that arose in Northern India, especially in the eastern part of it. The leading features of this are noticeable in the Gupta records, where we find a machinery of government, in which almost all the lower offices and officials of the Maurya period were maintained while the higher executive underwent a great modification. Thus, we find the following minor offices and official grades.—

Grāmikas — Officers in charge of a village. They were village headmen, with duties corresponding to those of the Grāmika of the Arthaśāstra.

Mahattaras — Officers in charge of account of villages .1 grahārikas — Officers controlling agrahāras, or men enjoying agrahāra or land granted by king

Gaulmikas—Lit, in charge of gulmas or pickets in woods and ferests. This office corresponded to that of gulmādhyaksa of the Arthaśāstra

Saulkikas — Officials for the collection of śulka or tolls on articles of trade like the Śulkādhyaksa of the Artha-śāstra

 $\bar{A}yuktakas$  —Minoi officials corresponding to the  $y\bar{u}tas$  of the Asoka inscriptions and the yuktas of the  $Arthas\bar{a}stra$ 

Dandikas or Dandapāšikas —Minor criminal officials under the Guptas Lit, in charge of Danda, punishment or the rod of punishment.

Other minor officials were the Fălarātakas or villige eccountants. Cauroddharanikas or officers for capturing theres. Diviras of accountants of clerks

The new type of administration, the innumerable grants of land and the multiplication of minor taxes con tributed to the rise of new classes of minor officials en the Kāyasthas and the Pustapālas who kept accounts and records The earliest functions of the Layasthas are not known but we find them occupying an important position in the law courts as in the Urcchakatil a or in the Smrti of Vajnavalkya and his successors The Kayasthas are ilso prominently mentioned in the Damodarpur inscriptions The evidence of the Smrtis shows that they were looked down upon by the people on account of their exections in the kings name. They were also in charge of accounts and collections | Their unpopularity is well marked in the They did not however form a separate Rājatarangini caste as vet

Below these were the Ganaras Irkharas and the

menial grades of the Cāṭas and Bhōṭas These were the minor officials employed in all local

treas. Above them were the officials ruling the higher and lower administrative divisions, together with military commanders and their subordinates.

Central Freentin, Body Highest of all were the grait officials who constituted the central executive body. The more important efficials ware the following who were divided into two grades, the higher being designated by the additions of the prefix  $mah\bar{a}$  to their title

The Mahāsāndhivigrahika (and Sāndhivigrahika) — Officer in charge of war and peace. This officer seems to have enjoyed the highest position in many states. Probably, the business of this dignitary was to maintain relations with vassals and feudatorics as well as with rival princes or even enemies.

Mahāksapātalīka—In charge of the aksapatala or the record office. The importance of this office was due to innumerable land-grants and the rise of a host of feudatories.

Mahāpratīhāra (and Pratīhāra) —Lit, official in charge of the loyal gate, camp or city. His exact functions are not known masmuch as the inscriptions give us no details while later writers are almost silent. Probably, he exercised both military and civil functions, and all communications passed through him

Mahādandanāyaka (and Dandanāyaka)—He was probably an army leader Danda meant the army He might have also been a criminal magistrate

Balādhikrta—In charge of a section of the army Lit, bala, army

Sarvādhyaksa—A general superintendent In some localities of India there was an office of Sarvādhikrta and the holder of this office was a sort of chief minister

 $R\bar{a}\jmath asth\bar{a}n\bar{i}ya$ —Was probably a representative of the king. The meaning is not clear. He might have been a judge. In the  $R\bar{a}\jmath atarangin\bar{i}$  we have references to the  $R\bar{a}\jmath asth\bar{a}n\bar{i}ya$  office

Dhruvādhikaranika — According to Buhler (note in

the Gupta Inscriptions) this official seems to have been in charge of ascertaining the loyal share of produce (For Buhler's views see G I P)

4 mātya — The real significance of this office during the Gupta or post Gupta period is not known. Probably the 1 mātyas came to be entrusted with civil administration and revenue collection.

Provinces Administration—The administration of the provinces was carried on partly by governors appointed by the king and partly by the feudatories who ruled their respective principalities and were often hereditary. Compared with the extent of territory under feudatories the territory under the direct rule of the Guptas was not very considerable. Probably this did not include the territory beyond. Magadha and the Gaugetic valley to which later on under Candragupta 11, the province of Surastra was added.

taministrative Divisions—So far as the provinces under the direct royal rule were concerned they comprised only Magadha and the Gaugetic valley where the policy of appropring defeated kings had prevailed

The chief divisions were these or Rastra and Visaya with the minor divisions of Grama and Vagara. This was the division which prevailed in the West while in the Fast we have had the highest division of Bhul to subdivide I into Wandala and Visaya with the lowest unit of villages this Bhul to division survived in the Last under the Palas Senas as well as under Harsa as we shall so very some From the inscriptions we find a Drac mumber of well defined Bhul to.

Under the Guptas, the big provinces were designated as Rāstras or Deśas, though the term Deśa was sometimes used in a different sense. In one inscription of Skandagupta (Girnar), we hear of the Gopty being appointed to rule the different Deśas. In the same inscription we find mention of Sukulideśa Visaya was probably a subdivision, though it was often of considerable extent. Thus, Antarvedi or the big tract between the Ganges and the Jumna was ruled by a Visayapati Sarvanāga under Skandagupta. Probably, this prince belonged to the Nāga family who were once the sovereigns of a vast tract near Mathuiā and Padmāvatī. (Indore Copper Plate Inscription)

In addition to the Visaya-patis there were the Uparikas and the Bhogikas The meaning of both these words is rather uncertain. But we have references to the Uparikas in the Khoh copper plates as well as in the Damodarpur copper plates. In the Khoh copper plates of Mahārājas Sarvanātha and Jayanātha, we find an Uparika Dīksita (G. I., 123—124) Sarvadatta who is the dūtaka. Another Khoh copper plate mentions (134), the Uparika Matršīva Elsewhere, we have mention of Uparikas in the Damodarpur plates where, in connection with land grants, the names of the following Uparikas occur—

- (1) Uparıka Cırātadatta rulıng under Kumāragupta ın Pundravardhana-bhukti (Plate I and Plate II)
- (2) Mahārāja Brahmadatta ruling in Pundravardhana under Śrī Budhagupta
- (3) Mahārāja Jayadatta in Pundravardhana ruling under Mahārājadhirāja Budhagupta

(4) Maharaja (name missing) in Pundravardhana in the year 214.

From these mentions we may regard the *Uparikas* as having been provincial governors, and at least in the Pundravardhana bhukti the office had become hereditary probably on the weakness of the Guptas. The meaning of the word is not clear but it will not be out of place to regard *Uparikas* as executive officials and governors of a higher grade ruling over provinces.

A similar difficulty arises in the case of the Bhogikas and the status of the officials of that title The Bhogil as are repeatedly referred to in connection with the land grants recorded in the Khoh plates (see G.I. 100, 105, 109) 120 124 129 and 134) But in connection with the holders of this title it is apparent that the Bhomla is almost hereditary. Thus Sürvadatta's father and grandfather are designated as Bhomka (100 and 105) and similar is the case with Gangakrtti and Gallu and Manoratha who c father and grandfather are called Bhogika (p. 120) The status of the Bhogika is apparent from the fact that some of the Bhogil as are also designated as I matyas and some of them came to hold the higher office of Sandhu igrahika Under the circumstances we may take the Bhomkas as having been Governors or in some cases fendal fords of smaller territorial divisions called Bhogas

The term Aumaramatya presents creater difficulty. It was translated by Heet as meaning a councillor to the prince. But this meaning is absolutely untenable when we refer to the various designations and examine the duties of the Aumaramatyas. Prominent among the

Kumārāmātyas was the celebrated Harisena, the chief minister of Samudragupta, who was also designated Mahādandanāyaka and Sāndhivigrahika. We have another Kumārāmātya, Sikharasvāmī, son of Visnupālita, under Candragupta II, while another Kumārāmātya, Prithivīsena, held the high office of Mahābalādhikrta under Kumāragupta. In the Damodarpur inscriptions we find the Kumāiāmātya Vetravarman ruling Kotivarsavisaya under Kumāragupta. In the light of these references it would be better to take the Kumārāmātyas to have been executive officers and members of a higher nobility (See E I XI, p 176 note on Navalakhi plate of Silāditya by Prof Bhadakamkar also E I X, 50)

Smaller Subdivisions —In addition to the divisions and subdivisions of Deśa, Visaya, Mandala and Bhukti, we had the villages and towns and minor subdivisions like the Patta, Pattika, Petha and Sandika These last occur in the Khoh plates, but probably these divisions existed only in Central India

Character of the Gupta Administration —From a study of these official grades and their functions we can form an idea as to the character of the Gupta administration Evidently, the Gupta Empire was governed partly by royal officers and partly by feudatories who were very often hereditary. The administration was not so centralised as the Maurya Empire. The central authority was certainly weak when compared with the Maurya Empire, and the Gupta kings never thought of carrying their interference as much as the Mauryas did, and we have no ground for holding that the Guptas ever attempted to lay down minute

regulations for the guidance of the people or for regulating trade and commerce. The resources at the disposal of the monarch were far less than those under the Mauryas and even these suffered diminution owing to the growth of feudal families the grants of land to priests and temples and the activity of municipalities and guilds

But while the governmental authority was neither strong nor centralised the personal authority of the Crown was far greater The kings of the Gupta line had assumed pompous titles like Paramabhattaral a cakravartin and bore surnames like Vikramālitya Kramadītya or Mahendrādītya They ruled by virtue of their personal prorogatives and issued edicts and commands to their officials They had no Parisad or Consultative Assembly and the last mention of such a body is in kālīdasa s Mālarīl āgnimitra which refers to a delībera tion of the Parisad under the Sungas The Gupta kings moreover regulated the succession to the throne at their will and often nominated their successors. Candragupta I selected Samudrigupta and Samudra-upta chose Candra gupta II as his successor. Some of the passages bearing on this point go to show that these selections were often in violation of the normal order of succession

The Gupta monarchy suffered decay owing to the Huna invasion. This gave in opportunity to the feudratories and led probably to the division of the menarchy With the weakness of the central government powerful feedutories like the ancestors of the Maukharis the Valablus and the Vardhamas of Than war road the standard of revelt. The Guptas of Magadha had to accept

for some time the suzerain authority of Harsa Afterwards some of them, like Adityasena and Jivitagupta (G I, 200—213), claimed sovereign power, but this did not last long

## NORTH INDIA AFTER THE GUPTAS

The administrative system of Northern India did not differ materially from that under the Guptas. The Guptas of Magadha as well as their successors maintained nearly all the institutions and offices of their greater ancestors, though their real authority had become far less owing to the multiplication of feudatories and the rise of powerful monarchs like Saśānka of Karnasuvarna or the Maukharis

Later Guptas—From the Shahpur inscription of Adityasena (G I, 208) and the Deo-Baranak inscription (G I, 215) of Jīvitagupta II, we find the following offices, viz, Rājaputra, Rājāmātya, Mahādandanāyaka, Mahāpratīhāra, Kumārāmātya, Rājasthānīya, Uparika, Cauroddharanika, Dandapāśika, Dāndika, Balādhikrta, Tālavātaka and Sina-Karmakāra

In the Deo-Baianak inscription the administrative divisions are as of old, viz. Bhukti, Mandala, Visaya and  $Gr\bar{a}ma$  or  $Agrah\bar{a}ra$ 

Harsa—During the time of Harsa, the administrative system practically remained unchanged. In regard to his reign, we know something from his Madhuvana plate (Year 25, Ep Ind VII) That record speaks of the village

of Somakundaka in the Kundadhani Vişaya in the Sravasti Bhukti The command is issued to Vahārājas Vahā sāndhivigrahil as Danhsādhanikas Pramātāras Rājas thāniyas Kumārūmātyas Uparikaras and Vişayapatis

Valably Princes -- Valably princes issued their edicts Uahattaras Grāmal utas officers over to Drānahikas Bhatas Cauroldharanikas Bhomkas Câtas Saulkikas Dandapāsakas Raja Dhrus ādhal aranal as ethānīyas kumārāmātyas Tyul takas, and Vinivuktakas their grants the Mahasandhiriaraha post occurs N 5 E I VII 7) The territories of (E I the Valabhi princes were subdivided into Rastra Visaya and Tharas subdivided into Pathalas Bhumis are also mentioned (G I 38 39) in a large number grants (I A VI) Other officials were the Raial ula Imātya Iksapatalil as Vartmapala and Pratisaral a (I A VII) Hence the administrative system of the Valablus seems to have been mainly borrowed from the Guptas who were masters of Western India with some modifications

Pāla Idministration—Under the successors of Huisi the administrative system of Northern India did not un lergo material change. In fact, the names and de ignations of the Pala efficials as well as the administrative divisions are the same as in Gupta times. The chief officials under the Pala as we know from the Khalimpur Monghyr Bhag alpur Bangad and Mauhah records a well as the Valanda plator of Devapala were the following.

Ruju rajunal a A lingh dignit is euposing a status

next to the king  $R\bar{a}janaka$  may be derived from  $R\bar{a}janyaka$ 

 $R\bar{a}\jmath aputra$ —Either princes of royal family or those of allied families

Mahāsāmanta—Chief of the Sāmantas or feudatories Sāmanta originally meant a neighbour or feudatory

Rājāmātya—Either the chief minister or a minister of the king The Amātyas who formed the highest grade of the civil service in the Arthaśāstra were in charge of the various departments of civil administration

Mahākārtākrtīka—Meaning unknown

Mahādandanāyaka—An officer in in charge of Danda (an army or award of punishment) Probably an official with military command and criminal junisdiction

Mahāsenāpati—Chief commander of the Army

Mahāpratīhāra—High official in charge of the gates of the royal camp or palace He was an official with military command and probably was the means of communication with the king

Màhā-dauhsādhunika—Meaning not clear Probably an official in charge of implements for reducing strongholds. This meaning has been adopted by C. V. Vaidya (see M. H. I., Vol. II.)

Mahākumārāmātya—A high official with military commission and authority to rule districts. The meaning assigned to the term by Fleet (eg, Councillor to a Prince) seems to be erroneous. Even in Gupta times we find Kumārāmātyas ruling districts

Pramātr—Lit, one who measures Might have been an official for assessment of dues

Sarabhanya--Meaning not known Sara-\rrow or grass (?)

Rājasthāniya—I it one who occupies the place and functions of the king. In some cases as in Kashmir he was a high judicial official in minor positions, a royal agent.

Uparika—A governor with jurisdiction over units like Bhuhtis (Cf. L paril as of Damodarpur CP inscription)

Visayapati—A district official with power to govern Visayas which were subdivisions of Bhuktis and Mandalas

Daśagrāmika-An official in charge of a group of ten villages

Grāmapati—An officer in charge of grāmas or villages Mahāmahattaras—Accountants or officials in charge of villages or groups of villages

Jyestha layastha—( hief of the Kayasthas who kept had record or collected royal dues

Dasaparadhil a Meaning not clear. If the word is Dasaparadhil a it meant a subordinate magistrate with power of punishing ten minor offences (this right was entrusted to grantees of lands in Vakataka inscription). If the word is Dasa, then it meant an official in charge of runaway slave or their offences.

Cauroddharanta in efficer with the special duty of apprehending this is (Cf. Cora rappula of the Irtha astra)

Dandila 1st pumsher a minor official with crinifial pure diction and power of pent hing.

Dand passed Int official with power of building

people with cords An official in charge of criminals or men imprisoned

Saulkika—Lit, in charge of śulka, hence, an official in charge of toll-collection (Cf Śulkādhyaksa of the Arthaśāstra)

Gaulmika—Lit, in charge of gulmas, hence, police officials in charge of outposts (Cf Gulmādhyaksa)

Ksetrapa—In charge of ksetras or fields, probably belonging to the king

Prāntapāla—An official in charge of borders Hence frontier guards and officials

Kottapāla—In charge of kottas, which meant either block houses or places of garrison

Sasthādhikrta—In charge of the royal sixth Hence revenue collector

Tarika—Lit, in charge of ferries, hence officers collecting ferry-dues which went to the king, from the earliest times

Hastipāla—In charge of royal elephants

Aśvapāla—In charge of royal horses

Ustrapāla—In charge of royal camels

Similarly, officials in charge of buffalos, goats, sheep, otc

Dūtapresanīka, Dūta-khola-gamāgamīka—Officials in charge of sending runners or messengers

Abhitvaramāna—Probably in charge of ferries or crossings, etc (?)

Kāyastha—Accountant or record-keeper

Gamāgamika—Lit, in charge of coming and going, hence an official in charge of transport

#### Kulika-Workman or artisan

Minor officials and menials like khasa Cāta Bhata, Hūna—These menial names are significant. Hūnas were probably men of that tribe then forming a caste of menials Similarly we have Khasas Mālavas and karnātas representing the adventurous increasures of those nations in the pay of the Bengal kings and feudatories.

The Valanda C P mentions all the above officials and grades including Kumaramatya Sarabhanga Raja sthaniya Dasaparadhika Mitrapala Kottapala Ibhipiara manala Tarika Tarapanika Cata and Bhata in addition to Malaia Khasa and Karnata who were most probably micronaries and menials recruited from different localities of India

Idministrative Divisions -The administrative divi sions under the Palas and their successors remained as before. The highest divisions were the Bhuktis subdivided into Mandalas and Lisayas A number of Gramas formed t Lisaya. This Blut ti division listed for a long time in Lastern and Central India and there were the Bhaltis of Kanyakubja (I A XIX Barah Ins of Bhoja) sravasti sripara bhukti Tira bhukti (Tirhut region) Pundra vardhaua (North Bengal) Vardhamana (Burdwin region) Danda (Midnapur) As stated already in Central India there were the Jejal abhukti and Lejabhukti (F. 1 138 146) Penthan bhukti (Paipur ( P) and the Pineili bhukti. Under the Palas. Prasjyoti i or A sam was i Blutti (see Kamauli pine of Vandyadeva) in th Decem a Prati tham bhukir is ment oned but further south this division har lly occured

Senas —Under the Senas of Bengal, practically the same system of administration subsisted as would appear from Deopara and Barakpore C P of Vijayasena, Naihati CP of Vallālasena and Laksmanasena's Ānulia, Govindapur, Madhainagar and Tarpandighi grants (E I., XII, E I, XIV, XV, etc.) These refer to grants in villages in Visayas situated in Mandalas in the Vardhamāna and Pundravardhana Bhuktis, Uttara-Rādha was a Mandala, while Pundravardhana included even Vanga or Eastern Bengal

The dignitures addressed to are the  $R\bar{a}\gamma a$ - $r\bar{a}\gamma anaka$ , Rājāi, Rānaka, Rājaputra, Rājāmātya, Purohita, Dharmādhyaksa, Mahāsāndhivigrahika, Senāpati, Mudrādhikrta, Mahāksapātalika, Antaranga, Brhaduparika, pratīhāra, Mahābhogika, Pīlupati, Mahāganaka, Dauhsādhanika, Cauroddharanika, and officers in charge of kine, horses and war-boats as well as Dandapāśika and Dandanāyaka in addition to Cāta and Bhata The Belava plate of Bhojavarmadeva (E I, XII, 8) mentions the same Pithīlāvītta, Mahādharmādhyaksa officials including Mahābhojaka, Vyūhapatı, Antaranga, etc., in addition to the usual officials The Ramapala C P grant of Śrīcandra mentions Kottapāla in addition The Ghugarahati inscription of Samācāradeva (E I, XVIII), does not furnish additional information on the officials but throws light on village administration The usual divisions are, as before Bhukti, Mandala, Visaya and Grāma The Belava plate speaks of a Khandala as a division of Mandala Naihati C P mentions Vīthi as a territorial division Vanga was part of Pundravardhana (Edilpur C P)

Kalinya and Orissa — An inscription of Mahabhava gupta refers to a land grant in a il isaya and addresses officials the more important of whom were Samāhartī Sannidhatī, iPiśunas (spies) Vetrika (holders of rods) officials of the harem and Rājavallavas in addition to Catas and Bhatas

As regards Orissa more light is thrown by the other records. The Neulpara grant of Kajaka (VIIIth (Cen.) refers to the Pañcalabhukti and Vişaya while among the officials addressed to are the Kumāramātyas Sthanun farikas and Intaranyas (See E. I. XIV)

The Inscriptions issued by the Sonas are of great interest, so far a the administrative history of Bengal is concerned. The Sonas seem to have derived no new in titutions and their system of any rimming sent to have been modelled upon those of the I alias who in their turn borrow of the in titution of the Gupta. The Sona inscriptions contain many new official interest of a lower great. The meanings of them are obsolete, but a mention was not the ac-

home other titles are the uniformal of the hipsis Asseption of Mandalapati). Military of the one probably in the gas of a proceeding rate of Airmon are to be equal dwith it. About Androne his procedure of the control of the control

Administrative System of the Gurpara Pratiharus. The other are it monarchies in Norther's India on the esc of Mahmud's invasion were the extensive kingdom of the Gurjara-Pratihāras and the states which arose after its downfall Kanauj was the capital of the Pratihāras and the suzerain authority of the Pratihāra monarch was obeyed almost from the borders of Multan to the confines of North Bengal and the Himalayas in the North to the South of the Vindhyas

But there was very little of a consolidated central authority and the greater part of the territory was in the hands of powerful feudatories as we shall see in a later section

From the inscriptions, very little is known about the Gurjara-Pratihāra institutions or of administrative divisions. The inscriptions of Mahendrapāla (Mahodaya I A, XV, 150—113) and of Vināyakapāla merely mention the officers in charge in general terms. But in all probability the higher officials under the Gurjara-Pratihāra monarchies had the usual names and functions so common in mediæval inscriptions or in literature.

But as to administrative divisions, we find mention of Bhuktis, Mandalas, Visayas and Grāmas in addition to Pathakas One inscription of Mahendrapāla (I A, XV, 105—113) mentions Śrāvasti-bhukti, Śrāvasti-mandala and Valayika-visaya, while another inscription speaks of the village of Takkan in Kasipara-pathaka in Varanasi-visaya in Pratisthan-bhukti Another Pratisthan inscription (I A, XIX, Barah inscription of Bhoja) speaks of Kānya-kubja-bhukti From Mathanadeva's inscription, we merely know that in some provinces Bhoga was a higher division than Grāma Bhogas, we know from the Harsa inscription

of the Cahamana Vigraharaja (I.A. XXII) were divided into smaller units namely Diādaśa (groups of 12 villages) and Visayas. The Harsa inscription gives us the names of a number of Visayas. Other smaller divisions were Pavikas (hamlet) and Pātakas (a part of a town)

The Caulakyas of Gujarat—Under the Caulakyas of innovations as regards the central administrative much nery were made. The high officials were the Sāndhi tigrakil a Makāmātya 1 mātya Senāpati Pratihāra Mudrādhyaksa 11 sapātalil a etc.

The Anayeda Ins. of Sarangadeva Baghela is import ant as throwing light on the administrative system. The Caulakva grants mention the Pathal a division in addition villages (I. A. VI)

The Cedis of Hailaya—The monarchies which arose out of the Gurjara Pratihāra Kingdom had nothing peculiar in their administrative system Very little information i obtained from the inscriptions and most of these record the grant of land or villages or devote their greatest length to the descriptions of the different dynastics or the claims of conquest made by individual rulers.

In regard to the Cedis of Haihaya (see U. H. 1994) we find the following officed under King Karne eez. Maha mastrin. Mahamatya. Mahasandhhi eiarahil a. Maha dharmadhil aranil a. Mahasandhhi eiarahil a. Mahasandhil aranil a. Mahasandhi eiarahil a. Mahasandhil aranil a. Mahasandhi eiarahil a. Mahasandhil aranil a. Mahasandhi aranil a. Mahasandhi a. Mah

The Paramāras -- The Paramāra plates give us little of additional details. Nor do we get any new information from the Yuktikalpataru by King Bhoja, except the traditional official names and grades

The Banswara plate of Bhoja mentions, however, the village as the smallest territorial unit. The next higher divisions were the *Bhogas* and *Mandalas*. The *Pathaka* occurs in the Ujjain plates of Bhoja. The *Pattakila* was in charge of small units like villages. One inscription (I A, XIV) of Bhoja speaks of a *Pratijāgaranaka* and a village group

The Gāhadavālas of Kanauj—The Gāhadavāla inscriptions are similarly silent about administrative details But some inscriptions like those of Govindacandra (I A, XIV, I A, XVI, E I, VII), as well as the Kamauli plates give us the names of the great officers of the realm, viz, Mantrin, Purohita, Pratīhāra, Senāpati, Bhāndārika, Aksapātalīka, Bhīsak, Naimittīka, Antahpurīka, Dūtaka and officers in charge of Pattana, Ākara and Gokula

Of administrative divisions, the Pattala is found as a new term  $P\bar{a}takas$  seems to have been divisions of Pattalas

Other Principalities —As regards other principalities of the neighbourhood we find some new offices in an inscription of Sodhadeva (E I, VII, 9), a king of the XIIth century ruling near Gorakhpur in which the king addresses his officials who were the Sāndhivigrahika, Mahāmahantaka, Mahādānika, Visayadānika, Khandavāla, Balāsiya, and Bhattāksakulika Visayas and Pathakas are referred to From the Lucknow Museum

Plate of Kirtipāla we find the names of officials like Astavarqika Danvāgārika, Mahārthasāsanika and Sankhadhārin (E. I. VII. 10)

The attempt to make a complete catalogue of the officials in the different parts of India is almost an impossible task. But as an idea of the administrative machinery is to be Jerived from it we make an attempt to motion some more official grades and titles from the inscriptions. The recently prepared list of inscriptions by Dr. D. R. Bhandarkar helps us to do something in this direction and from this we give the following official titles and prades.

Bhandarkar's List No 11 mentions a Riposthinion No 3 mentions, Dyaldsschaftet (master of royal dice house). In connection with town Gopadrs, we find mention of a Koffopala Bullithikft for flin and Nithiteth. No 22 mention a Rusanida a Satrudhar; and a Dhurmalekhin (writer of piou dent). In No.23 we have reference to a lyayidar in 122 him thin fly (Superintendent of Expenditure) of Java imba of Gujarst No. 8 r fers to the Bhandadhile (a punn No. 200 mentions a Risposialika (Superintendent). No. 25 in atom a 132 kina (Judge) Abhalt (1414 kinasha i mentioned in No. 34 white at the refer to a warden of the marchants. A head ply ician is in into a din No. 3 B. 1.) Stiffa this Kulika Northala dand Kipitikis are also in utioned in the Damodarpur (latin (F. 1. No.) XV).

# ADMINISTRATIVE SYSTEMS OF THE DECCAN

Lust after the Maurya domination, the North Indian type of administration had gained ground in the Becom though very little information is furnished by the inscriptions of the Andhras or succes ors. But an inscription (I. I. N.I. 16) found a kirari (Central Prayines) written in Brahmi (Nasik type) on a gupa ii ed in contaction with the corebration of capacity a supplier as with the following ii to

of officials with names through the name of the king is not given —

Mahāsenānī (Siddharāja?)

Senāpati (Bāmadevya)

Pratīhāra (Khipatti)

Nagararaksın (Virapālita)

·Bhāndāgārīka (Asadhia)

Other officials were the Ganaka (Hesar—a nāga), Hastyāroha, Aśvāroha, Rathika, Pādamūlika, Māhānasika, Hastipaka, Dhāvaka, Saugandhika, Gomāndalika, Yānasālā-yuddhagharika, Palavithidakapālika, Lekha-hārika, Kulaputra

The importance of the inscription in the administrative history of India is yet to be noticed. But anyhow the the North Indian system had spread to the Deccan even in the second century B C

Deccan and Central India came to the hands of the Andhras and after their fall, they passed under other powers 'Under the 'Vākātakas their extensive kingdom stretched from the Vindhyas to the borders of the Tamil country, but very few of their inscriptions have come down to us and even these contain little details about the administration. Much of the Vākātaka territories was in the hands of feudatories as we know from the Chamak C. P. Ins. where the Bhojakata-rājva is mentioned. The Vākātakas had their feudatories like the one line descended in the Ajanta Inscription. (A. S. W. I., IV.) From the Dudia plate of Pravarasena II., it appears that the kingdom was divided into Rājyas, and there were the minor divisions of Sangamika and Bhoga (Ep. Ind. III, 35). The

meaning of Bhoga is not clear like that of the Bhogal as met with in the Khoh plates

As to officials we have no details. Those mentioned in Nach in katalai and Chamak are Sariādhyal sa Adhiyoga Niyukta Ijnāsañcarin kulaputra and Adhikrta Senā patis are also mentioned

The Calulyas and Rastrakūtas in the Deccan -The Decean came to comprise Maharastre as well as outlying provinces and principalities under the suzerain authority both of the early Calukyas and of the Rastrakutas as well as of the later Calukyas of Kalvan The Deccan was more over divided into a large number of feudatory chiefships, which were closely connected with the Mahabhops and Haharathis of the Andhra period The Haharathis had survived and give the name Miharastra to the country Maharastra proper containing 99 000 villages was again divided like Kalinga into three parts (cf Athole Ins. of Pulakesi II E I VI of Laamad adhipatyam yo Maha rastral anam-navanavati sahasraqramabhajam-trayanam) To this Maharastra kingdom were gredually attached Konkan and north Kanara. The Kulamba kingdom be came a fendatory and later on ender the Kalyan Calukvas it was regarded as an integral part or a fief - I A) i formed a part of the Calukya Pulakest II's conquests but was handed over to a branch of the same family western Gangas more or less act not ledged the supremay of the Decem power Vengl was conquered by Public 111 but passed to Kubja Visua Vardhana who femaled the him of the Factorn Calul vas. The succrain power in the Decem was constantly in conflict with the dominant passer

in the extreme South Consequently, the Deccan rulers had to wage perpetual warfare with the Pallavas and later on with the Colas

So far as we know, the Mahārāstra region was divided into *Rāstras*, subdivided into *Visayas* and then into Grāmas These were ruled by *Rāstrapatis*, *Visayapatis* and *Grāmakūtas* 

The Bhukti division which was essentially a northern administrative unit arising with the Guptas, seems to subsist only in the northern region, but both in Mahārāstra as well as in the southern fringe and Gujerat, we find a prevalence of village-groups beginning with groups of 3, 12, 70, 300, 1,000, 2,000 rising to 12,000, 32,000, 96,000 and to seven and a half lakh in the case of the whole Ratta country We have innumerable references to plots of land or administrative units designated by the number of villages contained in them Thus the Sanjana plate of Amoghavarsa mentions a village in a group of 24 The Atakur Inscription mentions the Vanavasi 12,000, Belvola 300, the Purigere 3, the Kasukad 70, and the Bagenad 70 The Atakur 12 was granted by Butuga II to a follower of his (see Ep Ind, VI, the Atakur Ins, Ep Ind, Vol XVIII, the Sanjan plates, Miraj plates, Ep Ind, XII) This village group system is of great interest and may point out to the growth of the commune in early times Even now this system survives in many provinces of western India and in Gujarat

Under the kings of the Deccan\* who were either the

<sup>\*</sup> In the Maratha and Kanarese country, we find territorial divisions desig-

Calukyas or the Rastrakūtas there was hardly any change in the higher administrative body. It was composed of the high officials already found in Hindu monarchies—Mantrin 1 mātya Sāndhiviyrahika Pratihāra Sāmanta 1 ksapātalika Dandanāyaka, Sēnāpati and others. The kāyasthas are repeatedly mentioned but new terms like Balādhibhoyin occur. A large part of the country was however in the hands of independent feudatories as we shall see very soon.

Yādavas of Devagiri and Hoysālas of Divarasamudra—Under the successors of the Kalyan Calukyas the Yādavas of Devagiri the old system of higher administration remained almost unchanged. The higher officialdom included the Hantrin (like Hemādri) the Sāndhii igrahika the Mahāpratihara the Samantas the Dandanayakas the senapatis and their subordinates in charge of districts or minor departments. The minister for peace and war wis

nated by the number of villages contained therein. We use and how the section to originate is difficult to say but the rejected occurration of their real uses with a conventional number of villages attailed to it a tos well known to be or a. We may mention as me of these —

of considerable importance (Rice, 169—170) In the XIIth century, the Kalacūras employed *Karanams* or "imperial censors" to watch over the provincial governors and they were five in number known as the *Dharmādhyaksangal* or *Rājādhyaksangal* 

Under the Hoysālas, five ministers (Pañca-pradhānas) stood very prominent and of these the prime minister (the Sirahpradhāna, Sarvapradhāna, or the Sarvādhikārin) was pre-eminent among them and was the spokesman (tongue) in the Council Under them were the lower officials, in charge of departments or of the provinces. The provincial officers often bore the title of Dandanāyaka. Some of these combined higher titles and were often Senāpatis. A general is described as bearing the titles of Mahāpradhāna. Sarvādhikārin, Senāpati and Hiriyahadval (Rice, 170)

Royal secretaries enjoying the confidence of the king (like the *Rahasyādhikrtas*) communicated the king's orders and these were preserved in records (*Kadata*)

## TAMIL INDIA

The administrative system of the extreme south was evolved out of the combination of local institutions with those received from the north. Very little is known of the earliest southern society and we may safely presume that before the third century BC, Tāmilakam was convulsed by constant wars among the tribes. If we are to believe in the *Tolkappiyan*, the extreme south divided into five geographical areas, was the scene of warfare amongst five

tubes, whose later descendants as well as present survivors it will be very difficult to identify Gradually north Indian adventurers and Brahmanas migrated to the south and spread new ideas and their culture

By the first century of the Christian era royal dynastics came to establish themselves and occupied a superior position. The Colas established themselves in the eastern coastal region from Palekat to Youdi and controlled the lesser chieftains and rulers of Nadus. This region was later known as the Cola mandalam.

The Pandya country lay to the south and comprised the districts of Madura and Tinnevelly and parts of southern Travancore If we believe in Megasthenes Pandyas were ruled by women probably referring to the pro-eminent position of women in southern societies

kerala or Malabar lay to the west and Mysore was parcelled out amongst minor chiefs and the northern frontiers were held by chiefs of Tulu and Tirupathu country. North of these were the Vadukars (northerness). The whole region was supposed to have 13 Nadus but gradually there arose the three crowned heads and seven chiefs.

As stated already Karikala (Gula) the Blackfoot the Cola ruler was the first to attempt the establishment of his authority over the whole land and it was probably to who established the 24 Keptans or forts which were the he idquarters of later districts. After the full of Karil alas successors the Red Cert Senguthuyan etablished tert supremacy which later ome time passed to the Panelyas I rom these latter, the Pallayas snatched away supreme

power which lasted for four centuries With headquarters at Kāñcī, they ruled over the subordinate chiefs, their own centre being Tondamandalam

The early Tamils were a hardy and warlike people among whom women enjoyed an almost equal status with their male kinsmen. The policy of the early tribal states was based on the—

- (a) Communal village,
- (b) Various popular assemblies of priests and ministers, and local elders,
- (c) Chiefs

The power of the chiefs was at first fully limited but gradually rose in course of the perpetual warfare

The predominance of the tribal principle, the persistent enmity among the tribes and the influence of some other factors contributed to the long-continued existence of small principalities and chiefships. These in their turn resisted the growth of a centralised monarchy, controlling the local affairs of the different units and provinces. Northern influence or foreign contact fostered the glowth of the imperial ideal, but a powerful king—a Permerddi or a Nurmarddi—never destroyed the chiefships or the autonomy of the localities. Local autonomy remained the most dominant political principle and in social life the self-sufficient village community remained the unit. (See S. K. Alyangar's Contributions of South India, XIX)

The influence of this Village Community lasted throughout the history of Tāmilakam and even now we have a similar village type with co-operative institutions and communal organisation

Pallavas - With the advent of the Pallavas, a new era begins in the administrative history of Southern India The Pallavas were northerners in origin, and as such they were always regarded as foreigners by the Tamils They established themselves in Tonda mandalam the Gauga vadi and Vengi (Vengāi Nādu)

Under them we have the evolution of a new type of administration which imposed a superstructure of northern origin and northern ideal of government upon the local and communal institutions of the south

At the bottom of the system was the Village or Grāma A number of villages constituted a Koţtam or Desa and a number of Koţtams made up a Rāsţra which was more often synonymous with Mandala

For the administrative history of the Pallavas Hirahi dgalli Copper plates of Sivaskandavarman (F. I. I. 5) as well as the Rayakota plates of Skandasisya (F. I. 5) the Omgodu plates of Vijavaskandavarna n (Γ I NV) the Kuram plates of Paramesvar warman I (S. I. I., Vol. I. 144) are very important. From these we know that the who often took the title of Dharma Pallava km⊆s maharaja succeeded in building up a more comprehensive administrative machiners, which was on the neithern While the provinces (rastras) and subdivi i us model were under the charge of Desidhil plas minor officials I nown as Tipittas (Tyapitas) took circ of loyal inten-t Imalya supervised the idministration in the villages and twe orders

In the midst of the country were establish 4 arra as commanded by Vaplas (Virilars) and customs how

(Mandapas) in charge of the Mandapis Other important officers were the Tuthikas (Tīrthikas) who took charge of bathing places and ferries(?) Gulmikas (Gumikas) took care of the ferests Roaming spies (Sañcarantakas) watched over the conduct of the people Vallavas and Govallavas are also mentioned (E I, I, No 1)

In the territories of the conquered princes, much of authority was felt to the local rulers. This was a source of weakness, for the princes of Kerala, Pāndya and Cola country took the earliest opportunity of revolting

Over local officers were the higher officials of the central government These included—

- (1) The Amātyas—Probably advisers of the king or supervisors of the civil government,
- (2) The Rahasyādhikrtas—Piivy Councillors enjoying royal trust,
- (3) The Senāpatis—Military officers commanding troops and chastising local and foreign enemies

Local Administration under the Pallavas—Villages and towns were administered by local assemblies, i.e. the Sabhās and the Nagarattaras—Their functions, duties and constitution are to be discussed in full in a later section. In villages and towns, measures were taken to have a comprehensive land survey as well for water supply and other important local works.

The Cola Administration—On the decline of the Pallava power towards the close of the IXth century A Ď, the Cola power revived at the instance of Vijayālaya and by Parantaka Parakeśarī Varman (906—947), though his successor Rājāditya met his death at the battle of

Takkolam at the hands of a feudatory of Kṛṣṇa III Under Rājarāja the Cola Empire was fully consolidated (985—1012) though a continuous war was waged by the Colas with the Cālukyas

The Colas succeeding Rajaraja consolidated a fine administrative system. As under the Pallavas, the highest units were known as *Mandalas*, of which six posted.—

- (a) Tonda mandalam- Pallava country
- (b) Chola mandalam—Original Cola country
- (c) Solakerala mandalam—Kongu country known as Salem and Coimbatore districts
  - (d) Rajaraja mandalam-Part of Pandya country
- (e) Gangaikondacola mandalam--Western Ganga country and part of Mysore

(f) Nikharilicola mandalam—Eastern Gauga country and part of Mysore

To these were attached Vengai nadu or Vengi the country of a dependent ally As would appear from above the Mandalas were originally independent countries like those of the Keralas Pallayas and Gangas New names were given to them after the Cola ruler who conquered them Mandala in the eyes of the Colas was the highest territorial division and the Colas called Maharistra by the name of Ratja mandala

Villages were the smallest units of the Empire A number of villages constituted a Nadu A number of Nadus made up a Koff im. In the Cola country project there was the administrative division of Valumbir a number of which constituted the Cola mand slam. Accord-

ing to K. Aivengar, there were eight such Valanadus (see Ivengar's Incient India, 174-175, Decean, Bk., V)

The Cola government was based upon a highly organised village-system administered by a local assembly or Sabhā Similar sabhās existed in townships

The higher exentive machinery under the Cola kings comprised

- (a) A number of secretaries or advisors, the chief secretary having the title of Olar-nāyaka,
- (b) Senāpatīs,
- (c) Judges and magistrates (1dhikaranas),
- (d) Tax collectors, tolls-gatherers, etc. (Kanu),
- (e) Officers and accountants in towns (Nagarattam)

In the conquered countries, the local rulers were left with much authority. Gradually, however, the Cola kings replaced them by royal princes sent out from the capital (For Cola administration see Tyengar's Deccan Bk, X, Ancient India, Ch. VI)

Pāndya-Kerala - The administrative history of the Pāndyas and Keralas presents nothing of special interest except the autonomous village system and the existence of minor chiefships. On the fall of the Colas, the Pāndyas organised a transient empire which lasted for nearly half a century, only to be extinguished by the attack of the Mussalman army under Malik Kafur

The central executive body gradually came to consolidate its power and it was modelled on the northern administration. As regards the first empire very little of details is known. Under Jatila Parāntaka we find mention of *Uttara-mantrinah* and *Mahāsāmantas* (Nilakantha

Sastry's Pandyas 85) while in the Madras Museum plates we have a reference to Mātangādhyakşa (officer in charge of elephants)

The smallest administrative divisions as in the earliest period were the Villages or *Grāmas*. The next higher unit was the Nādu or the Nad or the Kurram which is often designated by the term *Rāṣṭra*. The Nad had an independent existence with its own officers and its local customs (N. Sastri. Pāndyas Ch. III. VII. etc.)

But in Kerala one remarkable institution attracts our attention namely the republican federation which was organised by the local Brahmins. According to recorded tradition there were 61 chiefships which united to form a federation with elective office bearers, who controlled the the affairs of the state. After a considerable period, however, there were quarrels among the leaders and the headship of the state was vested in the Nayer prince of the locality, who bore the title of Perimal (Perigrant maling).

For the administration of Kerala, we have the works and contributions of recent writers including Mr. K. P. Menon (Journal of Indian History, 1925), and Mr. Pillas (I. A. N.IV.). According to them for administrative purposes. Kerala came to be divided into Vadus (ruled by Vadus alis). Desams (ruled by Desavals), and the smill a divisions were the villages—the Gramas of the Nambudris the Taras of the Navars and the Cheri of the lower caste people. In Vadus a royal 8 napati was in charge of the military and the police.

The Perumals authority grew but the voice of the

people remained supreme and they met in Kuttams or assemblies. The smallest Kuttams were those of the village-people under the Kāranavars and they discussed local affairs and, sometimes meeting under the Āšān, settled communal disputes. The Assembly of the Nādu was more powerful and discussed topics of greater interest. The 18 divisions of the country had these assemblies and in the IXth century or thereabout assemblies of 500, or 600 or even 6,000 used to meet. Later on, there was a big assembly for the whole country which was presided over by the Valluvanād till the XIIIth century when the Zamorin assumed the presidency. According to one authority such an assembly was held even as late as 1743 AD. The British, however, ignored the local organisation of the Nayars (see C. V. Vaidya, Vol. III, 467—469).

In these communal administrations, the temples played an important part and each of these had its office-bearers and assemblies. The assembly could remove the Taliyalian and was presided over by the Pali-Nayar. Similarly the Adhikanguls, including the Potuvals, were subject to the assembly. All duties of the collection of taxes and management of temples were supervised by the assembly. The temple assembly also discharged important socio-economic functions and temples supervised local needs and acted as banks (Tali Ins., I. H. Q., IV, 152)

#### PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT

While the king was supreme in the state and directed the general policy of government as well as the conduct of wars and alliances the administration of the different districts of the country was in the hands of local officials. Probably in the provinces round the capital the king exercised governmental authority but the outlying districts were entrusted to his deputies. These deputies subject to their loyalty to their master the king were supreme within their jurisdiction. They supervised the administration administered the laws promulgated royal edicts looked to the preservation of life and property, fought against the local enemies to peace and redressed the grievances of subjects. These provincial governors belong to three categories.—

(a) Junior members of the royal family including the vounger brothers and sons of the king and sometimes uncles sons in laws or relatives of the king by marriage

(b) Emment officials or trusted ministers who were

appointed to rule the provinces

(c) Fendatories who acknowledged the paramount authority of the king obeyed his commends paid tribute

and fought for him

(a) Princes of the royal family—Princes of the royal
family were more often elected to fill the post of previocatal governors—Such a practice seem to have exist d
among the Mairyas—Vol a himself w—the vicen—of
Lypin and his s a kineda was machan, of the Taxifa

The Mitras as well as the Andhras similarly province appointed princes of the royal blood to act as provincial Such a practice probably existed under the Guptas but we have very little epigraphic evidence except the case of Kumāra Govinda Gupta But later on this became an almost universal practice among the rulers of Mediæval Hindu India and we have innumerable inscriptions preving this Thus, under Pulakeśī II, his younger brother Visnu-vardhan ruled first over the Sataia region and later in Vengi, where with his brother's consent he founded an independant dynasty of his own Pulakeśi's Candrāditya and Ādityavarman, ruled the Savantavandi district and the region near the confluence of Kistna and Tungabhadra respectively Pulakeśi's successor Vikramāditya put his biother Jayasınhavaiman over Lata where he founded a line of his own Among the Gangas we have the practice of appointing princes to rule provinces (Rice-44) Among the Rāstiakūtas, Dhruva appointed his eldest son Mārakkasara to rule over the Gangavādi region selecting his younger son Govinda III Govin'da gave Lata to his younger brother for the crown Indra who founded a Rāstiakūta dynasty theie the Cālukyas of Kalyan, we find Someśvaia's sons iuling portions of the empire and under Vikramāditya VI, his brother, Jayasınha, ruled Vanavāsı but revolted

In the extreme south as well as under the later dynasties we have the same practice of appointing royal princes to the provinces. The Pallavas followed the same practice and the Colas were fond of it. The Cola Rājādhirāja made it a practice to confer viceroyalties on sons,

uncles, brothers and cousins. Vengi was granted to a Cola prince while in other provinces sons of the king were appointed.

Female Governors—Queens and royal princesses were often appointed to rule provinces. We have many references to such in the Karnata records under the Calukvas of Kalyan. Thus in 1053 under Somesvara I Queen Mailala devi ruled Vanavāsi. In 1054 Queen Ketaladevi governed the Ponnavadu agrahara enjoying 1/3 of the revenue. The six queens of Vikrama VI all enjoyed territories as anyabhogas (DKD 448). Somesvara Is aunt the amazon kka ruled a province of 200 villages and land siege to Gokat. A daughter of Vikrama VI Mailala married to a feudatory Jayakesin Kadamba, ruled a province under and along with her husband.

Ministers ite—Viceroys and governors were often recruited from able officials or ministers of proved lovalty and efficiency. Of such we have innumerable mention in the inscriptions. Thus under the Mauryas some of the Mahamatras and Ayaputas were members of the higher bureaucracy. Under the Guptas Parinadatta and Chakra palita ruled Gujar it. The rulers of Pundra Vardhama under the Guptas were selected from the higher bureaucracy while Bhuktis were ruled by Up indias and kumaramativas who also ruled the Visivas or minor subdivisions (Panoderpur Inscriptions). Under the Palis the immister Validvadeva was appointed to the province of Pragivati quity where he made him. If hims

Under the Palley is we me twith provinced poverties and generals ruling prixmes and many of they were

selected from the higher bureaucracy or from amongst trusted ministers

The Rāstrakūtas and Cālukyas of Kalyan, not only employed such ministers and trusted officials, but very often entrusted provinces to able feudatories and often to friendly allies Of friendly allies under the Rastrakūtas, we have the examples of Butuga II who had seized the Ganga kingdom with Rastrakuta help and later on fought on behalf of one of the aspırants to the Rāstrakūta As regards feudatories appointed to viceiovalties and governorship, we find a large number recruited amongst them The history of Gangavādi from Vanavāsı affords us a large number of such examples Thus under Govinda III, Dosiraja ruled Vanavāsi while under the Cālukyas of Kalyan we find a large number of princes belonging to feudatory families ruling pro-Prominent among these were vinces like Vanavāsi mahāmandalesvaras and mahāmāndalıkas belonging to the Sılāhāras of Konkana, the Pāndyas, Rattas or the Kadambas Under the same Cālukyas, we find also trusted mınısters like Mahapradhāna Anantapāla or Govindarasa holding these high offices Under the Yadavas of Devagiri we find many governors not belonging to the royal family The most prominent of them were the governor appointed by Mahādeva to rule Konkana, while under Simhana, Bichu and Bechan ruled the south Among the feudatory governors during the reign of Vikrama VI may be mentioned Kirtivarman Kadamba of Hangal, Munja of Sinda family, Satyadeva, Kalyānesvara of the Jīmūtavāhana lineage, Dadhibhāndaka Rāstrakūta, Sāntivarman II Kadamba of Hangal Anantadeva Silahāra Guvala (Kadamba of Goa) (Fleet D.K.D. 449 521). Pāndya Tribhubanamaila of Gokarna Udayādītya of the Western Ganges. Permaddi of the Iimūtavāhana line and Acha Sinda in addition to feudatory princes who ruled their hereditary possessions. Later on towards the close of Cālukya rule the government of these provinces passed to Vijjala Kalacurya who took the earliest opportunity of making himself independent.

A large part of a kingdom was in the hands of hereditary feudal rulers some of whom maintained themselves by transferring their allegiance to a rising dynasty while others raised themselves to feudatory position by their loyalty and devotion which enabled these founders of families to transmit the governmental office to their sons and grandsons

Thus in each monarchy a portion remained directly under the king—who appointed his relatives or trusted officials to rule remote districts while the rest was in the hands of feudatories of various grades. Apart from the ethere were the Agraham's committee and towns where level autonomy was often exercised by the elders holders of privileges or corporations.

Fendatories of the Vakatalas - The Vikitikes had their fendatories. At least one line has been found out in the Vianta Cave Ins. (Ar. S.W.I. IV) of which the name of princes from Dhritaristra. Hare subset Saure Mick. Updidragupta. Kaca. Bhiksulas. Nilate v. K. ca. II. Krandasa and Rana, mika have is en record. I

Deccan Feudatories under the Cālukyas and Rāstra-kūtas—Under the Cālukyas and Rāstrakūtas, the major part of their territories seems to have been in the hands of feudatories. First of all these, were the Rattas who were the direct successors of the Mahārattis and Bhojas of the Andhra period, The Nalas of Nolamvadi in Vellari and Karnal who were put down repeatedly by the Cālukyas, the Maurya of Konkan with Puri as capital, the Sendrakas (Fleet DKD p 292) and the Kalaccuris Other minor families also existed and probably the Cālukyas themselves originally held a small kingdom under the suzerian authority of some powerful kings

Inscriptions bring to light many minor and feudatories Thus from the Goa plates of Satyāśradya, we know of one Indravarman of the Beppana family IX Saka 532) Similarly we find another (JBBAS family, the Sendrakas to which Kirtivarman's uncle Sree Ballabha Senāngaraja belonged (Ep Ind and the Balagamve Kanarese Inscription mentions the feudatory mahārāja Pogilli belonging this Sendraka family (I A XIX) From two other inscriptions we know that the Āluva princes Satyavāha and his successors were feudatories under Vinayāditya (Sorab plates IA XIX, and Harihar plates, IA, VII of Saka 614-616). The Adur Sanskrit and Kanarese inscriptions of Kirtivarman mentions a king Sinda of Pandipur and Madhavati From the main family small dynasties also arose The I A XX mentions a Cālukya Parahita-raja

Feudatories of the Rastrakutas

The Rastrakūtas had innumerable feudatories, who

ruled their territories by hereditary right. Prominent among the feudatories were

(a) The Ratias who were probably descended from the local barons originally ruling Mahārāsira and the Rāsirakūtas themselves were one of these families (Kielhorn's list 75) Amoghavarsa is called Atisayadhavala of the Ratia family of Latialura (For the Retias and their emblems see Ep Ind Vol VII) The Ratia samantas were many and in one inscription namely the Sanjan plates, they are said to have more than once risen in revolt. Their inscriptions are numerous and two lines appear to have been prominent namely the Ratia mahāsāmantas of Saundatti (Kielhorn's list no 79 et sec.) and the Ratias of Latialura—of which the geneology is found in the inscriptions (Kielhorn's list nos 111 268)

#### The Yadavas

In the northern region in the so called Seuna country there existed the Yadavas who for a long time remained a feudatory line but on the fall of the western Calukvas of kalyan they rose to independence and prosperity

- (b) The Sinda maham indalesvar is "(Kielhorn's list no 111/10 See L.I. note E.I. NIV 265) Some of the e-sinda chiefs had their centre at Bhogav iti-others describe them selves as Tords of Karhad. Some of the sind is elled themselves sindagovinda and I apil a algebra watti white one cell themselves fords of I I as a vizo. The sindagovinda and to their principality sindayadi.
- (c) The Kad infries were probably counseled with the Kad infries of Various and built infries expitals of Infries.

(Halsi), Ucchasringi and Tripaivata (Fleet DK D p 284) Some of these māhāmandalesvais iuled with capital at Goa while others took the title of Lords of Konkana We have another line of Kadambas of Hangal (who however call themselves lords of Vanavāsi)

- (d) The Pandyas of Konkana \ Kielhorn's list
- (e) Pandyas of Nolamvadı (nos 212-252)

(f) The Silahāra princes calling themselves mahāmandalesvara and lords of Tagara and residing at Kolhapur (Kielhorn's list 325) and Bulvad (Kielhorn's 323) The Silaras seem to have been established in a region once in hands of Mauryas of Puri and in Padmāvatī durga and Prāntaka durga One Sılāra mahāsāmanta Pullasaktı and his son Kapaidin II describe themselves as lords of the whole Konkan (Kielhorn's Ins. nos 72-72—I A Vol XVIII). Krishna I entrusted Sanaphulla with south Konkan (DKD 392) Some of these princes had mahāsāmantas under them and the Sılāras held sway from saka 930-1113 (See Rāstrakūta Empire boundaries, Fleet D K D 382-83) In addition to these, the Rāstrakūtas were overlords of the Aluvas and for some time of the W Gangas As the latter were weak princes, they had to submit to the Rāstrakūtas against the depredations of the Colas Consequently they were subject allies or friendly dependents of the Rāstrakūtas, with whom they had matrimonial relationship In fact one inscription of Kongan, Sivamāra speaks of the king being appointed by Rāstrakūta Govinda and Pallava Naudivarman Butuga II secured the throne with the help of the Rastrakūta king Baddega or Amoghavarsa II, married his daughter, helped Krishna III to gain

the throne against the usurper Lallivam and fighting against the Colas at Takkola killed the Cola king On account of this he seems to have received from the Rastra kūtas the principality of Vanavāsi 12000 and Belvola 300 There are stray references to other feudatories. Thus the Torkhed plates (Ep Ind III) speak of mahasamanta Buddhavarşa the Kaira Ins speaks of mahasamanta Pracanda son of Dhavala Several Calukya families maintained themselves even after the fall of the Calukyas of Badami (Fleet DKD p 38) and probably from one of these the Calukyas of Kalyan rose. The prominent feudatories of the Calukyas of Kalvan includes the kadambas of Hangal and the Nolambas (Fleet DkD p 437) the Hoysalas ruling the territory between Konkan and Vadadavaya the Rattas of Saundatt and Yadavas of Sanna

Minor lines and tributaries of the Tamil country

In the extreme south innumerable dynastics existed and rufed in various localities with varying fortunes under powerful neighbour. Each dynasty had its lieviday of glory often succeeded by a period of dependence and often of political downfall. This struggle had been going on from early times. The Banas and Gauges had risen to power in the west while the Ceras and Coles had made a bid for supreme power as well as the Landsas But for a time the Ceras Colas and Pandyas had to about to the Pallayas, and on their downfall the Colas became the suzerian power. I limitely the ker lay became a ruling power in the extreme path west while torth of them the

Hoysālas established their authority after sanguinary wais with the Yādavas and others. Of the minor dynasties, the more important were the Nolambas (a branch of Pallavas), the Ganga-Pallavas and the Pāndvas of Ucchangi

In spite of vicissitudes of fortune, these dynasties existed for long periods and they gave their name to the localities where they ruled. Thus the Ganga territory came to be known as Gangavādī (96000). Similarly Nalambavādī (32000) and Ganga-nādu (6000).

The Nolambas —Their line continued for a long time They were under the Gangas, then under the Rāstrakūtas, then successively under the Gangas and western Cālukyas and under the Colas

The Ganga-Pallavas—A minor feudatory family ruled in Ganga 6000, and had their capital at Nandigiri

The Pandyas of Ucchangi — Who claimed to have been mahāmandalesvaras and lords of Kāncīpura They were feudatories of the Cālukyas, but were hard pressed by the Colas and ultimately became vassals of the Hoyasālas

Other minor feudatory families were the *Kerala* princes and the Pandyas who were repeatedly chastised by the Colas, the Kongalvas (ruling in Kongal-nad 8000) the Changalvas (in Changanad)

# Feudatories of the Gurjara-pratihāras and other dynasties of the North

The feudatories under the Gurjara-pratihāias were numerous. The most prominent among these were —

(1) The Chandellas of Jejakabhukti, who afterwards

turned their arms against their everlord and with the help of the Kacchapaghātas killed Rājyapāla (For their ille giance see Khajuraho Ins. Ep. Ind. I)

(2) Near about Rajorgadh there was another minor Pratihāra line represented by Mi hārājādhirāj

Mahendrajāla

(3) The Devagarh Ins throws light on another line of feudatories represented by mahasamanta Vişnurama under Bhoja (Saka 784)

(4) The Tomaras — The Pehoa Ins of the reign of Mahendrapala speaks of a line of Tomaras who built a

temple

(5) Near about Sivedoni we had different lines of feudatories who bore the title of mahasamantadhipati Three princes are known namely Gunaraja Undribhata and Durbhata But another Six doni Ins speaks of a miharajadhiraja Niskelanka ruling Sixodoni (ref. E. I.)

(6) Some of the Gubilot princes were leudatories of the Pratiharas especially the line at Chatsu (See Chatsu Ins I VII) Sank iragina was a great fighter in the

cause of his overlord (Bhoja!)

(7) The early Chahamana princes—from Guyaka to Sinharaja—who became greater by wresting the territory of the Fomaras (See Harsa Inscription I V 1913)

The dynastics which were the successors of the

Pratifiar, monarchy had also their feudatories

Calulyus of Gujarat — Inder them were a viril feudatory lines namely a (a) A galadot farally of Mountal (under Kumara) (b) Mahamanar of Nahal ve have the

name of Alhanadeva) (d) The Cāhamānas Vaijalladeva of Brahmapātaka (e) The Paramāras of Candrāvatī we have reference to one māndalīka Dhārāvarsadeva and mahāmandalesvara Rājukula Soma-sinha (f) Another line of mahāmandalesvaras were the Rānakas of Mandalī One of the princes was Sāmanta Sinha.

(g) The *Vodana family* of Nadol—(I A 1912)—we have a prince Pratāpasinha of this line

The feudatories of the Candellas included (a) The Kacchapaghātas of Gwalior—(b) and another line represented by mahārānaka Kumārapāla under the Candella Trailokyavarman

## Cedi Feudatories

- (1) The most important Cedi feudatories were the Cedis of South Kośola with capital at Ratnapur. We have a large number of inscriptions belonging to these princes. There were minor vassals like Mahārānaka Kirtivarman of Kakkaredrika under Jayasinha or Bhogikapāla Nirihullaka under Sankargana.
- Gāhadavāla feudatories—We have very little information about the Kanauj princes but the following feudatories are met with in the inscriptions
- (a)- a line of feudatories of whom one was Rānaka Lavanapravāha
  - ,(b) feudatory Sıngara Vatsarāja
- (c) The Rāstrakūta line of Badaun represented by Madanapāla and Laksmanapāla
  - (d). Probably also the Rāstiakūtas of Magadha
- Feudatories of the Cāhamānas of Sambhara They too had their feudatories but we have little details about them

Paramāra feudatories —We have very little reference to Paramāra feudatories —The most important feudatory line was that founded by Mahākumara Laksmivarmana deva son of Yaśovarman near Bhopal Laksmivarman was a sāmanta

There was a junior branch of the Paramaras at Vagada (Bhander I ist no 133)

Rights and privileges of feudatories —Within their own territories the feudatories enjoyed autonomous rule and exercised many of the functions of sovereign authority. A feudatory state was organised on the model of an independent monarchy and feudal princes had their own officials like the Sandhivigrahika amatya or Pratihara. They ruled their territories without interference administered justice made gifts and land grants, maintained armies and oven issued edicts in their own name.

All this appear from the innumerable inscriptions of the feudatory princes many of whom held authority in their territories for continuous periods extending over two or three centuries. Of such lines may be mentioned the Rattas the Silaras the Pandvas of Konkana the Nolama has and various other lines of the Decean and the south who maintained themselves by transferring their allegiance to the rising power of the day

It was customers for them to put the names of their suzernins in their grants and inscriptions and sometimes the era which had been started by their suzernins. This was an universal custom and requires hardly any discussion. Many of the princes had separate eracts and bann its and we have already mentioned this. Tendators princes

seem to have enjoyed the right of issuing their coins subject has not yet been carefully studied but we have no hesitation in stating that the right of issuing coins was an accepted principle at least during the earlier period We have coins issued by many of the satraps jointly with their suzerains (Azes & Aspavarma, Gondopheines & Sasas, Gondophernes & Aspavarma, Whitehead, PMC I no 130, 147, 150, 157, 159, see also pp 166 for coins of Rañjubala and Liaka) Coins were issued by the Andhra feudatories and we have specimens of those issued by a Mahāratthi (Rapson C A W K Coins pp 57-59) Valabhi princes issued coins with the names of Kumāragupta and Skandagupta with their own Trident symbol in place of the peacock of the Guptas (JRAS 1893 p 137, Rapson IC p 25) Similarly they issued their bull type coins though bearing Gupta names (Allan p CI) Coins bearing the words Sri Rana Hasti seem to have been issued by the Parivrājaka Hastin (Rapson p 28, Cunningham—Coins of Mediæval India p 8)

In lieu of the enjoyment of unmolested local authority within their territories, the feudatories were bound to pay tributes and customary dues, to attend important ceremonial occasions like the coronation of the overlord or the performance by him of Aśvamedha or other important sacrifices, and to iender military help in times of need We find very often the employment of feudatories against foreign enemies, or against rebels at home. The records of the Rāstrakūtas and Cālukyas of the Deccan as well as those of the Rajput kings speak of this

Many such recorded instances are found in the

inscriptions To mention a few a Gupta feudatory lost his life in fighting for his overlord Amoghayarsa sent Bankesa to conquer the Ganga Racamalla (1 I VI p 25 Rice p 42) Butuga the friend and son in law of Amoghavarsa fought against and defeated the Colas at Tukkola The Ganga Mara Singha fought to restore the Rastrakūta Indra The Hoysalas were employed agamst enemies by the Calukyas of Kalyan The Paramara feuda tories fought against the enemies of their overload (C. V. Vaidya M H I II) Such was the case with the great feudatories of the Pintiharns The Cálukya Bhima sent his general the Paramara Dharavaisa against the Chori who suffered a defeat

But certain limitations were imposed on feudatories by the suzeram power. Probably these restrictions were on the lines of those suggested in the Arthasastra of Kautilya (Text 1st edition p. 305 Ch. on Dandopanata vrttup). According to Kautilya.—

(1) Lendatories had to perform their stipulated

(2) they were to inform and invite their overload on the occasion of new undertrikings the marriage of children or their mangurations

(3) they could not build fortres es without the over

lord's parimission

(4) they could not hold communication with the ministers and high officials of the succession with a his permission

(a) they had to inform the overland about the a quasi-

tion of new land

- (6) they had to inform him on the occasion of the outbreak of a revolt or an attack on them by another power,
- (7) they had always to place themselves at the disposal of the lord and had to offer prayers for his good

These were the restrictions imposed on them, but what were really observed is difficult to find out and feudatories did not always conform to the restrictions imposed on them by their overlords. We have instances of private war carried on by them sometimes with the connivance of overlords and sometimes in defiance of them. Thus even under Vikrama VI, we find private wars between feudatories

Under the Pratihāras we find such instances Thus, the Una inscription (I A IX p 6) records a fight between the Cālukya Sāmanta Avanivarman and the Cāpa Dharanivarāha Similarly the Teiahi Ins (I A XVII p 202) records a fight between two feudatories of the Pratihāras namely Gunarāja and Undabhata

They often exchanged territories and we have at least one instance of the sale of 12 villages by Mahāmandalesvara Munja to another feudatory of Vikramāditya (E I III No 43)

Feudatories often strengthened themselves by marital alliances with the family of the overloid. We have many instances of such alliances from south Indian history especially the Cālukyas of Kalyan. The inauguration of a feudatory was attended by the overlord or his representatives. In the inscriptions of the Valabhi princes we have references to it as also in the history of other feudatory families.

All these however varied in the case of different grades of feudatories and in this respect at least three classes of feudatories may be recognized e.g. (a) feudatory lines subsisting from before the rise of the suzer in power but reduced to vassalage

- (b) Feudatory lines established by jumor branches of a powerful dynasty (like the Paramara Mahakumara line and the jumor Cedi line of Ratnapura)
  - (c) Feudatories of creation

As regards the first two we need not say anything Feudatory lines of the first category were numerous like the Kadambas the Pallayas or the Gangas. These were once independent powers or offshoots of them but had to submit to powers like the Rasfrakajas or Colas.

As regards the feudatories of creation, we have many such instances though inscriptional accounts are rather meagre and whatever information we have mostly comes from the south. But though few in number in criptions throw much light on the relation between overload and feudators and the grant of fiels on condition of militars help such feudal grants are found in the south Indian inscriptions. Thus in FT vol. I we find a grant of 750 villages to a chief by the Rastrakuta Kena. Another inscription in F.I. VI co. the Makur grant of Kr. 13 II speaks of conferring the Banay isi 12000 on Butuga for military help. The conferring of find for military felp i il o proved by moth r inscription of Butuar who as reward for help tree as almost only the Banas on Laton bar the Belvola ton. The Komma lus (l. 1 VI) of all of a prince. Bink crips who cope of some village in Fr

Amoghavarsa Feudatories in their turn granted villages to subordinates and as instances we have the grant of 12 villages by Eryappa to Uruga who commanded a force of Nagarattas Similarly Butuga granted the Atakur 12 to a subordinate Mānalera, with the ceremony of laving his sword (E I III Atakur Ins of Krisna) In the Yādava records we find the grant of 32 villages to Acyutanāyaka, (E I XIII) while in northern India we have at least one instance of a grant of a village to the family of a deceased warrior (Garrah plate E I XVI) by the Candella Trailokyavarman In the extreme south, the grant of military fiefs (raktakodagi) were common (See Rice—Mysore and Koorg)

Ordinary people who were also granted lands and privileges, rose to pieminence and became governors or feudatories We have some instances from south Indian history The Ablur inscriptions (E I V) of Vikramaditya VI speaks of the gradual promotion of one of his official One of them Rananganabhairava Govinda became mahāsāmantādhīpatī, mahāpīadhāna, mahādandanāyaka and governor of Banavası Sometimes not merely villages but other rights, titles and honeurs were conferred as we find in the South Indian inscriptions Thus one inscription (I A VIII) speaking of the victories of Vira Nolamba, confeis on Marosethi, who had killed Kulva-raya, an umbrella, planquin, an escort, a throne and eight other rights Similarly the Belatora Ins of Rajendra Cola, mentions the rise of a śūdra to the position of a māṇdalika though for some fault of his he was killed and his wife became sati Sometimes minor rights and privileges were also granted

The Taki plates (E I VI 35) of Rajendra Chodaganga conferred on some family the right to receive betels from a gold plate

The extent of territory conferred on feudatories or enjoyed by them of course varied. Sometimes they ruled big tracts. We have inscriptions (ET VI) proving that a mahamandalesvara Ketaraja ruled 6000 villages another we find a Cola feudatory ruling 6000 villages. While we have two other inscriptions the first of which (EI VI 26) mentions a feudatory Buddharaja enjoying 73 villages under the F Calukvas while in another a maha mandalesvara ruled only 30 villages under his suzeram Vikrama VI of Kalyan

Tendencies of fendal princes - Foudal princes however were generally dissatisfied with their subordinate position and always tried to assert independence. Many of the founders of the great dynastics of the Decean or the South were in origin feudul princes. Thus Bhajari a the pregenitor of the Maitrakas of Valabhi was only a sena patr Gradually his succes ors assumed the higher title of maharaja and afterwards assumed the styles and titles of independence. The early Calukvas, were infnor princewho seized sovereign power from the Kalicuryas. Their successors the Ristrakutas had been kept in chick by the Calukvas and had been their feudatory but Dintalorg's established overeign power. Such in turn was all n the ers with the Caluky is of Krly in Later dynastes like the Hoy das of Dyara amudra or the Yulayas of Deviatr is well as the Kalertin is or the Colas in the South and the Candellas Calcinomis or Par maris of North India were

also foudatories. As soon as their suzerain power became weak, the able tounders of the greatness of these dynasties asserted their independence, enlarged their dominions and made themselves important by successful wars and conquests

This tendency to revolt is noticeable throughout the history of India from the time of the Andhras to the Mussalman conquest. It was so great that the suzerain power had always to remain on the alert and to wage wars to put down rebellious vassals. Southern princes often took summary vengeance on a defeated vassal, who had dared to revolt. We have stories of feudatories being imprisoned in the Cālukya records while the Cola records repeatedly speak of cruel punishments being inflicted on rebellious Kerala and Pāndya princes.

Acknowledged Feudal gradation—The greater feudatones had vassal princes under them and these in their turn ruled by hereditary right. The terms on which they maintained themselves were similar to those enforced on their own overloads. This gradation of ruling authority is an important principle in the administrative and political history of Hindu India, so much so that powerful monarchies like that of the Gurjara-Pratihāras, kept only a part of their territories directly under them leaving the rest in the hands of feudal princes. As we pass on towards the age of Mussalman conquest we find the multiplication of feudal families and vassals of various grades, with various titles. Towards the close of Hindu political supremacy we have an almost universally acknowledged feudal gradation in the Sukranīti. This gradation com-

bined with inscriptional records gives us the following list of feudatories in a rising scale of power and authority — Samanta

Mahasāmanta

Mandalika

Mahamandahl a

] Mandalesvara

Unhāmandalesvara

Raja

Mahārāja

Rajādhirāja

Maharājādhiraj

Parcmabhattaraka

Cakravartin

The Sukraniti gives us the following grade -

	Revenue in Karsas
	tacs lacs
Samanta	1 3
Mandahka	3 10
Raja	10 20
Maharaja	20 00
Syarat	છે. 101
	Cron + Cron +
Samrat	1 10
Virat	10 50

Say ddium i or univer al monarch

The inscription, throughout hight on these feudaters a und their titles, and profess

At first the fendal and aton was simpler the

greater feudatories of the Gupta period directly under the monarch assumed the title of Mahārāja (with their wives calling themselves Mahādevī). Below these were the Sāmantas or Sāmantādhipatis, but they were probably entirely dependent on the king and were of no consequence. It was during the turmoil succeeding the Hūna invasion and the final disruption of the Gupta monarchy that the number and gradation of feudatories were multiplied.

In the Deccan, even under the Andhras, feudatories like the mahārathis and mahābhojas existed. On the fall of the Andhra monarchy, these mahārathis or rattas became more important, while in the different localities, new families, consolidated local sovereign authority under paramount dynasties like the Cālukyas, Rāstrakūtas and the western Cālukyas

In the Tamil country, independent chiefs and dynasties like the Kerala princes, the Pāndyas and Colas were reduced to the position of vassals by the Pallavas. The Ganges and Bānas underwent fluctuations in fortune and when the Colas became the suzerain power, they reduced their defeated rivals to the position of feudatories

From the inscriptions we find various styles and titles assumed by the feudatories Some called themselves sāmantas, other mandaleśvaras, other assumed the title of Rājā and Mahārājā while several feudatories of Gurjara-Pratihāras called themselves Mahārājadhirāja, only refraining from assuming the style of independence and paramountcy viz Paramabhāttāraka and Cakravartin Thus, among the Gurjara-Pratihara feudatories we find

Mathanadeva of Rajorgadh calling himself Maharaja dhirāja and the same title is assumed by \iskalanka and Durbhata governing Siyodoni while we have two feuda tories mahāsamanta Visnurāmā and Undabhata remaining satisfied with the lesser title

Feudatories had also other titles. The Cahamana Alhanadeva of Nadul called himself a maharaja while the Paramara princes of Candravti (vassals of the Calukyas of Gujarat) called themselves mandalika mahamandales vara or Rajakula (193–209–210). The Cihamanas of Bhinmal called themselves maharajaputra and maharaja kula while many princes assumed the title of Ranaka or maharanaka (Kielhorn's no 140–186, 218–3–210–225–218–419). We have at least one prince calling himself Bhogi kapala (Nirihaliuka) no 429. A Cahamana feudatory callshimself Adhiraja (Bha List 341). The terms Rajakula Maharajakula Ranaka and Maharanaka have given rise to the modern titles of Rawal. Maharawal. Rana and Maharana

The fendatories of the Decem like the Patjas Sind is Kadambas of Gea. Pandy is of Konkana remained satisfied with the title of mahasamanta mahasamantambati or mahamandalesvara. Some of the Kadambas called themselves lord of Konkan, other as uned the title of lord of Banavasi, while other princes assumed the title of mahasamant ollupation, had mahasamant ollupation.

Frolution of Rapput Feudalicit. As time went on the number of feudatories, multiplied and the innunerable princelings and chiefs consolidated their authority. The

continuous warfare of the period did much to strengthen this principle

The organisation of the Rajput fighting aristocracy marked the last phase of the Socio-political change fraught also with great economic consequences The Rajput septs which in course of time rose to the traditional number of thirty-six, gradually established themselves in different localities and imposed their authority over a subject population of husbandmen traders and lower grade Districts and subdivisions came to be assigned to great leaders and their kinsmen, each one of these being called upon to fight for the overlord in times of war Gradually, the hereditary principle operated and the smallest holders claiming kinship with the Rajput julers became the owners of the soil with the right and privilage of fighting leaving all work of production to the peaceful subject Brahmins, Priests and traders maintained themselves by obtaining grants and privileges or by forming associations or guilds for self-defence. The people at the bottom were called upon to do service to their masters who gradually asserted their rights to tribute and service, to which new imposts and obligations in course of subsequent ages were added The chief characteristics of the system in vogue in Rajputana have been described by Todd in Rajasthan (Vol I, Chapter on the Feudal system of Raiputana) Though conditions differed in the various provinces and principalities the following points are worthy of note --

(1) Each Rajput king had under him, a number of chiefs, each bound by ties of fidelity and service and com-

manding a specified number of soldiers in the field supplied by him

(2) The chiefs holding grants from the king (Putta wats) had their distinctive badges crests and banners and in some cases (Chief of Salumbra) the right of coming silver and even the right of leading the van of the army or acting as Regent in the absence of the king

These vassal chiefs held lands sufficient for their main tainence (Grasia—from Gras maintainence) and had to perform unrestricted inflitary services at home and abroad But there was another class (the Bhoomin) who held by prescriptive possession paid an annual quit rent and did local service

(3) The vassal was obliged to attend the court of his master to accompany his master in hunt and war and to give himself as a host use or his life in war for his master.

(4) The tenant was subject to the laws of relief and forefeiture but these laws "radually lest their force and in many localities fields were held in perpetuity

(a) According to the strict rule land could not be then need without the consent of the line but this are dually broke down

(6) The king claimed the wardship of the minor and his permission was required for the marriage of CC also

(7) Vassals were required to render aids life centributions in times of a marria cof the lord, daught r

(8) The vas al claim leader however was a full mean within his limits. He could addivid the latel in the previous for his children leaving in a total leaving montaining the rit and ar means of the claim. De-

in turn were subdivided. Families added to their fortunes by new acquisitious and thus Bhayads were established. The smallest chief was the owner of a Chursa or "knight's fee." The clansmen looked upon him as their leader and would fight for him even against the king as was the practice in France or the continent.

This system was of gradual evolution. As we know from the Arthasastra, the grant of land for military service (Ayudhiyaka villages) was known in ancient India and even in the days of the Arthasastra kings levied Senā bhakta, or subsistence for troops. In times of war and anarchy chiefs and sub-chiefs multiplied, and gradually custom and time helped in evolving a system of landholding on condition of military service. Minor princes saved themselves by submitting to such conditions of service. In course of time, the fighting brotherhood multiplied, and thus with military service and time-honoured incidents and customs a feudal system arose.

Todd, the historian of the Rajputs, made an investigation into the incidents of this so-called feudal system of Rajputana. To a western observer this system of landholding on condition of military service, the gradation of landholders with peculiar privileges and rights and with incidents similar to those existing in many countries of Europe, appeared to be really feudal, and in the absence of a better word to designate the system we may also use the same expression. But there were many inherent differences

First of all, in India it was never fully accepted that all lands belonged to the king

Secondly land enjoyed by the Rapput clans and and vidual leaders remained completely vested in them and passed by hereditary descent. There were no hard and fast laws of escheat and confiscation on misconduct or at the will of the lord.

Thirdly the members of a Rapput sub clan looked to their own leader is their everlord and these clan lords claimed social equality with the king

Rapput feudalism was thus a sort of clan feudalism and bore a close resemblance to these organisations of keltic Ireland or of the Highlands

### Government of Localities

As we have said provinces were divided into smaller units namely (a) Small districts (b) Fowns and (c) Villages The name and organisation of such smaller divisions varied in the different parts of India

(1) In Fastern India there were the Visiyas (sub-divisions of the Bhul Its) ruled by Visiyapatis. Visavas were composed of a number of villages is we know from the Pala and sena inscriptions. Smaller districts had their governors like the rulers of Mandalas or Visavas or village groups as we know from the Danodar ipura inscriptions. Within the jurisdiction of such local officials who were either samentas or royal officers there we am Adhi than a or Adhikar in e which was presided over by the local official and where justice was administered by the local official within the Leithty police prefet or inflictir entirely existed and minor offer Libke the Dandan was as Itan Iapard is Gelable. Confirm a and satisfaces in additional

to the moving spies, collected royal dues, apprehended criminals or discharged their other duties. Under them there were the menials like the Cātas and Bhatas or the Khaśas, Karnātas and Mālavas who were so called because they were recruited from the mercinary adventurers of these localities of India.

- (2) In Western India there were such small divisions—Mandalas or village groups, sometimes called Pathakas subdivided into Pattalās, and occasionally we find village groups of 3, 6, 12, 24 etc., the village being the smallest unit—A Malwa grant speaks of a Prati-Jāgaranaka
- (3) In the Deccan the units were the subdivisions of the Rästras called Visayas which were composed of village groups while individual villages were the smallest units
- (4) In Tamil India a number of villages (Urus) and townships (Pārus) constituted the smallest division of the Nadus or Nads (or Taluks) Kottamas and Pallas were separated. This type of organisation lasted till the days of the Vijayaynagar kings. Districts were often designated by the name of the chief village or town in them. The area or size of a Nad varied. Sometimes Nads were designated by the number of villages in them and the area was determined by the natural boundaries like high loads, livers canals etc. Many of the biggest units, as we have shown, were called by the name of the chief town or the number of villages in them. The Nadus survived in Kanara, Malabar and in Tamil country proper.
- (5) The Kanarese districts had a peculiar organisation of their own though similar to those of the Tamil country Under the Cālukyas of Kalyan village groups or Nads had

an organisation of their own. Over each of such groups were the officials e.g.

- 1 Mane-vergadde (household master)
- 2 \ad pergadde (commissioner of a county)

The Nad pergadde was assisted by a number of officials. The Such inscriptions (no. D.) mentions the names of these (E.I. NV). We find from it that the village group of Kisukad 70 was ruled by a Manevergadde who was assisted by—

- 1 Two Tantrapālas (Councillors or assessors)
- 2 A Pridhāna
- 3 An Aliya (Secretary to the Council)
- 4 1 Vad pergadde

Villages or village groups had a Mayor (Ur odeya) over them while in each village there was a village account int who wis called in Kanara Sana bhoga [1/1/VIII] NV Sudi Ins. Kaleswai NVI Abbur ININ Kabban Gadas]

#### Local Government

Having briefly described the administrative officials and divisions of the various parts of Northern and Southern India, we pass on to discuss the government of the smallest divisions namely the Communes, Fowns and Villages. As a well-known to the students of India, History the smallest units were practically min god by the local inhabitants though minor officials represented from authority and exacted royal due. For it of figure ring at the smallest of the discount of the smallest of the government in India was fortered by a number of car as first of all will ages of though enjoyed autonomy from dime, the Velleting. The same hardly distorted by the goal truly re-

who attempted to establish Imperial authority during subsequent periods. Even the Mauryas who carried their interference to the minutest details of government allowed these village communities to subsist, and the author of the great. Arthasastia, not only advocated their retentation but also strengthened them by fostering co-operative undertakings in local matters and by checking disobedience to local authority on the part of refractory individuals. Secondly, after the fall of the Mauryas none of the governments established in the different provinces of India thought of carrying their interference too far while constant wars, and turmoils forced the localities themselves to assume local burdens and to discharge local functions.

The village community subsisted throughout the whole of India though its character differed in the great divisions of the country. In the North and in parts of the Decean the village community was more of an administrative and social unit than an almost perfect socio-economic communal institution as we find in Tamil India. In the North the village managed its own affairs under the Grāmanī and later on under the Grāmika. The mediæval designation of this village chief was—

- (a) Pattakıla ın the Malwa region
- (b) Grāmapatı or Grāmika in Hindustan
- (c) Grāmakūta in the Deccan From Pattakila the present word Patel has been derived while Grāmakūta has been conjupted into the modern Gamot. In some inscriptions we find mention of the Mahattara. The name subsists in the present Mhātre in Konkan. Under the headman were the Pañch or the five officials of the village,

of which we find a glowing account in Sabhāparvan Chapter V These officials were the Samaharta the Sam vidhāta the Ganaka the Lekhaka and the Sāksi Royal officials like the Gopas of the Arthasastra collected taxes. checked accounts and superintended groups of villages from five to a hundred and sometimes to a thousand. If we are to believe in the Smith literature especially Manu and Yajaavalkya the royal officials over 10 100 or 1000 villages were maintained by grants of lands and occasional The village elders administered justice in minor cases regulated the use of pasture lands maintained the educational and pious foundations and put down crimes within their jurisdiction. Practically the same system continued throughout the whole of Northern India | They also regulated the remunerations of the mechanics and artisans attached to the villages. The admission of outsiders into the village was also in their hands and the uncultivated lands belonging to the village was also under their charge

Types of Villages — As to villages various types existed blue those of the time of the Arthasastri — That book mentions villages which either formed part of the royal demesne or were Avudhiyakas (held on military tenure)

- (a) Some villages were managed by their owners to whom they had been given as Northarts by the limits of Northarts are numerous in the histary of India.
- (b) Villages were sometime—rante I to the temples of local gods and were ruled by the Leaf people.
- (c) to virils the clear of the Hindu part silt is care to be granted to military observation in land part.

service of a leader deceased or in lieu of a promise of furnishing military help

(d) Last of all there were the ordinary villages directly under the king's officials and some of which formed the king's demesne

In regard to the first and the third type of villages nothing need be said. The grantee or his family exercised jurisdiction therein, and as a rule the grant of a village was accompanied by the grant of other attendant privileges, e.g.,

- (a) Fiscal and revenue immunities, namely the non-payment of ordinary taxes to the king, the right to requisitions and the acquisition of everything by accession etc
- (b) Exemption from the entry of loyal officials—menials and soldiers (like Cāta, Bhata, Mālava and Kaināta) and from military requisitions
- (c) Endowment with lower criminal and civil jurisdiction

Such grants were made, as we know, for all times in the future, and in some inscriptions it is laid down that the gift was made for a period "as long the sun and the moon endure" Kings making such grants called upon their successors of the same family or of new dynasties not to violate their grants since the religious merit arising out of gift of land go to reigning princes, while the annulment of grants was associated with the worst sufferings in after life

Village Administration of Bengal —So far as Bengal is concerned very little information is furnished by the ins-

criptions of which only a few have come down to us The following inscriptions are important —

- (1) The Faridpore grants edited by Purgitar
- (2) The Amgachi grant of Vigrahapala (L I III)
- (3) The Glugrahati Copper Plate of Samacar idev i
- (4) Tippara Copper Plate grant of Lokanatha (E.I. XVIII)
- (5) The Damod trapore Copper Plate inscription (E.I. N. R. G. Basak)

From these we know that the village elders parted pated in village affairs. In the inscription of Samacara deva we find a grant of land after consultation with the village people at the instance of Damul a the judge. The locality was the village Navaby isika in Borakam indala fivadait; was the governor of the Mandala while under him was the officer Pavitraka. A Brahmin Supritif a syamin approached the judge for a piece of land and thereupon Damuka consulted the elders six of whom its mentioned by name.

From the Damodarapore Plates it appears that villages were within the jurisdiction of Visiv ipatis and had Gramikas or fleadmen appointed over them. In addition to these there were many other officials and many jeoph of position whose opinions were sought in . It important matters. Prominent among the ewere

- (a) Malmittar i
- (b) I ust ip d is
- (c) has other
- the Astronal dline crime

in aldition to high aird of it is a

# Villages in the Extreme South

In the extreme South and in the Tamil country generally the village was something more than a mere administrative unit. Here the village elders not only exercised administrative functions but also managed the economic resources of the locality. Under this system the village turned to become a self-sufficient, co-operative republic Many villages were cultivated by the men of the locality jointly The Cola records give us detailed accounts of such village governments and the working of the village Some of the South Indian Inscriptions give us details about the constitution of village assemblies, the qualifications for membership, the work entrusted to them and the grounds for exclusion from these bodies be out of place to describe here all these things in detail, and we refer our readers to the two works of Dr Krishnaswamy Iyengal, eg, "Ancient India and the Skeiches of Ancient Deccan

We find in some localities the existence of communal ownership of lands or the periodic distribution of lands among villagers. In this respect the custom of Karryad is worthy of our attention (Ind. Ant. III). According to one authority, the land in Tanjore district was divided into (a) Samudāyam or communally owned, (b) Pallabhogyam, (c) Ekabhogam or owned in perpetual ownership by individuals. Land of the second category was annually redistributed. In each block of villages, a headman was elected. In the Malabar District communal cultivation still subsists in some villages. The Maratha village under Sivaji and the Peshwas was self-supporting.

and had a large number of officials mentals and artisans for its internal administration as well as for the maintenance of social life

#### lown Government

The government of towns was entrusted to special administrators In the Arthasastra we find Nagarakas ruling cities or if the area was a big one a quarter of it They had multifarious duties to perform and these included the preservation of peace employment of spies the collection of tolls and royal dues the issue of passports chastisement of wrong doers, the maintenance of sanitary regulations the control fire and the collection of information regarding the number and incomes of the inhabitents In the cities of the ancient and median alperiod they had also to control the market announce the hours of the day by the sound of trumpets and had to close the gates after dusk thus combined magisterial pirisdictions with various other There were judges in all important eities and there were Adhikaranas or Adhisthan is for the adminis tration of justice. The Asola In criptions refer to the Nigaravivolialakas but we know very little about their functions. We have only a few references to the adminitrative machinary of towns in mediaval India and on this subject some light is thrown by the Sivodoni inscription and an in cription which decribs the government of Gopadri Gopidri was ruled (F.I. Vol. 1-20) under Blogs Pratitions by a council of the The promiter ment t of the board were the e-minimal interface Korta's Alto I the the commender of the irm anichh natt

other members Similar information is obtained in regard to the government of Vaisāli. In the Damodarapore Inscription we find towns governed by the Kumārāmātya, assisted by the Nagaraśresthī, the Prathamakulika, the Sārthavāha, and the Kāyastha, and by some other officials

But while these towns remained under the direct government of royal officials, there were other towns and cities of which the administration was entrusted to popular Municipalities and popular corporations took the place of the royal officials in these and we have ample evidences to prove their existence from Smrti works as well as from inscriptions The number of inscriptions is not very considerable, but they go to confirm the evidence supplied by the Smrtis From time immemorial there existed in India organisations and associations of the Pauras and Jānapadas in civic and rural areas In Nigamas or market towns such associations and guilds came into existence and various types of guilds devoted their attentions to commercial and industrial persuits. At one time these Srenis and Sanghas which had commerciopolitical objectives were dreaded by the kings bably after the downfall of the Mauryas, when the policy of centralisation came to be discarded more or less, corporate organisations came to establish themselves in important local areas In course of time the number of these multiplied Sometimes a guild or a corporate body strengthened its position by obtaining legal sanction from the king of the locality, and came to be vested with important civic privileges and functions In some other cases, a benevolent

prince convinced of the inability of royal oficials to minister to the complete well being of his subjects voluntarily granted a charter to a body of Brahmanus or influential merchants endowing them with a large number of important civic privileges.

Before we go on to discuss the evidence at our disposal we must point out the amount of importance attached to these co operative associations in later Smyti works as well as in the Nibandhas in the chapter known as Sami digatit rama. The Smyti works which devote more attention to this subject are those of Yajii valkya. Byhas pati katyayana and Narada. They make a clear distinction between the corporations established by the king which is described as Rajal plasami it. The other kind of corporation recognised by these writers was the Samuha I rlasami it. In the case of the Rajakyt isaniyat the initia tive came from the Ling or royal officials as would apia it from the following passages of Yajiiayalkaya and Brhas pati

समहत्त्व पुर स्थान वाद्रणायम्य तर् यु । भीरत्त्व प्रतिमा मृष्या राष्ट्रम्म पान्यशामीत् ॥ रत्तां स्थान्य स्थान्यमीत्रस्थाणः । भारत्वस्थान्य तर्वा प्रति प्रध्यार्थः ॥ प्रमाद्धिकात्रा प्रतिस्थान्यः । विस्ताद्धिक क्षां स्थान्यः ॥

The data's energly entrusted to them a remultifarees and included the protection of the groung ground and we resure require to length and place of pitto a ring feeling of the poor and helples entitles and even the control or responsible frages until each to a pitter.

see that the safety of the state might not be endangered According to the Viramitrodaya the lands and quarters entrusted to them were not liable to taxation, the corporation alone being empowered to assess taxes and to appropriate them In regard to the Samuhakitasamudāyas these were instituted by the people of a particular locality with the permission and sanction of the king into agreement amongst themselves. generally these were in writing. Members were morally and legally bound to follow the local regulations, and the functions exercised by them included, according to Brhaspati quoted by Viiamitrodaya (a) maintenance and repair of public halls, tanks, water-courses and gardens, (b) maintenance of temples, places of public gathering and religious worship, (c) feeding and maintenance of the poor and the destitute, (d) excavation and stoppage ot water-courses, and (e) probably also the making of arrangements for local protection in times of apprehended danger

From other passages it appears clearly that the executive business of controlling these corporations was entrusted to Kāryacıntakas who numbered generally from four to five. These corporations seemed to have been entrusted with the right of collecting taxes and had a common fund of their own, they could raise loans and there was a common liability to pay these off. The king generally had not the legal right to interfere in their affairs. But he could intervene if there were factions fighting among themselves or when there was a quarrel between the Kāryaycıntakas or Mukhyas and the ordinary members.

They enjoyed a number of immunities and had the right of exporting and importing goods without government sanction as well as the leveling of local duties to fill their own coffers

Unfortunately while these passages clearly indicate the existence of such corporate bodies, we have very little of inscriptional details until and unless we come to the most recent period of Hindu rule. The evidences moreover are obtainable mostly from Southern India especially from the Kaparese districts. One of the carliest references to such is in the Nasik Cave Inscription, and it expressly mentions that the endowment made therein was recistered in the Fown Hall (Nigamasabha 1 1 VIII pages 52 55) During the Gupta period we hear of a guild of weavers exercising authority in the Dasabura city and they not only excelled in the arts of peace but maintained local independence and kept a fighting force of their own \* While these are of interest to us as proving the existence of corporations we have a number of inscriptions from the South and more especially from the Kamare e districts where these bodies seem to have maintained a signousexistence for a long time. One important inscription this Laksmessura grant of the Yuvaraja Vil ramadity of the Variable Calulistics refers to a minimipal chamer armed to the Mahajands (Brihm nas) and the Californ Frikins The lange officers were to protect constitution if using early

The term is a close set of the first than the first term to the first term term to the first term term to the first term term to the first

local customs while the householders were to pay a fixed tax ın Vaıśakha Certain guilds were to pay specified sums Another inscription at Managauli of Vijjala mentions the Prabhu and Mahājanas of an Agrahāra, under the local official the Dandanāyaka The same (c and d) mentions the name of the Mahāprabhus of four The Nilgunda inscription (EI VI) records the assignment of a tax upon clarified butter for communal Similarly EI VI, 24 refers to the assignment of taxes to Mahājanas for communal purposes The Sudi Inscription describing the administration of the Kasukad Seventy refers to the grant of a charter to eight Sresthins and eighty householders The place suffered from the invasion of the Colas, and the charter had to be renewed According to the same inscription the people were freed from all imposts and paid a fixed land rent, and they were entrusted with certain judicial rights In another inscription, the Anavaj Stone Inscription, of Sārangadeva, we have an endowment for the worship of God Krsna and grants are made at the instance of (a) the Pañch, (b) the Purohitas or Brahmins, (c) the Mahājanas, Sādhus, goldsmiths, the Vānijyakas and the Nauvīthīkas or ship-The Gadag Inscription, (IA XV) refers to the thousand Mahājanas of the Laksmīgundi aiea headed by The Hull Plates (E I XVIII) refer to the the sheriff Mayor of Puli (U1-udaya) and the Puli thousand Parunayial Inscription (EI XVIII) refers to the four assemblies and the temple administration by the Yagam the corporation Two Inscriptions from Kolhapur (E I XIX) refer to a corporation of five-hundred of the

city of Aivavole. While these refer to municipal guilds and corporations we have a large number of inscriptions which refer to the assignment of taxes for communal purposes as well as the royal grant of charters to local people.

The subject is a vast one and of great interest and requires an extensive study by scholars. In the South guilds and temples often took over many important social duties but it will be out of place to go into the subject in detail. Those who are interested in the subject in referred to W. Hopkins. India Old and New as well as to Dr. R. k. Mool crices. Focal Government in India.

## REVENUE AND TAXATION

We pass on next to the important subject of taxation and revenue administration in India. The subject is a vist and complicated one and we are bound to proce diverse cantiously. India is a vast country and its different provinces had their local customs as well as different sources of aucome. In different localities immemorial custom had more or less fixed the dues to be paid to the societie. In course of time these were recent. I by the inthese of the Dharmasutias and Dharmasutias if the cuthors of the eworls tried to by down uniform rule in the rule to the taxes payable by subjects. That even then

they had to recognise the variation of important items in different localities, though they are not clear on this point

In course of time royal power grew and the king came to be vested with innumerable fiscal privileges. Gradually when the theorists of the Arthaśāstra school arose they did much to strengthen the hands of the king and added to the number of imposts levied by him. The empire of the Nandas and Mauryas extended over a large part of India, and after their downfall their exactions were continued, and their fiscal policies were more or less continued by their successors of other dynasties. In the South the local rulers had their own taxes and imposts, and in course of time the ideas of the North were borrowed and the taxes were multiplied.

The Vedic 1ge—In the earliest Vedic period the king was maintained by contributions from his subjects, and thus arose the Bali which is referred to in the Rgveda In addition to these, he had a share of the booty received in war, and gradually he became entitled to a share in villages, kine and some other items (Atharvaveda IV 22)

By the time of the early Jātakas and the Dhaimasūtias there was a great revolution in the fiscal policy of the Hindu monarchies. In the Jātakas we find the king not only enjoying a share of

- (a) the produce of fields which was realised by the king's officials, after it had been measured by the Dronamāpaka (See Kāma-jātaka and Kuru-dharma-jātaka)
- (b) Toll on merchandise
- (c) Excise duty on liquor (chātikāhāpana)

- (d) Judicial fines
- (e) Treasure troves
- (f) Property without heir—the rule was not very hard and fast and unrighteous kings even claimed to seize the property of Brahmanas and Purohitas as well as lost articles (Jataka Vol IV pp 348 485-480)
- (g) Occasional Taxes and dues like the thiramula or milk contribution paid to a king on the birth of his heir
- (h) Booty recoived in war
- (i) Contributions and payments made by lower class artisans and workmen

When we pass on to the Dharmasutras we find not only the theory that the king was entitled to a share of the productions of his subjects labour which was in hea of his protection, but also the main items of taxation clearly land down. According to the Dharmasutra, writers, the chief items of taxation were

- (a) V share of the produce of lands. The exact share is not laid down, but it varied from Ato I recording to Gautama. In the Michibberries it was A (sant) Ch LXVII Gau N 24).
- (b) I is on cattle and g ld C ish to love do not I now whether it was a tix proper or expiral less.
- (c) loll on merchands
- (d) Lix on ment honey element butter herb
- (c) lerry dues
- the linearities are let in least of a re-

- (a) Judicial fines
- (h) Properties of people dying without heir except in the case of Brāhmanas Exemptions were granted to those deriving their livelihood from rivers, forests and hills by Vasistha, though he is not supported by other writers

The Arthaśāstra—From the Dharmasūtras we pass on to the Arthaśāstra, and here we meet with a large number of taxes and imposts hitherto unknown Probably under the Saisunāgas and the Nandas great changes had been introduced, and kings of this period had not only enriched themselves by multiplying the old taxes and by raising their amount but also by establishing their ownership over forests, mountains, rivers as well as over the natural sources of wealth found within the no man's land existing between the small principalities conquered by them. The king became, by virtue of these annexations, the owner of mines, forests, and rivers as well as the master of the private domains belonging to the conquered dynasties Buddhist tradition as well as that recorded in the Puranas describes the Nandas as mordinately avaricious as well as enor-It was reserved for the writer of the mously rich Arthaśāstra to systematise these taxes and imposts which existed in Magadha at the time of the revolution which placed Candragupta on the Maurya throne We may now summarise the sources of income in the Arthasastra, and these were-

(a) Land-tax with occasional dues, as well as watertax. It varied in different localities and depended on the productivity of the soil. Brahmadeya the downfall of the Mauryas Northern India came under foreign domination namely that of the Greeks Sahas and Some of these Sakas advanced to Malwa and Central India where they carried on a litter struggle with the Andhras These latter remained the only important indigenous power and some of their inscriptions throw light upon the taxes levied by them. Under the Andhras we have several important inscriptions as well as their land grants which throw some light upon the taxes of the period. In some of these we have reference to the privileges conferred on favoured people (Inscription of Vasisthaputra Pulamavi and of queen Balasri) The most important privilege greated was that the land or village conferred should not be entered into by royal officers and they are not to be dug for salt (apavesa anomasa alonalchádalen etc.)

This clearly shows that like the Maurya government the Andhras claimed the right to dig for salt. Beyond this we have nothing in the Andhra inscriptions. But another inscription namely that of Usavadata at Karli (Karli no 10) extols the creation of free firries showing that the right of execting ferry dues belonged to kings in the clocalities. The Ksatrapa inscriptions are silent a 15-the items of taxation but Rudrad in in his well-known Iunia, ofh inscription speaks of his own benevolent rafamile city mentions the fact that he refund to exist he is vitaxes is well as benevolences (printing) while he did not in ist on the forced fiberity to if his subjects the only taxes referred to are fixed that he is fipte his which were the immembered fixed to the history for his subjects.

paid to the king, and the toll on articles of trade. In regard to the other Scythian dynasties and the Indo-Greeks we have absolutely no information

The Guptas, Vākātakas and the Valabhi princes—By the fourth century AD there was a resurrection of Hindu dynasties. In Hindustan the Guptas became the predominant power, while the Vākātakas established their authority over a large part of Central India and the Deccan. As usual, we have a lack of details about the revenue administration of this period, but inscriptions throw light on various items of royal exaction. From the Gupta inscriptions the chief items of revenue seem to have been—

- (a) Tributes paid by the feudatories
- (b) The land tax in cash of in kind (hiranya and meya) Probably the royal share of the produce was ascertained and realised by the Dhruvādhikaranika
- (c) Toll on articles of commerce, realised by the Saulkikas
- (d) Forest dues and incomes from forests realised by forest officers, Gaulmikas and other officials

In addition there were the taradeya or the ferry dues, the judicial fines, treasure-troves, lost articles, property of those dying without here. The Uparikara is mentioned but its exact meaning is yet to be ascertained

The Khoh Plates belonging to the Pariviājakas iepeatedly mention the *udranga* and the *Uparikara* In village grants to Biāhmanas or to temples we repeatedly hear that these are granted (sodranga-soparikara acāta-

bhafa pravesya or Samucita bhaga bhoga kara hiranya (See Gupta Inscriptions nos XXI, XXII XXIII AZV XZVIII ZXIZ ZŽI)

These minor taxes,-udranga and uparikara are met with in the record of the Valabhi princes, in addition to bhoga and bhaga, hiranya visti (forced labour) etc und bhútavátapratyava (See Gupta Inscriptions \\\VIII XXIX Indian Intiquary Vol VII) The meaning of udranga and uparikara is not clear (See Ghosal Hindu Revenue Administration p 209)

The Sarabhapura grants show that kings claimed the right to appropriate hidden treasures and their inscriptions expression sanithi sopanithi acafa bhafa contain the pracesya sareal aravicarjita (Gupta Inscriptions XXXX XXXX) The Vakajaka charters while elent upon the main heads of taxation clearly speak of a large number of fiscal rights and privileges which were claimed by the king (Gupta Inscriptions Channak Copper Plate) rights claimed by the king were -

- (a) The ordinary tax (kara)
- (b) supply of cows and bulls
- (c) Hower and milk pasturage hide and chance if
- (d) Extraction of moist salt
- (c) Loreed Libour
- (f) Hidden treasures and deposits
- (9) Minor items (dept cand up delpt i)

The Rajim copper plate of Invitalesa of Konsts clearly refers to the royal right to hold a treasure and The meaning of data mentions a tax daradronaka drived it is dull all to understand. According to Lee, it

meant an agricultural cess or a marriage tax (Gupta Inscription pp 299)

Taxation under the Pālas—'The Pāla inscriptions, though numerous, help us but little in finding out the chief items of taxation Incidentally, they refer to the rights and privileges conferred upon grantees of land In some cases we meet with technical terms, but they are very difficult to explain The main items are kara, pindakara (EI IV), bhāgabhogakara and hiranya (IA XV) some inscriptions we have reference to chauroddhrana, which was clearly a tax for the police force engaged in catching thieves The Manhali Inscription refers to ratnatraya-rāja-sambhoga which has not been explained properly One inscription of Dhaimapala makes a grant of a village with tala- $p\bar{a}taka$  and  $hattik\bar{a}$  while a grant of Devapāla clearly confers the land with fish, herb, trees, āmra, madhuka in addition to cauroddharana and upari-The Bhagalpur plate of Nārāyanapāla makes the same grant and adds samasta-bhāga-bhoga-kara-hiranyādipratyaya-sametah

In regard to the above items, some of these are very old and it seems that the Pāla kings claimed the right to tax all kinds of produce Ratnatrayarāja-sambhoga has not been properly explained. So is tala-pātaka Hattikā may mean the royal dues from the market

There are other inscriptions from Bengal and Assam, but they do not throw much light upon the items of taxation

There are inscriptions of North-Indian dynasties, namely the Gurjara-pratihāras, the Candellas, the Cedis and the Gāhadavālas, but very little of details is obtainable

throws light on customs duties regulated by order of the king (See Motupelli pillar Ins E.I XII no 22)

It mentions that previous to Ganapati's time all articles on a vessel wrecked on the coast were taken but Ganapati relaxed the rule. He fixed a new rate of duty on imports and exports. The articles of trade specially mentioned are camphor pearls sandal rise water ivory civet copper zinc lead silk coral pepper and areca nut. The rates of duty are

On one tola of Sancal l Pagoda 1/1 Linam Camphor and Pearl € J fanam W I I Lagoda evalue of to ewater tvory camphor oil copper zinclead. It On on lac of area nut 11 Lanam thread cond 1 fanam of fananajar tale On Silk I Page a S. L. Lauren On one lacofores cout Other State much have uch chedules of luty but all information i, i

Exemption from Taration—Certain classes of people sound to have been exempted from tixes and we rave directions to that effect in the Surfus from the day of Apastamba and Vasistia—The Brahmana especially the Stotiana was never taxed—Brahmana especially the Stotiana was never taxed—Brahmana evaluate wore for from taxino. The king was probably free from taxino. In addition to these the Vedic student, the help less the mendicant the infant women of all electric than 1 the day of the from taxinotic day of the day of the free from taxinotic day.

form due were not to a from such professor it is according to Vivi the monocuring I within a Scrippine

as well as those living by alms were exempt. Articles intended for sacrifice were free from duty. According to the Arthaśāstra articles-required for marriage etc. were not to be taxed, and according to Āpasthamba Śūdras who washed the feet of other classes were free. As regards the immunity of the Brāhmanas there is considerable difference of opinion. According to Vasistha the Brāhmana community was to be exempted, but in the Mahābhārata Bhīsma enjoins upon kings to exact taxes and dues from Brāhmanas living by trade or by other means of livelihood not recommended to members of their caste.

# $Expenditure-Budget \leftarrow official savings and loans$

Very little is known about the main items of expenditure during the earliest period. But from time immemorial kings made it a point not to spend the whole revenue on their own selves, but made arrangements for feeding the poor, building alms houses, keeping a stock of grains for emergency purposes, in addition to spending money for the royal family, and for paying officials and for maintaining the army. In the Arthaśāstia the chief items of expenditure though not specifically laid down were on the following—

- (a) The Royal family, the haiem and the kitchen
- (b) Religious service, including the cost of performing sacrifices and payment to priests
- (c) The Army and the civil service
- (d) The almoury, workshops, storehouses, cattle farms, royal horses and elephants

throus the Jung (e) Pensions to the learned and to the teachers of different iris inderafts

on a vesse relaxed the

It me (f) Maintenance of the poor aged and infirm pen sions to the children of officials or soldiers dying in the service of the king

and exports Works of public withty as well as emergency camphor camphor problem of public and relief of distress familie lead sill penditures minely relief of distress familie duty are

On one tola of imes expenditure depended on the royal will Campho'us stems seem to have absorved varying 1 Pagoda s value to revenue Nothing is known about the amphor oil culiture or the proportion of these various On one las of areas depended on the will of the king as we ory of Kashmir Towards the close of thread corol On Silk Sukraniti gives us the proportions On one lacoforer on m this we find that the army was to Otter State not those more than the state of the stat t afts—1/12 principal office

| Strengtion from Tax | groval tersors
| growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | growth tersors | gro lot

semption from Tar served t crown to have exerted directions to that effect in 5 there seems to have exerted directions to that effect in 5 there some Apistamba and Vasistha To dlected by the Samaharts stative was never tixed. Br sorthere are rellihands from taxation. The king was 13d even in the July is tion. In eldition to they the Ven\_ of the Bhands, to a the mendicular the infant wom negativarily for query the defeal the domb were all a recommend will the

I revolues year at the frem his Ayes or the curling to Ver his new cremal

1rmy 309

Liminent kings of Mediaval India seem to have made is a point to hoard money in their treasuries. In times of war and emergencies they imposed extraordinary taxes or tenevolences. Sometimes hard pressed, they either raised loans on their own security or depreciated the currency

#### ARMY

In those times of continuous waifare the army was of vital importance to the state, and if was the primary object of attention on the part of the Hindu kings (See Isan p. 340)

As in the previous periods the Hindu army was composed of several divisions, namely

- (1) The active aimy or the hereditary force (Maula)
- (2) Mercenary (Bhrtakas)
- (3) Or Guilds and Corporations (Stenibala)
- (4) Contingents of feudatories (Sāmantabala)
- (5) Contingents of allies (Mitrabela)
- (6) Contingents of aboriginal auxiliaries or the Atuvikus

Composed of these various elements, the Hindu army was organised on traditional lines. Each king maintained a large number of war elephants, cavalry and infantry, the use of chariots having fallen into disuse. War elephants remained the favourite of Hindu kings to the very last days, and we all know how much they contributed to the defeat

of Hindu armies at the hands of the early Turk invades like Mahmud. The Indian Mussalmans also borrowed the custom from the conquered and on more than one occasion the elephant contributed to the defeat of Mussalman armies. Many "these animals were well protected with aimours and ed in destroying the walls and battlements."

\*\*Advisorated\*\*

\*\*Tas he is you accounter.\*

I as he ive accounted a fought on their especially those of as a distinguish importance its to a great woman was a Gaja

not remined distinguished four forward four fither war fither Yadaya for Russ

Merite M

and **well** as Last of all came the Infantry which, in most cases formed the backbone of the army. They occupied a lower position in the army, though they were generally the most numerous.

Maintenance - As a rule the majority of soldiers were mercenaries who fought for wages. But in addition there were contingents which were supplied by fief-holders or feudatories who held lands on condition of military service. Successful officers or valuant soldiers were often rewarded by grants of land, as also the children of those dying in war

The practice of granting land to soldiers was very old, and probably the state exacted taxes and supplies from the subjects. On this early as well as later information is rather meagre, though even in the days of Arthaśāstia Kautilya speaks of Āyudhīyaka villages as well as the Senābhakta as an impost. Very little details are forth-coming, and in the inscriptions we have little evidence. During march or movements armies had the right of exacting supplies from localities, and this practice was in greater force in the South. Probably the soldiers had the right of commandeering bulls and 'draught animals as well as of exacting forage (Cf. ins. of the Vākātakas and the Pallavas).

Special Corps—There were special corps attached to all armies. The personal guards of the king held a higher position, and in the South, especially in the time of Nolam bas and the Hoysālas, there arose the practice of enlisting special life-guards, the Garudas. These Garudas were ever ready to sacrifice their lives and the position of a Garuda was so henourable that royal princes made themselves

of Hindu armies at the hands of the early Turk invide-s like Withmud The Indian Mussalmans also borrowed the custom from the conquered and on more than one occusion the elephant contributed to the defeat of Mussalman armies. Many of these animals were well protected with irmours and were employed in destroying the walls and battlements of invested forts and entrepelments. They also carried bags and baggages as well as heavy account ments of war nd kings and high officials fought on their back. Many of the Indian monarchs especially those of the Last took the title of Gajapati as a distinguish ing epithet. The elephant being of such importance its loss or 2 nn by an enemy was regarded as a great a chievement In almost all the mediaval Hindu States special crite was taken to maintain elephants with a high official (Gaja dhyaksa) taking care of them

Caralry. The cavitry was of great importance and contributed to the swift movement of armies as well as raiding expeditions. Cavalry warfare was however not very popular in regions like Bengal intersected by imminerable rivers where horses naturally deteriorated Most kings of North India and some in the South distinguished them clyes by lugge earlier overly force. The Fratheirs large of Krimanj maintained huge earlier force and four of the earth 700 000 strong were constantly ready for war according to Mas diman historians like Solamo in . Other immies like those of the Gujarat Candial visier than disaprate and continues the those of the Gujarat Candial visier than disaprate and known to have the residual force and Koorig p. 171) some of the Yoda as aveiry were a so plate.

Last of all came the Infantry which, in most cases formed the backbone of the army. They occupied a lower position in the army, though they were generally the most numerous.

Maintenance—As a rule the majority of soldiers were mercenaries who fought tor wages—But in addition there were contingents which were supplied by fief-holders or feudatories who held lands on condition of military service successful officers or valiant soldiers were often rewarded by grants of land, as also the children of those dying in war

The practice of granting land to seldiers was very old, and probably the state exacted taxes and supplies from the subjects. On this early as well as later information is rather meagic, though even in the days of Arthaśāstia Kautilya speaks of Tyudhīyaka villages as well as the Senabhakta as an impost. Very little details are forthcoming, and in the inscriptions we have little evidence. During march or movements armies had the right of exacting supplies from localities, and this practice was in greater force in the South. Probably the soldiers had the right of commandeering bulls and draught animals as well as of exacting forage (Cf. ins. of the Vākātakas and the Pallavas).

Special Corps—There were special corps attached to all armies. The personal guards of the king held a higher position, and in the South, especially in the time of Nolam bas and the Hoysālas, there arose the practice of enlisting special life-guards, the Garudas—These Garudas were ever ready to sacrifice their lives and the position of a Garuda was so henourable that royal princes made themselves

11.4

m in the interpretation of the control of the contr

In 7 1.17 116 91/11 z longues maling it will the trace minutu Transfer Title water equest of the term of the colors the dime of Dame Take as returned in on their right and \ indfri Tim i options re - . . mida w and rularly there we perations an illield acording to 1 m and a rapor = control lances and 14 a it to and the ir i et ir Jahabh u / ays of

httes for and some new weapons seem to have been used. One inscription refers to the use of asum by the Yādavas (Rice p. 171), and Rice takes it to mean some sort of fire-arms. The Sukranīti mentions  $n\bar{a}likas$  and gives us the description of fire-arms, but its date is disputed

Wars were of constant occurrence as is too well known to students of Indian History Not to speak of sporadic conquests like that of Samudragupta, Harsa, or Yaśodharinnumerable struggles of long duraman, there were tion sometimes against hereditary enemies and sometimes against foreign invaders Thus in North India a long war had to be waged by the Guptas against the Ksatrapas war against the Hūnas was long and bloody and had to be continued by the Guptas, the Maukharis and the Vardhanas Later there were triangular contests for of Thanesvara supremacy in North India in which the Pratihāias, the Pālas and the Rāstrakūtas participated The fall of the Pratihāras, who had also checked the Mussalmans, was succeeded by constant wars among the states that grew up

In the South perpetual war was waged by the Pallavas and their successors, the Colas, against the minor states of the Tamil country, while throughout the long history of the Deccan, the Cālukyas, the Rāstrakūtas and the Cālukyas of Kalyan had to wage incessant war against the dominant power in Tamil India, namely, the Pallavas and their successors, the Colas The Eastern Cālukyas too fought against the Rāstrakūtas, and one continuous 12 years' war is recorded (by Narendra Mrgarāja 799-843, also Vijayādītya vs the Gangas and the Rāstrakūtas)

In course of these huge armies had to be raised, and we

Garadas to their sovereign. They protected the royal person and fought for his honour and there are instances of such people dying or committing suicide on the death of their master. (See Rice. Mysore & Koerg. p. 171). They were chosen for desperate enterprises and they received the right or honour of getting betel from their masters on important occasions.

On their master's death they put an end to their lives and when they fell their families were granted rent free lands which were called Kainad or Kodagi Ral ta Kodagi or Vettaral odagi

Special increenary corps were often employed and foreigners excelling in peculiar modes of fighting were maintained. Kirnața or Huma soldiers were famel as increenaries and in Sind an Arib corps was maintained at the time of Dahir. This crops refused to fight the Mussal mans on their approach to Sind. Auxiliary corps wer maint fined for facilities of transport and supply. Some of the inscriptions refer to an ollierr in Fastern Hadia kinson is Gamagamila, and probably he was in charge of transport. Similarly there were officers in charge of extipults and seige eperations and they were styled Inadioa tha ultimitar, we ording to some authorities.

trustened usapons. The irms and weap to generally consisted of lances and pix has is well as the synol them are the low and the arrow. The chapter of the samily irvan of the Mahabharata are in the characteristic point and the vive of highting of the Indian payloof the last contrasting.

for from formed the characters the Hostory male

some new weapons seem to have been used. One inscription refers to the use of asaar by the Yādavas (Rice p. 171), and Rice takes it to mean some sort of fire-arms. The sukramin mentions nations and gives us the description of fire-arms, but its date is disputed.

Wars were of constant occurrence as is too well known to students of Indian History. Not to speak of sporadic conquests like that of Samuch agupta, Harsa, or Yaśodharman, there were innumerable struggles of long duration sometimes against hereditary enemies and sometimes against foreign invaders. Thus in North India a long war had to be waged by the Guptas against the Ksatrapas. The war against the Hūnas was long and bloody and had to be continued by the Guptas, the Maukharis and the Vardhanas of Thanesvara. Later there were triangular contests for supremacy in North India in which the Pratihāras, the Palas and the Rastrakūtas participated. The fall of the Pratihāras, who had also checked the Mussalmans, was succeeded by constant wars among the states that grew up

In the South perpetual war was waged by the Pallavas and their successors, the Colas, against the minor states of the Tamil country, while throughout the long history of the Deccan, the Cālukyas, the Rāstrakūtas and the Cālukyas of Kalyan had to wage incessant war against the dominant power in Tamil India, namely, the Pallavas and their successors, the Colas The Eastern Cālukyas too fought against the Rāstrakūtas, and one continuous 12 years' war is recorded (by Narendra Mrgarāja 799-843, also Vijayādītya vs. the Gangas and the Rāstrakūtas)

In course of these huge armies had to be raised, and we

have references to their size. In the North Harsa's army numbered 20,000 elephents and 100,000 horses and nearly the same number of foot. The Pratihara cavalry, according to the Mussulmans, numbered more than two millions, while according to them the Hindu contingent sent against Mahmud was of a huge number In the South the same was the state of affairs. One Palliva inscription speaks of Vikramādītva's army several hundred thousands strong while according to the Soratur records the Cola i rmy was nearly 9 lacs in strength. The army of the Yadavas which was destroyed by their enemies comprised 200 000 infantry and 12 000 cavalry (DKD 504) In course of these open fightings like the battles of Koppain, Soratur and Kudal Sangaman took place, vast tracts were devastated and un told sufferings were caused. Long sieges were undertaken and fortresses were reduced (Cf capture of Rev att island and the stege of Kanci -DKD 362) For the proper defence of the country important frontier towns as well as capital cities were well guarded fortified and garri oned. The his tors of the South is full of records describing sieges of forti hed cities like Kañei or Revatidvip i

One inscription describes the battlements of Kañol while a Pallava record describes a siege of 12 year. While Hoysala Visnuvardhana describes his capture of three kinds of forts (DKD 400).

In the North fortree is like Gopadri were garn oned, and we have a Calcumana record discribing the Mussel in in attack on Hensi (LA 1912 Han i Calcimana resort of Pythyraja)

Very little is I nown about the frontier feets and fee

fortified towns, but it is possible that the commander of forces exercised control in the city as in the case of Gopādri

Army Command – The army was more often commanded by kings or roval princes when these were men of exceptional military ability. Many of the Gupta kings like Samudragupta, Candragupta II, or Skandagupta commanded in person. That was also the case with Pāla ruleis like Dharma, Deva, or Rāmapāla. Sena kings like Laksmanasena did the same, at least in youth. Most of the Rāstrakūta, Cālukya, Pallava and Cola kings did the same. In the absence of the king, valiant royal princes or trusted feudatories led armies, and prominent among such fighting princes we may mention Vikrama I Cālukya, Vikrama VI, and Skandagupta while they were heirsapparent. Of feudatories leading armies we have also many examples.

## DIPLOMACY AND INTER-STATE DEALINGS

From time immemorial, the rulers of Indian states carried on fighting amongst themselves for supremacy, the idea of a universal empire floating before their eyes. Under the Mauryas alone this ideal was to some extent realised but as soon they declined in power, the old unstable equilibrium came to characterise Indian Politics.

In the midst of these wars and conflicts, states had to maintain their relations with neighbours. Generally the relations between two neighbouring states were those of hostility, and this natural hostility between two contiguous states were the basic principle on which the politics of the Mandala was based. A state had a natural enemy in its configuous state while the state existing on the frontiers of the latter was an enemy of the same and hence a friend of the first one. One this principle there arose the Mandala which comprised a string of states alternately immical and friendly to the primary state. Then came the Madhyama king on whose attitude much depended. Last of all was the I dasing state which by its interferance could materially influence the political conditions of the Mandala.

Kings had to maintain their existence by means of alliances and by maintaining a strong military force one state became more powerful ats king made up his mind to conquer the rest and there arose a perpetually unstable political equilibrium. Once war broke out states had either to join one side or declare their neutrality or to maintain in attitude of dubiousness. This give rise to the sixfold policy or Sadquaya comprising Sindle (peace) Ligraha (war) Lana (much for war) Isana (or neutral mactivity) Trear thibbara (a dubious attitude) or Samsraya (adoption of the protection of the rising power). By the e me ans dynastics pre-cryed them elves from rum but when rulers named strength they wanted to enforce their sna run outhority ever their neighbour. The writers on the act of Covernment extol the virtues of conquest and have langs he choice of war and peace after a con iderate it of political estimate tice. Were in leverque toward highly lauled in links and the result was a proposal a new t This war continued throughout the what trest of treats the chief Hirlin it fer

weakened each one of the military monarchies which fell easy preys to Mussalman attacks.

In the days of the Arthasastia, diplomatic relations were meintained by kings with their neighbours by means of various types of agents These included the Dūta (ambassador), the Parimilartha (diplomatic agent) and the Candragupta, Bindusāra and Asoka sent Nisrstärtha embassies to foreign kings, and under the last permanent ambassadors seem to have been employed But later on peaceful relations between states hardly existed and the Data under cover of his immunities became a sort of spy as would appear from his qualifications laid down in the Smrtis and the works on polity Political espionage also became a laudable act and kings scrupled not to weaken then friends or enemies by inciting enemies against them or undermining the loyalty of their subjects and officials Active agents sometimes anticipated the hostile acts of an mvading army as we know from the Arthasastia and other later works Hence in the eyes of later writers, the employment of spies against neighbouring princes was an act of necessity and diplomacy was the ait of deceiving friends and foes alike (parātisandhāna)

War was lauded as the primary occupation of kings and the writers on the ait of government call upon kings to be ever ready for it. In each book chapters are devoted to the necessity of fortifications and military organisation Kings were to remain ever on the alert. Pacific disposition meant death and ruin to kings. Activity and preparedness was the only way to self-preservation and success.

In times of hostility, the laws of war remained hum me The use of certain kinds of weapons was forbidden unneces sary slaughter was denounced while the grant of quarter to the vanguished or to women, children or non combatants was extelled. We find rules and canons laid down on these topics in almost all works on polity and government from the days of the Mahabharata (Santi Ch 96 100 also Manu Samhita Ch VII 90 94) But inspite of all these countries and peoples suffered during wars and invasions Conquerors and invading army commanders were em powered to ravage territories destroy harvests cut off water supplies or to set fire to fortifications (See Manu Saiphità VII 195 201) The goods and chattels of the conquered fell into the hands of the invaders and were distributed as booty among the conquerors. Thus the principles of Pobla e gaya and tsura vijaya predominated and untold miseries beleft the inhabitants of vast tracts

We have innumerable instances of such defractive were from inscriptions and traditional records. The horrors of the Kalinga war are de cribed in Asoka's XIIIth rock edict. The Guphas rooted out rival dynastics in Hindustan with vengenice and in still later periods wars became more destructive and runnous to provinces and states. Rival armies destroyed the capital edics of sugar aid in such manner the great capital edics of India like V dapa. Madura Kalvana Anhalwara that cor the great caty of Kanana infered terribly. The hrutalines of the Colos to the computered are defined in their win a structure while the sora tur for approved early a fee for their colos what the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the computered are defined in their win a structure of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a treat of a part of the Colos to the sora tur for approved early a fee for a feet and a feet and a feet and a feet and a feet a feet a feet and a feet a feet a feet a feet a feet and a feet a feet

women were slaughtered, women were violated and the country harrowed with fire and sword

Under such encumstances, war was the normal relationship between states. To preserve peace, kings often strengthened themselves by matrimonial alliances. The policy of matrimonial alliance was the foundation of the rising power of the Guptas as well as of the Vākātakas. The Cuptas strengthened their monarchy by establishing marital relations with the Nāgas and Vākātakas. Similar was the policy of the Cālukyas of Kalyan, the Cedis and various other dynasties

## JUSTICE AND JUDICIARY IN THE HINDU STATES

Though the age preceding the Turki conquest of India saw the decay of popular influence over the constitutional machinery it was characterised by a development of the Hindu judiciary as well as of Hindu law

In the domain of judicial administration the ever-growing authority of the king did not succeed in killing the minor jurisdictions possessed by villages, clans or corporations of various descriptions and almost all the lawgivers and authors of the *Nibandhas* enumerate the various classes of law-courts, namely —

- (1) The courts of clans and families
- (2) The courts of village-elders
- (3) The courts of guilds
- (4) The courts of municipalities, or commercial organisations or corporations

different schools of inheritence and division of property and the Nibandhas and commentaries mark the transition to the growth of different schools which came to have formal recognition about the time of the advent of the British

In criminal law the old ideas and principles remained in vogue. No one was punished without clear evidence of his guilt. In the absence of eve witnesses circumstantial evidence was taken into consideration though there were chances of grave miscarriage of justice as we know from the Mycchakatika. Punishment varied not only according to the gravity of the offence but with the social status of the accused and the injured. Judicial torture remained on the statute books though the author of the Artha-astra advocated caution in its application. If we are to believe in foreign accounts it was hardly resorted to during later periods.

The old barbaric punishments like death with various kinds of forture riz by burning drowning or mutilation of limbs remained in the legal books but the influence of pacific teachings as well as of the doctrine of Ahins relied to the disu e of many of these cruel punishments. Thus according to I a Hian cipit d punishment was hardly influed and Hinen Tsung sixs that for reported rety of treason mutilation was the punishment. The evidence of the cirk Muslim writers and travellers also governor the same thing.

In all higher courts, and sorts (Salhy to) were allowed to have a place by the side of the judge. This did to support the point not not been just to that further d

as legal experts and did much to stand in the way of miscarriage of justice

The Adjective law was highly developed, and definite rules of procedure were recognised. Any one complaining of injury had to file a detailed plaint showing the nature of his rights and the infringment thereof and had to turnish details as to the commission of injury and description of the person accused. After a formal examination of the plaint, it was admitted and the other party was summoned. In matters of urgency, or in cases of violence, the accused was summoned by warrant and the writ of Asedha was issued against him, or he was summarily put under arrest or legal restraint. Evidence was then taken as to the facts and the nature of the dispute

Evidences were of various classes, namely—Those furnished by (1) written documents, or in their absence, (2) the proof of title arising out of prescription (documents were either attested by royal officials or by private witnesses (3) The oral testimony of persons of good repute Men closely related to the parties of bad repute were excluded from giving evidence

In the absence of human witnesses, ordeals (Divyas) had to be resorted to These though absent in older books find a place in Yājñavalkya Smrti and other later works. The five older ordeals were —

- (1) ordeal of the balance
- (2) , by fire
- (3) ,, by water
- (4) ,, by poison
- (5) ,, water dedicated to gods (kosa)

Later books add to the number of orderls Kātvāvana mentions the balance fire water poison, water dedicated to gods (koṣa) Ghaja and cath on the head of children and in Nārada we have also a large number of ordeals

In ordinary cases except in hemous offences, like murder rape or arson the accused had the right of appointing a lawyer or a friend (Pratinidhi) to represent him. The parties were subjected to cross examination and the answers were written down (as in the Mycchakatika). The Sresthin and Kavastha attended the court one to write down the evidence and the other to examine the value of disputed articles. Cross examination was entrusted to the judge and that was often a sounder principle.

After the evidence had been gone through executive the assessors gave out their opinion, the judge pronounced the verdict and the toval officers executed the sentence. In civil matters, the decision of the judge was embodied in the decree and it was a record of great value. Royal courts as well as the courts of corporation were courts of record and a royal decree in a suit put an end to dispute.

Appeals—The find appeal lay before the king wherever the found in head of justice and had the power of commuting sentences or granting a reprieve. Many kings probe themselves upon their important justice and we have instances in later he tory. But there were grave may carriages of justice when the king were if will be greater and or yields they

### POLICE ADMINISTRATION

For the police administration of the country Hindu Kings took vigorous measures. The Arthaśāstra gives us the following details—(1) First of all, the frontiers were well guarded. There were fortifications in the frontier districts and officials called Antapālas guarded the frontiers, examined imported articles, took away the weapons of foreign immigrants or traders and watched new arrivals

- (2) Secondly, the rivers, riparian districts and coastal regions were under naval officials, who not only chased pirates, but took the ferries under control, since ferry-dues also went to the King They also did much to save the people in times of foreign invasion or floods. They also apprehended suspects as well as those taking monastic vows improperly
- (3) Thirdly, the country was divided into districts under Dandanāyakas or Dandapālas, while in cities the Paura or city officer had his guards. He had multifarious duties. (See Kautilya chapter on the Nāgaraka)
- (4) In villages or rural areas, local people acting as assessors under the Headman or the Pañca were entrusted with police duties and they were as before responsible for the peace and security of the rural areas. They were also hable to make good the losses inflicted on people, caused through their negligence. They were also empowered to expel habitual criminals, adulterers or thieves
- (5) In important strategic points Gulmas were established At night the guards watched the streets and movements were torbidden except on urgent reasons and

that with permission For free movements sometimes pass ports were issued

In the unsettled areas between villages the Vivita dhyakşa and his men preserved the peace. The Artha sastra gives us details about the work of the Vivita dhyaksa. He was assisted by a number of menials and guards and employed dogs trained to track criminals. On the approach of burglars or bands of criminals news was sent to the people or the head quarters by means of carrier pigeons

(0) Large numbers of spies were employed to watch over suspects. Hotels the resorts of the routh or those addicted to women pleasure loving men without means of Inchhood or vagabonds were watched thics in the earb of mendicants astrologors too asavers traders or men in districts apprehended culprits in the act of committing The causes of suicide or sudden death wen enquired into and post-mortems were held duties were entrusted to officers of the Kanfal asodhana department

Minor criminal magistrates for special purpo es il + exist d namely. Dasaparadhikas in charge of to miner offences or D isaparadhikas in charge of offending alayers). And Cauroddh trantkas (for apprehending thieves) A tax for helping the apprehension of threes (Caurodd'emmet ij

was also lexical

Local responsibility was a feature of Hunder place administration. All other ils were hable for his a suffe of by people within their jurisdiction, and this respectibility or paying reparation ultimately lay on the king and all its

By this means, the efficiency of the local police was maintained. This system survived during the middle ages and subsists in many places even now.

When fiels were granted or villages were made over to Brāhmanas as Brahmadeyas or to corporations, they were often vested with the charge of the police of these localities. They were also vested with minor criminal jurisdiction.

For police work large numbers of guards, and soldiers were employed. There was no distinction between the military and the civil police. Khaśas, Candālas, Cātas, Bhatas in addition to mercenary adventurers from Mālava or Karnāta were largely employed in rural areas. Village elders or headmen as well as their subordinates were mostly paid and maintained by local contributions.

#### HISTORY OF THE KINGDOM OF KASHMIR

A number of difficulties stand in the way of our forming a true and exact idea of the political and constitutional life in India on the eve of the Mussalman conquest. Flist of all, there is a lack of recorded history, in the true sense of the word and an absence of details relating to the administrative institutions. Inscriptions are sometimes available but these are not only of doubtful value but very often they represent the pompous declarations of artocratic rulers who magnify their own greatness at the cost of real history. Last of all, we cannot rely on legal treatises or books on the art of government since in these, we find a high tide of idealism with regard to political life. Under such circumstances a historian and more especially one endowed with a love for his own country is very apt to delineate a picture of good government in India in spite of the fact that so far as public life was concerned the

people had lost all interest in it, all real checks on irrespensible regal power had disappeared and the good and evil of subjects depended upon the good and evil qualities of their ruler. What was true of the rest of the world was true in this country and India was not an exception to the general rule.

With a view to offer an account of real political life, we present an analy is of the political history of Kashmir, the only province of India of which a detailed and realitic account is preserved for us by the powerful pen of a writer like Kulhana. That great poet and historian not entirely free from personal bit or the pseuliar belief and appositions of his ago preserves for us an account which is not only illuminating and realitie but also give us an in ight into the life of a people left to the care of irre pon ible despots.

Ka hinir was a province of India, almost isolated from the react of the country and inhabited originally by a section of the Arvan people it ough in cour of time inningrants from beyond. In his materially altered, the character of the population. The king was, in theory all 1 a rituland in halliana siday, the idea had gained ground that the king was the father of the people and he was regarded a a part of the God Sida. The country is a clathering his many view study of fature and after

a long rule by native numerile it pained to fireign rul rivarial Hu ka. Ju ka and Kam ka. and later the Huga Mihiragula wl. 🛥 herrible racid of cruelty and inhumancts romain a year urpace! ly tyrint foth repunter table lel bu elf in ha mir Next the cuntry came in fer dana to off align and h the of the Karkin Cipals and the Islans I test M. C. (3) frince were fruit cally ser f to ilde and their tyrairs was a t the limitation famaria lighter to the termination of the taly mad the man tile ; the east fault with the resolute it the legal of the liberate of the thould a tarbuithe was of the house and and at the that the lite is the exercise for a terminal afet i lite me to the title the rations . 11 - 4 - 1 sely It 1

tiek to rule the country and had recourse to all measures of highhandedness to put an end to their encines. Some kings, no doubt, strove to look into the interests of the people but a good many proved tyrannical and highhanded. Goaded by tyranny, the people were alrenated and the obnoxious rulers were sometimes driven out and, as we find very often, put to death. Their disappearance brought anarchy in the country and the elders sometimes elected, their rulers. We have repeated instances of such elections to the regal office and of elected or selected langs may be cited the nances of Arvaraja (R.T. H. 116), Meghayahana, Matrgupta (at the instance of Vikramaditya) and Durlabhayardhana, the son-in-law of Baladitya (R.T. H. 528). Then after the extinction of the line of Lalitapida (Karkora) ministers made Avantiyarman king

Then after tyranucal rule of Sankaravarman having ended by his assistnation, the country passed under Queen Sugandha acting as regent on behalf of her son Gopālavarman, aided by the Tantrins and the Ekangas. On the murder of Sugandha, the Tantrin became the real ruler in the kingdom and set up tour kings of whom, one Cikiavarman so disgusted his people by his degraded life and tyranny that he had to lo e his life at the hands of his exasperated subjects. A human monster, Unmattavanti was then set up on the throne, only to make his name  $()_{11}$ execuated by his tortures and enormities the extinction of the put Yasaskara on Brāhmanas the throne Utpalas, the Singiamadeva became king, and sometime after his death, the country was ruled by the able yet heartless Queen Didda who not only acted as regent for her sons but ultimately ascended the throne as queen regnant Another Queen Śrīlekhā dominated for some time, and after a time Kashmir came to be ruled by tyrants like Harsa (A D 1089-1101) After the sad end which he merited, the Brahmins again put Uccala on the throne, and after him the country suffered from the rising of Dāmaras (A D 1112-1120), while Turki and Mussalman adventurers tound a place in the country Such strifes continued for a long tame Warn of succession came to be waged and at length a stranger, a low caste Hindu ascended the throne His son Hyder was reared up by a Mussal-Islam became a force in the country and the last prince of the royal family who has succeeded in getting back his throne died

Mussalman Shah Mir made himself the real ruler of the country. He forced the queen of the Hindu ruler Kota Devi, to marry him, but that royal princess put an end to a life of degradation by stabbing herself to death on the night of her marriage.

Kushimir came under Mu salman influence and then the faith of the Prophet gradually gained ground. With all the exicts itudes however it is remarkable that the country pre-creed its nominal independence even when Hindustan had been overrun by the Turks, owing to its natural isolation. This independence continued for a long time and was only ended when the Musialman minister of the last king deposed his master and founded an independent kingdom for hims If (1410).

The above account sees to show the evil+which are the natural consequences of a personal government and makes it clear haw it ha hunt there was the lack of a real con titutional machiners treng enough to hind the hands of an irre pon ible ruler. Ordinarily, the people had no other way out but to acquieve in all governments little gold and had and only to but their time when the death of a terant or the access in of a benevolent ruler was time to make them happy and forget the evils of na t tyranny. Sometimes powerful mini ter came to their rescue but more often these men merely consolidated personal power and ter ment if the people by their highhan beine and crime. In extreme cases however the pertlem riel themselves and arround to ett. Brahmins enjexing so tal privilege placed a premin of part. In a se tase triunis were a mate for were put to leath ly rival rly; ser ful um ter But these litter were ft u nete ion fil f t' it en intere to than the e of the people. The to to many all erelie the fintering the Hapte regulatelist funtiall sawtes to I tuiling claim to him make often appear Land or all, the relative file him wife and with the mar hill a m

the rest were tyrants whose highhandedness called forth the denunciation of the native historian or the curse of their subjects. In more than one instance it was believed that a tyrannical king met his death owing to the curse of his subjects, and whenever that event happened the people heaved a sigh of relief

Without attempting to make a catalogue of the crimes of Kashmar larges we may simply mention those whose enormities were of a singularly violent nature, so as to demonstrate the evils from which the country suffered, owing to the rule of mesponsible tyrants without any constitutional check

One king Durlabha Pratapaditya II forcibly married another's wife (RT IV 17ff) King Jayapida made himself odious by his fiscal exactions on the advice of the Kayasthas and by the confiscation of Brahman agrahāras (RT IV 620ft) King Lalitāpīda filled his court with courtesans, and the mark of their footprint became the badge of ministeral office (RT IV 670) Sankaravarman distinguished himself by the manifold ways of fiscal oppression (V 165-180) and multiplied the office of Kayasthas, who invented new items of taxation Cakiavaiman the kingdom remained at the mercy of the king's concubines Hamsī and Nāgalatā, and the Dombas became the real rulers of the Unmattavanti made himself odious by killing his father the exking Partha (V 428-38) and took fiendish pleasure in stabbing naked women, by cutting off the limbs of workmen or in hipping open the wombs of pregnant women (V 410-41) Another prince Ksemagupta delighted in committing adultery with his ministers' waves (RT VI 154-165), while the same became the guiding passion of the able but unscrupulous queen Didda (VI 188-189) who consolidated her power by muidering her grandsons Nandigupta, Tribhuvana and Bhīmagupta King Kalasa became the pation of low favountes (R T VI 310-330) and fallen women and filled his harem with Turki women queen, Srilekhā, consolidated her power by putting her son Hamaja to death (RT VII 133) Last of all, came a King Haisa who had not only revolted against his father, but distinguished himself by his excellence in all kinds of sins and crimes conceivable to man H<sub>18</sub> fiscal extortions knew no bounds (VII 1091-1105) Not only did he take

measures to make money by robbing temples but went so far as to appoint an official called. Devotpajananavaka to de ecrate temple. Yet these financial extrotions are nothing when we go through the catalegue of his other crimes and aggravation. His lactiviousness was unbounded and not satisfied with the large number of concubing or the wives of other. It held intercourse with I so own insters and tepmothers and even violated his father's sister's daughter Vaga (R.T. VII. 1146-18). Kalhana indignantly calls him a Rajabhariava.

Fiscal tyranny —To find money for personal plea are. Kings resort ed to unbounded fiscal extortion. Not to peak of king the flar a cr those who merely confiscated temple property. King Sankaravara in permanently add d to the royal income by the following, sact in Kulbana mention the following measures and taxes (V. 10) 1300.

- (1) Re-umption of temple land, and levy of a new tax (frat) ara)
- (2) Tax on the sale of meen e and andal at temp 'es
- (3) Lavy of a tix on ale in market, and create n of the Majarate bhaga, office.
  - (4) Creation of the (sphakets a other
  - (a) Made exaction by reducing weights
  - (t) Levied Ilkin I of heare of wellal uren village

(7) Levind now importion in the pay if Scanca a uniform a kaya tha land appoint I have now Divira.

Even the good Yasa kara appoint. If urress it erit. If it we motion (Nagara Bickpta.) To the ellast a all fires and it for temple, and for the purpose carded the are formally year. (Bevorgapara a yaka) and a purpose to it is a Cotton year. The country of a time full of have that a bloom the Bayture of sees of teplat Lefe in tail in following a little year.

Allmin transchiers what a merety are mease of the almin transcript of the him of the him transchier all a merety tribets of the him to the him

the Lekhādhikāiin (III 206) and those which were created by Latitāditya namely, the Pañcamahāśabda, the Mahāsāndhivigrahika, the Mahāpiatihāra, the Māhāśvasāla, the Mahā-bhāndāgārika and the Māhāsādhanabhāga

Under Jayāpīda the Dhaimādhikarana was organised (IV 588) Under Sankaravarman, the Attapratibhāga and Grhakitya offices were created and the number of Kāyasthas multiplied. In the Grhakitya office, five Diviras or secretaries were appointed while the Gañjavara (or Sakaca and Lavata) offices were added. Yaśaskara appointed four new officials, the Nagarādhikitas. The Gañja or treasury came under the Gañjādhipa, while the Pādāgra office in connection with financial administration came into prominence (VII 210). While a Calagañja or moving treasury came into existence

Two of the offices were of great importance, viz,

- (a) that of Pilme minister, Sarvādhikrta or Sarvādhikrta, who often became the real ruler of the kingdom
- (b) The Rājasthānīya of Rājasthānādhikāna, who seems to have combined ministerial status with the highest Judicial authority (R T VII 601, 668)

# BOOK XI Political Speculations and Ideals on the Eve of Downfall

Though marked by a remarkable decay in political and constitutional life the period immediately preceding the downfall of the Hindus was not entirely barren in political speculation. There was, however, very little scope for the evolution of new ideas for original speculation in politics had ceased long ago. Yet a large number of books on the art of government were composed in addition to the

a reter her restant intuit to a new dara train in a ! I all I Despitatarapays's t ! craf timple het les diangulestr i are thug all a wear through the outable of his If retin sarla gravater. He la seco sna untur l'andr t at a duth the larger und referending rill up toller to Hit is new with him i er at tegr ther and ex u vi lated is fall r or to alter Nana (RT VII III) to halliana u ta rtly call bru a Repallantava

lica terante -Totala nafajerenali aun lun aun I to unland I head externa Net to a as of king like Har ver for all minch communication templa property. And was araban an reservable all little real incide by the fillians, wat u h lina not notice fill an announce and tax (V 10 (180) -

- ill R mifte ft i fle la l'and l'av fan a tax d'rat larm
- () Tax title sale of in a and audal at temp's
- I less fataxin al in mar t and it at not the Apriprati 1
  - if fit fit totalities t
  - or Mile and a large and while
  - is Levi 114ku l. (1. in infinellal un invillaget
  - I let be a might near the pay its among and then a t that it lives Divisa
  - I the Dan arrangement for a crelle w the in a till the first of the and to fine to the property of the second of the second
- 11 and the fit of the first two taxes
  - to the and RTA ISLAMICANT 1 A real restaurance a catte
- tall or Birm wall 11 . . .
- ner take t t 1 t 1 ı 11 1 4 ŧ \$ F - 1
  - 1

the Lekhādhikārin (III 206) and those which were created by Latitāditya namely, the Pañcamahāś ibda, the Mahāsāndhivigi ahika, the Mahāpi atihāra, the Māhāsvasāla, the Mahā-bhāndāgārika and the Māhāsādhanabhāga

Under Javāpīda the Dhaimādhikarana was organised (IV 588) Under Sankaravarman, the Attapratibhāga and Gihakitya offices were created and the number of Kāyasthas multiplied. In the Gihakitya office, five Diviras or secretaries were appointed while the Gañjavara (or Sakaca and Lavata) offices were added. Yaśaskara appointed four new officials, the Nagarādhikitas. The Gañja or treasury came under the Gañjādhipa, while the Pādāgia office in connection with financial administration came into prominence (VII 210). While a Calagañja or moving treasury came into existence

Two of the offices were of great importance, viz,

- (a) that of Prime minister, Sarvādhikita or Sarvādhikāra, who often became the real ruler of the kingdom
- (b) The Rājasthānīya of Rājasthānādhikāra, who seems to have combined ministerial status with the highest Judicial authority (R T VII 601, 668)

# BOOK XI Political Speculations and Ideals on the Eve of Dounfall

Though marked by a remarkable decay in political and constitutional life the period immediately preceding the downfall of the Hindus was not entirely barien in political speculation. There was, however, very little scope for the evolution of new ideas for original speculation in politics had ceased long ago. Yet a large number of books on the art of government were composed in addition to the

measures to make money by robbing temples but went so far as to appoint an official called Devotpaṭaṇaṇāyaka to desecrate temples. Yet these financial extrotions are nothing when we go through the catalogue of his other crimes and aggravations. His lactiviounces was unbounded and not satisfied with the large number of concubines or the wives of others, he held intercourse with his own sisters and stepmothers and even violated his father's sister's daughter Auga (R T VII 1146-48). Kalhana indiginantly calls him a Rajabharaya

Fiscal tylanny —To find money for personal pleasure—kings resort ed to unbounded fiscal extortion—Not to speak of kings like Hurşa or those who merely confiscated temple property king Sankaravarnan permanently added to the royal income by the following exactions Kalhana mentions the following measures and taxes (V 165 180) —

- (1) Resumption of temple lands and levy of a new tax (Prutikara)
- (2) Tax on the sale of meen e and sandal at temples
- (3) Levy of a tax on ales in markets and cigation of the Attaprati bhaga office
  - (4) Creation of the Grhaketvu office
  - (5) Made exactions by reducing weights
  - (6) Levied 13 kinds of begars or forced labour on villagers
- (7) Levied new impositions for the ray of Skandakas and Grama kayasthus and appointed five new Divirus

Even the good Yasa kara appointed four new officers to collect cesses in towns (Yagarndhikrtas). To these Harsa added his exections from temples and for this purpose created the office of temple exploiter (Devotpatawanayaka) and acquisition of money (Arthanayaka). The country beams full of Kayasthas and in the Rājatarnaganī we have repeated denumention of the officials (R.T. V. 184. VIII. 88-91 etc.)

Administrative history — Kulhana's naturative gives us materials for the administrative system of Kachinir and its gradual evolution. We are told that (I-IIS-20) originally there were several high officials c(j) the Julge the Revence Superintendent the Trea unit the Commander of the name the I may the Purchata and the Variobace. But king Jalauka created 18 higher offices (Karina tha.) Gradually other effice were a lebel and of these the name important were the e of

the Lekhādhikārin (III 206) and those which were created by Latitāditya namely, the Pañcamahāśabda, the Mahāsāndhivigrahika, the Mahāpratihāra, the Māhāsvasāla, the Mahā-bhāndāgārika and the Māhāsādhanabhāga

Under Jayāpīda the Dhaimādhikarana was organised (IV 588) Under Sankaravarman, the Attapratibhāga and Gihakitya offices were created and the number of Kāyasthas naultiplied. In the Gihakitya office, five Diviras or secretaries were appointed while the Gañjavara (or Sakaca and Lavata) offices were added. Yasaskara appointed four new officials, the Nagarādhikitas. The Gañja or treasury came under the Gañjādhipa, while the Pādāgra office in connection with financial administration came into prominence (VII 210). While a Calagañja or moving treasury came into existence

Two of the offices were of great importance, viz,

- (a) that of Prime minister, Sarvādhikita or Sarvādhikāra, who often became the real ruler of the kingdom
- (b) The Rājasthānīya of Rājasthānādhikāia, who seems to have combined ministertial status with the highest Judicial authority (R T VII 601, 668)

# BOOK XI Political Speculations and Ideals on the Eve of Downfall

Though marked by a remarkable decay in political and constitutional life the period immediately preceding the downfall of the Hindus was not entirely barren in political speculation. There was, however, very little scope for the evolution of new ideas for original speculation in politics had ceased long ago. Yet a large number of books on the art of government were composed in addition to the

legal compilations or Nibandhas which contained directions as to the duties of the king. Of the works on government the most important were—1. The Kamandaka nitisara—2. The Niti väkyämpta of Somadeva the Jain in addition to many other works composed still later the most important of these being the Sukra nitisara—of which the date remains a theme of dispute among orientalists. Among the legal works we have the Smrti of Katyayana and those of Brhaspati and Narada—In addition to these we have Nibandhas like the Viramitrodaya the Vivadara thakara—the Nirnayasindhu—the Parasaramadhavya and the Smrti-candrika—some of these works being composed during the Mohammedan period

Few of these books advance pretensions to original thinking or assume the air of authoritativeness, but they preserve only the traditions of the greater writers of the past Kamandaka the author of the Nitisara, professes to be a political pupil of Kautilya who single-handed destroyed the Nandas by his diplomatic skill (mantrašakti) Kautilya he cites older writers including Canakya himself, and only occasionally he gives us views which he claims as his own In his work we find the same spirit which is dis cernible in the Kautiliva He discusses the end and aim of states and identifies the interests of the ruler and the ruled like his great master He extols moral discipline in the king, the absence of which brings downfall and he gives examples of kings ruined through their folly and highhandedness (pp 57 60) He extols the sciences (ch II) and holds up the traditional social and moral ideal pointing out the importance of Danda Like the great master whom he

professes to follow, he believes in the interdependence of the seven elements of a State (IV I) and extols the functions of the king on whose activity everything, including morality and economic prosperity, entirely depends (Ch I, 9-15) He also emphasises the view that protection is the essence of royal government and it is in lieu of it that subjects pay taxes to the king. The king should, according to Kāmandaka, maintain his own authority, educate and check princes, take care for his own personal safety, control the army, and put down traitors, oppressive ministers and enemies to peace. Then when he finds himself strong enough he should think of waging war and making a conquest of the Mandala

Though following closely the precepts of Kautilya and adopting his vocabulary, Kāmandaka apparently devotes more attention to the conception and the working of the Mandala, losing sight of, to some extent, the importance of state paternalism. He even quotes the views of authors whose names do not appear in the Arthaśāstra, and in his work we find the names of Maya and Puloman. (Kam p 108) To illustrate the possible attitude of kings towards enemies he multiplies examples and instances from the epics etc. and refers to the work of Kārtavīryārjuna and Sūrya, Paraśu-rāma, Hanumat, Arjuna, Salya, Rukmin, Kaca, Devayānī and Dantavakra

Kāmandaka was a true disciple of Kautilya and his metrical rendering of the Kautilya was very popular in India. This is proved by the fact that the Indian emigrants to Bali took the Kāmandaka with them and a translation of the book exists there. This shows almost

clearly that the author must have flourished earlier than the 4th century A D when the colonization of the Eastern Islands began Kāmandaka's antiquity is further proved by his preference given to the Arthesastra tradition. He rejects sometimes the directions given in the metrical Smrtis which during the period of Dharma reaction claimed superiority over the Arthasastras (see pp. 109 Travancore edition—on the number of ministers)

Like the Kamandaka Nitisara we have two late Sutra works attributed to Brhaspati and respectively The Sutras attributed to Brhaspati is c late work attributed to the sage who in the Arthasastra is described as having condemned the Vedas as the instru ment of success on the part of the people who excel in making worldly gains But the views embodied in the Sūtras are not professedly anti Vedic since full protection is extended to the Brahmins who are exempt from capital punishment and the king is asked to avoid heretics author of the Sūtras extols the place of knowledge in the human society since by means of knowledge alone riches are gained Dandaniti is the supreme science and the king should learn how to maintain his held not only upon his kingdom but all his subjects including his wives and To ensure success he should also have recourse to conciliation diplomacy and if necessary to gifts He should take the counsel of wise men advanced in age and free from vices and have his deliberations in secret Ho should potronise Brahmins and encourage learning

Take the Brhaspati sutra the Satras attributted to Canakya must be regarded as a late work. Though attributed to the great author of the Arthasastra, the book devotes more attention to the ways and means of obtaining worldly success and happiness on the part of ordinary individuals than the right way of obtaining sovereignity and extension of dominion on the part of a The author who must have flourished not earlier than the 6th and 7th century AD extols the place of Dharma in the world and attributes all happiness to Dharma. Next, he describes the importance of Tantra and Āvāpa and devotes a few of the aphorisms to the right way ot gaining success in politics in very general terms. This small Niti text book seems to have become very popular many of the sutras are incorporated in the Pathyavākya of Ceylon An English translation of it with quotations of parallel ideas was published by the present author

Somadeva's Nītīvākyāmrta—The next great work which forms part of the later Nītī literature is the one composed in the 10th century by Somadeva Sūrī a Jain, who though professing a non-Vedic religion calls upon people not to give up their traditional customs and manners and accepts the authority of the Srutis and of the Smrtis—He recognises the social importance of caste—A Southern, born in an age which saw ceaseless wars and political turmoils, Somadeva does not go out of his way to condemn the great Arthaśāstra writers and Nītī teachers—In an age of anarchy, he emphasises the supreme importance of political discipline and makes morality and even religion, not to speak of worldly prosperity, subordinate to the political discipline—He seems to regard the state as an end in itself

and goes on to describe the requisite virtues of a true king who is to be regarded more as a god than a human being Self control education, discipline and the association of the aged and the wise are the primary qualifications of a king He should refrain from doing injustice or inflict un just and heavy punishments. He should make a careful selection of advisers. His ministers should be well born, free from vices natives of the country and not only morally qualified but endowed with practical wisdom. should not flatter the king they should deliberate in secret and should number three five or nine According to Somadeva all officials should be loyal to the king especially the chiefs of the army The High Priest of the king should exercise his art to avert divine calamities while the ambassadors should carry on negotiations on behalf of the king Spies in various garbs as we find in the Arthasastra, should not only collect information but also apprehend wrong doers. The country should be carefully protected and the administration of justice should be carried on with impartiality and without privileges to anybody Taxation should not be unjust or excessive. The army should be kept under strict control and must be in readiness to ward off attacks. The forces should be paid regularly and in no case should the army dominate the politics of the country If allowed to do so the army leaders might embroil the country in useless were or dynastic quarrels which were so common in the Hindu states of that age At the same time Somadova deprecates the use of mercenaries and describes the respective use of the elephant horse chariot and feet Next having ensured lovalty and safety at home the king

should make a study of the Mandala and win allies Somadeva recognises the importance of diplomacy and deprecates severity and treachery in war.

The king should keep his treasury full and devote all means at his disposal to improve the condition of his subjects. He should encourage agriculture, since agriculture was the basis of a state's prosperity. Commerce should be encouraged but the king should do his best to regulate the profits of merchants whom Somadeval, like Kautilya, regards as thieves par excellence. Unjust laising of prices should be checked and excess profits should be confiscated. Somadeval, thus appears to us remarkable for his clearsightedness and his practical wisdom. His toleration is praiseworthy since he displays no hatred against Brahmanical traditions.

Other later Jain works -There are other works composed by Jain writers The Uttarādhyāyana-sūtra (S B E XLV translation by Charpentier) gives us the Jain views regarding the duties of a king We have a dialogue between Indra (in the guise of a Brahmin) and king Nami of Mithila, and Indra enumerates all those precepts which are found in a Brahmanical work on the Arthasastra or Smrti We find in the book the deepest possible influence of the Brahmanic canon, though the Jains make an attempt to give it a Jain character by introducing Nami as one The Laghu Arhannītı by Hemcandra, of the speakers similarly has nothing Jain in it except the name of the Similarly, Mahāsenācārya's Pradyumna-carita repeats the traditional Brahmanic ideas of government Lomaprabhācārya's Kumārapālaprabodha nerrates

exploits of Kumarapala Caulukya refers to his conversion to Jainism and extols his spirit of shimsa and toleration of Jainism. But it gives us no new ideas while the story of Kumarapala's conversion is hardly substitutated by other evidences. Elsewhere we shall say something on the Jain Puranas.

Other minor Niti works -Minor text-beloks on Artha sastra and Nitisütras came to be written myore or less in a popular and easy style Many of the teachings of writers on the art of government came to be popularized through works which purported to educate ordinary people on worldly affairs through fables Of such works one, of the most important is the Tantrakhyayika composed in Kashmir not later than the 5th century A D (edited and d translated by Hertel in 1909) The Pancatantra and the Hitopadesa are too well known to be described in detail The last two works were composed by Visnu Sarma and Pandita respectively to initiate wayward princes in into the secrets of the arts of government and the ways of success in war and diplomacy. In the form of fabilities the two books in which the principal actors are buildes and beasts emphasise the importance of guining allicards and dangers of political isolation the proper selected to opportune moments for waging war and the condition of making peace kingship is always extelled and this of requisite qualities of a good king laid down. The dans se the of evil counsellors are pointed out and the qualifications of a good and faithful minister ennumerated. Kingshi ans in those days was regarded as an art and the authors de P their best to teach their pupils the right way of winning the

hearts of their subjects by protecting them from violence and refraining from unjust exactions

Cyclopædias — In addition to these, we have Cyclopædias of useful knowledge containing extracts on the art of government. Of these, the Yuktikalpataru attributed to King Bhoja Paramāra and the Mānasollāsa attributed to a pandit under the Cālukya king Vikramādītya are worthy of note. They deal with almost all the topics of social, political and economic interest, from the qualification of a good rulei and minister to the methods of testing a good gem. But all the directions in these works are based on precepts of older teachers and there is nothing of new speculation.

Sukranīti-sāra — While these are of little importance to one interested in Hindu political speculations and ideals, one work, though late, ought to claim our attention. It is the Sukranīti-sāra, in which we find not only a commendable attempt to sum up the practical wisdom of the ancients but also an effort to formulate new principles regarding the art of government, more especially in view of the changes in the political condition of India. The date of the work is disputed and some writers go so far as to assign it to the 14th of the 15th century of the Christian era. This is, however, going too far, and we believe that the present recension of the Sukranīti is based on an older work belonging to the same school of thought

In Sukra's (the unknown writer of the present redection of the Sukranīti) days the political aspect of the country had changed Imperialism was a thing of the past and everywhere small principalities of various grades of political power and status had come into existence. The writer of the Sukraniti sara gives us a list of these, beginning from the humblest of feudatories to a fully sovereign political authority. These are—

		R	Revenue in Kārşas				
1	The Samanta	1	lac	to	3	lacs	
2	Mandalıka	3	lacs		10	,	
3	Rajan	10	,		20	,	
4	Meharaja	20	1	,	50	1	
5	Svarat	50	,		100	,	
В	Samrāţ	1	crore		10	crores	
7	Virat	10	crotes	,	50	,	
R	Sarvabhauma	or Harveren	1 Mono	roh			

8 Sarvabhauma or Universal Monarch

These princes went on warring and anarchy was the natural consequence. Fully conscious of the evils of such a system Sukra like the great writers of the past believed in the aminipotent service of the state and he extols the service of the monarch to the cause of society since according to him without a king society would perish like a boat in the high seas.

A state according to him has seven elements, e.g. the king (head) the minister (eye) the ally (ear), the army (mind) the fort (arms) and the territory and the people (legs). The king as the head of the body politic was the source of social progress and prosperity. A good king was the counterpart of the geds while a bad king was a demon. In this conception of royalty the author relies on the epic tradition and following it draws out the parallellism between the royal functions and those of the respective gods. He also emphasises the epic idea that a good king combined in himself all the functions and virtues of a father mother.

preceptor, protector, friend, the lord of wealth and the god of death. Such being the concept of royalty, the author proceeds to regard the king as the most responsible public servant of the community and, following Kautilya and the great writers, not only lays down his qualities and qualifications but also a time-table and daily routine for the king

According to him, the king should maintain his hold upon his family, and find out responsible posts of honour for his uncles, brothers and sons, taking care to train up his eldest son in the art of government. There should be amity in the family and future wars and partitions of the kingdom should be avoided (I 344-46).

The king should do nothing without asking first of all the opinion of his advisers or the great officers of the king These latter should at least be ten in number eg (see Ch II 69 &c)

- 1 The High Priest or Purodhas—the ecclesiastical adviser, a Brahmin learned in the Vedas, in military science, in politics and in war
- 2 The Regent or Pratinidhi—who was the most trusted private adviser of the king
- 3 The Chief Minister or Pradhāna—who was to supervise all the departments
- 4 The Saciva—who was the war minister versed in the military science
- 5 The Mantrin—a man well read in politics and who was to advise in political matters.
- 6 The Prādvivāk—who was the judge.
- 7 The Pandita-well versed in the Dharmaśāstras

active social duties calculated to maintain and improve the moral and material condition of his subjects. He was to encourage agriculture patronise learning and reward ment. A large amount of royal income (1?) was to be spent in charity

In regard to revenue and expenditure Sukra has many new things to say Like all the classical writers he recog nises the importance of the treasury since on it depended the army and on that the prosperity of the kingdom (IV 14) and every means should be employed in filling the treasury (IV 2) only taking care that the people did not suffer from oppression and in that case the king suffered from the consequences of sins (IV 4-19) The sources of taxation were as of old (a) Tax on the produce of cultivation of the soil and this item Sukra raised from one-sixth to one-half (IV 113 116) (b) Tax on minerals which is one half in the case of gold (c) Tax on cattle rearers (d) Tax on capitalists userers shopkeepers and the labour of artisans (a) Road cess (f) Toll on articles of commerce which was to vary from one-thirty second (1/32) to one sixteenth (g) Ferries (h) Judicial fines (i) Tributes from sub ordinate princes (i) Escheats interests casual dues and miscellaneous items

Every year grain and corn were to be kept in stock sufficient for the needs of three years and every year the old stock was to be consumed and new stock made (IV 26 30). Stocks of all other articles were to be kept. Peasants were to hold royal pattas. In times of war and emergency, the king was to exact the hoarded wealth of the rich taking care to return with interest when prosperity returned (IV 10).

In regard to expenditure Sukra has some original ideas lie calls upon the king to keep half the revenue in the treasury. One-fourth should be devoted to the army, one-twelfth should go to remunerate officials, one-twentyfourth should be the expenses of the king and his family, one-twentyfourth the salaries of high officials while one-twenty-tourth each should be devoted to charity and popular entertainment. Annual budgets should be made

In regard to royal servants, they were to get decent wages (II 363) with agreements relating to work and payment, since lower wages turned servants into real enemies. They were to receive leaves and helidays. In cases of illness, they were to get leaves on ½ or ½ of the pay drawn by them. Men with forty years' service were to get pensions equal to ½ of the salary enjoyed by them, while in cases of premature death, their wives and children were to receive pensions. In cases of appoved services, bonuses were to be paid and honour conferred on trusted servants.

In regard to war and foreign policy there is nothing new worthy of mentioning.

Contemporary with the Sukranīti and in some cases later than its composition, other works on Nīti came into existence. Of these the more prominent were the Rājanītiratnākara and the Rājanītiprakāsa by the author of the Viramitrodaya. Mediæval Hindu princes patronised Nīti writers and the practice of compiling Nibandhas on law and politics continued upto the days of Maharaja Ranjit Singh of Lahore under whose patronage the Vivādārnava-setu was composed by ten pundits

Political Ideals in the Inscriptions—Like the Niti

literature the inscriptions help us in forming an idea of the political ideals of the age. Written by court-poets and dignitaries and very often containing inelegant hyperbole and meaningless exaggerations these inscriptions at least bring before us the ideals which floated before the minds of the people as to the duties and functions of the king and the end and aim of royal Government Numerous as they are they contain passages glorifying the achievements of great kings and their conception of the duties they owed to their subjects. In this respect they are of great value to us and show how in the midst of wars and perennial conflicts for dominion, the princes of India had not altogether forgotten the traditions of the past

The high idealism reflected by the Andhra inscriptions, especially those of Gautamiputra has already been describ That king prides himself on his protection of all the tolerance of all creeds and his policy of refraining from all unjust taxation in addition to his great wisdom which saved India from the domination of foreigners and various indigenous enemies The inscriptions of the Saka Usava data show how this prince though originally a foreigner came to be actuated by the higher ideals of Indian ethics and by the precepts of Hinduism The Girnar Inscription of the Asatrapa Rudradaman speaks in the same strain The Saka ruler prides himself upon his being elected by all the castes his high conception of regal duty his offorts for the good of the people his habitual repudiations of unjust ex actions like the Pranayas, his elemency towards his enemies and his determination to take no human life except in war. Next to these-some of the Gunta Inscriptions

throw a flood of light on the principles of good government as well as on the high ideal of regal and ministerial duty The Allahabad Pillar Inscription of Samudragupta describes the king as the equal (Samah) [worldly counterpart?] of the great derties, namely, Dhanada or Kuvera, Indra, Varuna, and Antaka or Yama This was clearly an echo of the saceidotal concept of royalty found in the cpics and the Smitis Similar idealism 18 found Kumāragupta's Bhilsad Inscription (G I 44), the qBhithari Pillar Inscription of Skandagupta (GI p 54) and the Mathura Inscription of Candragupta II (GI p 28, cf Samudragupta is also described as a धनद-वहणोन्द्रान्तकसमस्य ) god dwelling on earth though he was a mortal only in celebrating the rites and obsevances of mankind (G I p 15)

These are indications of the glorification of royalty, which had gained ground in India. But perhaps the best expression to the contemporary idealism regarding the type of good government is found in the Girnar Inscription of Skandagupta, and there it is laid down that while the king (who had to fight continuously for his partimony with foreign enemies) ruled, there was in his kingdom no man devoid of Dharma, no one who was disheartened nor one who suffered from wants (GI p 62, तस्मिन् नृपे शासित नैव कश्चित् वर्माद्पेतो मनुज प्रजासु। श्रात्तीं दरिद्रो व्यसनी कदर्यो दरेडेन नवा यो भृशपीडितः स्यातू ) an echo of the idealism found in one of the oldest Upanisads as well as in the Great epic (cf Santi, ch 77 नानाहितामिनायज्वा मामकान्तरमाविश ॥) न मे स्तेनो जनपदे न ऋदर्यों न मद्यप । where the king of Kekaya describes his own government Next to the Ideals of royal duty some more light is thrown

on ministerial duty and the knowledge of the art of government. Thus in the Girnar Inscription an ideal minister is described as well versed in the four branches of policy, e.g. acquisition of wealth protection of things acquired and their bestowal on the worthy (cf. the four aims laid down by Kautilya). The good minister is described as being endowed with the highest qualities and qualifications free from all temptations (चलांपपानिय विग्रद्धादि द सलांपपानुवाद महिया कृषीत) and not only engaged in doing good to humanity but also discharged from moral habilities by his performence of duties. (भाषाययभाषोपपतान्त्रास्ता एक्ट्रिय होक्स्पाहित प्राप्त )

Some of the Insciptions praise ministers like Sava and Virasena or a governor like Parnadatta oi his son Cakra palita, many of whom were hereditary servants of the dynasty Sava speaks of his obtaining the office of Sānāhi vigrahika through hereditary claim ( अन्यवप्राप्तचारिक effectivity of page 1 pag

The Mandasore Inscription describes the high social and political ideals of the members of the autonomous guilds of Dasapura. The members of the guild not only distinguished themselves by their excellence in technical skill but also in the higher sciences as well as in the art of war

Vākāṭakas—Pho few Vākāṭaka Inscriptions which mainly dwell upon the high descent of these princes or the performence of the Asvamedha Rajasuya and Vājapoya or the patronage of Brahmins are not silent on the duties or ideals of kings. Thus Vākāṭka Pravarasena compares himself with Yudhisthira and in one inscription (I A II 243) glorifies his Dharmavijya. In other inscriptions the great personal qualitities of these princes are extelled.

The Valabhī Inscriptions not only glorify the great learning and skill of these rulers, but speak repeatedly of their subjects and their regard for the rules of morality Thus in regard to Drona-sinha, it is mentioned that he followed the laws of Manu and the sages and was devoted like Yudhisthira to the path of Dharma (मानवादिप्रनीतविधिविधान धर्म्मा वर्म्मराज इव विहितविनयव्यवस्था— G I no. 38).

Dharasena's intellectual attainments are repeatedly mentioned while he is compared with Dharmarāja (I A V 275) Other kings like Guhasena prided themselves upon their protection of the weak, the preservation of religions grants and upon averting calamities befalling subjects

We find the same idealism in the inscriptions of the kings of the South—The Aihole Inscription of Pulakeśin II extols the king's attainments, conquests and services to the cause of religion and learning—He was the abode of truth (Satyā-śraya) and checked the wickedness of the Kaliage (E I XVIII p 260)

The Rāstrakūta Krisna speaks of his government being based on truth (I A XIII 66-68) He never oppressed his subjects (I A XIII p 281)

An inscription of Vikramāditya Cālukya (E I XIII, 173) speaks of his suppression of the wicked and the protection of the righteous. Another inscription describes a prince as a Brhaspati in the Kali age and a Kautilya to his enemies (I A XVI p 30). Western Cālukya inscriptions speak in the same strain. The kings are identified with Yudhisthira (I A XVI p 35).

The Pallavas do the same thing Thus in the Sanskrit Inscription of Visnugopa he is described not only as virtuous and well versed in good government but also as one who had assumed royalty merely as an ascetic with the vow of ruling and maintaining subjects according to Dharma (अवस्थानसम्भ अवापालनसम्भ अवा

A lord of Cikura speaks of his having followed the path of past kings like Dilipa Bhagiratha Rama etc (I A XIII p 106) Other princes speak in the same strain Maha raja Avinita describes his kingly rule as being made solely with the desire of governing people rightcously(यम्बद्ध प्रवापासन

सायाधिगत राज्यश्रयोजनस्य I A V 38 &c)

The Eastern Calukya Ammaraja boasts that his kingdom was full of well ripened grains that the cows yielded milk and that the land was free from calamities distress and fears (S I I p 49) The real significance of the two words ammā (mother) and rājan (king) united in his name. Bhima of the same family boasted that for thirty years he ruled like a mother, granted the fruits of their desire to the distressed helpless and the sick and associated himself with the twice born ascetics and poets (E I VII

p 234) Vallala Visnuvardhana speaks of his complete protection of the Śūdras and women (I A II 296)

The Colas speak in the same strain. Thus Vikrama Cola, the merciless conquorer, boasts that he followed the laws of Manu and protected all his subjects like a sweet mother (E I I III pt 2 p 184). In the inscriptions of Bengal and Assam we find the same ideas. The suppression of Mātsyanyāya is repeatedly mentioned in the inscriptions of Dharmapala and Bhāskaravarman. Prominent Pāla kings are compared to Prthu, Rāma and other great heroes Nārāyanapāla's gifts are compared with those of Karņa, the Epic hero. Bhāskaravarman is compared with Sivi for bounty and with Brhaspati for knowledge. The Assam king Indrapāla is assigned thirty-two titles. Samācāradeva of Bengal is likened to Yayāti, Nahusa and Ambarīsa

The Poets-We pass on next to the writings of the poets and authors of the classical literature for information regarding their political ideals which are certainly the reflections of the period during which they lived Thus, the writings of Bhāsa whose date still remains disputed has something to say on contemporary ideas on politics and political ideals Bhāsa believes in the traditional social order, extols *Dharma* and honours the Brāhmanas Avimāraka points out the importance of espionage and secrecy in deliberation The king feels the heavy burden of royal responsibility while his ministers lament their sad lot since they gained little for their successful projects but were liable to be denounced if their plans miscarried Yaugandharāyana's loyalty appeals to all even Duryodhana in the Dūtavākyam extols the

supreme domination over all which is to be won by the sword alone

When we come to Kalidasa, we find the great author well versed in the teachings of the Arthasastra The educa tion of an heir apparent as described in the Raghuvamsa shows the poets intimate knowledge of the contemporary art of government Some of his dramas like the Mālavikāg numitra are realistic but little information as to real politics is available from these. The only point which interests us is the reference to the Mantinparisat under the Mitras or Elsewhere while a picture of real politics is want ing the high idealism of the period relating to the concept of regal duty is clearly reflected in the Raghuranisa and the Saluntala These books show that Kulidasa was a be liever in the paternal ideal of kingship in as much as he describes the king as the real father of his subjects though their parents begat them (sa pitā pitarastāsām levalam janmahetavah) The king maintained by the grant of one sixth (sasthāmsavrttih) was to toil for others devoid of personal pleasures (svasukha nirbhilāsah khidyase lokahetoh) He was ever saddled (aviśramo loka tantradhikarah) and suffered from his great responsibilities like the weight of the umbrella held by the hand, which gave shade to many (rājyanı svahastadhrta dandamıı āta All these ideals are clearly and beautifully put in the mouth of the herald who sings the praise of the king (Sakuntalā Act V) Like most of the classical writers Kali dasa was a believer in universal dominion but as the real meaning of imperialism was forgotten in his days he extels the traditional Asyamedha and the satisfaction of the con

queror with the submission and tribute of weak kings. This type of conquest he applauds as the real *Dharmavijaya* 

Bhāravi—who belonged to the 6th century AD attempted to give an exposition of the art of government in his Kirātārjunīyam But he has nothing original in his epic. The art of government to him was nothing but the means of consolidation of internal sovereignity and the subjugation of enemies. He extols the importance of the army and espionage and the different ways of attaining political objectives (viz, sāma, dāna, bheda and danda)

Dandin-an intelligent and forceful writer of no mean versatility, gives us a picture of the real politics in his Daśakumāracarita. As has been pointed out by Dr Shamasastry, the author had an intimate knowledge of the Kautiliya and he makes a clear display of the means and tactics employed in contemporary politics. He exposes the inherent weakness of the courts where intrigues played a very prominent part, but he extols the value of the higher knowledge of Dharma and political science and emphasises the importance of education and moral discipline in princes The acquisition of wealth contributed to the consolidation of royal power and might in his days was the basis of sover-Kings must exert themselves to outwit eign authority enemies and to consolidate authority by constant watchfulness and with the loyalty of subjects

The Vāsavdattā of Subandhu is dominated by the idealism of the day and the author makes King Cintāmani the embodiment of all virtues, social and political. In it he has very little to say about practical politics

Banabhatta—Subandhu s close successor, and a writer of extraordinary literary talent shows his intimate knowledge of the art of government But remark in his literary merits he displays very little originality in political matters Harsa was his hero and he extols his military exploits, sporadic conquests and his meaningless charity after the imita tion of Asoka on whose life he had modelled that of his own. Bana shows his worldly wisdom in the advice given by the minister Sukanasa to Candrapida, and he points out the evils to which a young prince is liable to be a prey and the resultant consequences His views on the art of government do not differ from those of his contem poraries but his denunciation of the consolidation of sovereignity after the Kautiliyan ideal shows how the decay of Indian political genius had brought in a mentality which extolled meaningless wars for the attainment of a tempo rary exaltation by powerful kings without working for the foundation of a consolidated empire strong enough to save India from the attacks of foreign enemics

A large number of other writers appeared on the eve of India's political downfall but they have nothing new in them. Even king Harsa figured as a dramatist but there is very little information on political life and ideals. The author of Bhattikavya has nothing remarkable to his credit while Bhavabhuti extols Rama's extreme devetion to his subjects interest and this compels him to banish Sitalias beloved. Magha's Sisupalabalha is an epic with traditional ideals and the poet gives an exposition of the ways and means enabling kings to overcome their enemics.

home and abroad Conquest, domination of the at Mandala and the outwitting of enemies by all possible means are the main things which occupy his attention. The Mudrārāksasa attributed to Viśākhadatta similarly extols the genius of Cānakya and incidentally gives an exposition of a game of successful intrigue, espionage and counterespionage attributed to Cānakya He presents to us a political order characterized by an absence of scruples and by universal suspicion The Canakya of Mudraraksasa is a super-machiaval and not the great Indian political philosopher whose remarkable foreseight, constructive genius and wide outlook does honour to any country or any age Bhatta-Nārāyana's Venīsamhāra, though stirring and forceful in its diction has a narrow view of politics

The Kashmir poet Ksemendra in his Brhatkathā-mañjarī, Bhārata-mañjarīi and Rāmāyana-mañjarī pieserves nothing but the older ideas and ideals. He extols the traditional ideas of society, eulogises the importance of kingship and refers to the election of Manu as king. His picture of the administrative system does not materially differ from that in the Aithaśāstra and the Dharmaśāstras. In his Bodhisattiāvadāna-kalpalatā, he extols instances of virtue and has very little to say on politics. There are numerous other works but very little historical or political data is obtainable from them. The Naisadhacarita of the poet Śrī-Harsa discusses political matters but only in a convertional way

The story literature of which the best extant examples are the Kathāsarīt-sāgara of Somadeva, the Brhatkathamañjaiī and the Jain Kathākosa describe only the con-

ventional ideas and state of affairs. The Kathāsaritsāgara contains many romantic stories but otherwise it throws no important light on the period. Occasionally, acts of tyranny or high handedness of kings are mentioned. The romantic and didactic elements predominate in all of these books. The Jain Kathākoşa however extols the spiritual element in life.

Historical Works-Next we have a number of historical and biographical works of the mediæval Hindu period and of these the more important are Bilhana's Vikiamänka deva carıta Kalhana's Rajatarangını Merutungacarya's Prabandha cintămani the Răma-carita of Sandhyakara Nandin and the Nava sahasankadeva carita by Padma gupta But these writers do not throw any new light on the political conditions of the day except extolling the virtues of the heroe selected by them like Vikramaditya of Kalyan Jayasıngha Sıddharaja or Ramapāla of Bengal who are described as possessing all conceivable moral qualities They are all munificient towards Brahmins patrons of learning and kind to their subjects. All these heroes are credited with great conquests and are great Leniency and charity to subjects patronage to Brahmins and poets and remission of taxes are culogised in the case of each king and we find echoes of paternalism

But Kalhana preserved a truely realistic account of things and his account of tyrants already given cause pain and indignation to his readers (see Supra Bk N). The maxims of Lalitaditya are those of a crafty tyrant while the horrible fiscal tyranny or acts of cruelty attributed to rulers like Unmattavanti. Didda or Harsa show clearly

that in spite of the injunctions of the Sastras, tyranny had ceased to have any limitations.

Political ideals in the Purānas—Next to the inscriptions and works on Nīti, the Purānas contain much of the tradition and ideals of the period. They are, as is well known, eighteen in number and contain the traditional account of creation, the early history of mankind, the reign of the Manus, genealogies of the sages and mythical kings, history of the various dynasties that ruled in different parts of India in addition to philosophical matters like the causes that will lead to the destruction of the world and the ways of attainment of salvation. They inculcate the importance of Bhakti and extol the greatness of Visnu, Siva, Sakti, Surya, as well as some other deties or their incarnations.

These are their general contents, but in addition they contain chapters on various subjects. Some Purāṇas devote attention to grammar and literature, others devote sections to medicine while not a few of them have something to say on the art of war, the right conduct for kings or the true ways of maintaining the social order. In regard to these, much information is available from the Agni, Vāyu, Matsya and the Bhāgavata Purāṇas

Without going through the contents of each of these Purānas, it will be best for us to summarise their main teachings on polity and sociology. To begin with the traditional account of creation, we find that all the Purānas postulate more or less the existence of an ideal state of nature. This was in the Krta or Satya Yuga when men delighted in virtue, respected each others' rights, had no wants and were free from sorrow and diseases. This is

found in the Brhaddharma Purana which after describing the existence of an ideal state of nature marks the social decline coming with the Treta and the following Yugas According to the Vāyu and the Kūrma Purānas men were in the primitive ideal stage supported by Kalpavrksas while according to the Visnu Purāna, the wants of men were supplied by the Siddhis—But when men became sinful they had to work for their food and necessaries of life—Some of the Puranas go further and hold like the Vayu that in this ideal condition there were no distinction of the high and the low

Gradually the Satya Yuga passed away and people began to fall foul with each other They became greedy and lascivious and to maintain social order kingship was ins tituted at the instance of Brahman the Almighty Conven tions and rules were made and the conduct of kings Brahmanas and the other castes laid down King Vena proved unrighteous mixed the castes oppressed the virtuous forbade religious practices and had to be killed by the Rsis Out of his body Prthu arose He was made ruled righteously The story of Vena is con king and tained in all the Puranas and go to prove that though the king is regarded as the upholder of moral order tyranny justifies his deposition and death The Bhagavata Purana while it denounces Vena's tyranny extols the virtue of Prthu.

All the Purānas uphold the traditional social ideal and extol the Brahmin and his social privileges. They all hold Dharma to be the basis of moral order and the main tenance of Dharma is vested in the king. The royal efficient

is highly extolled and the king is described as the mundane counterpart of the great gods or the Lokapālas. Without the king's exercise of the regal functions moral order will pass away and anarchy or war come into existence. So a king should be obeyed, and to oppose him is a sin. The Bhāgavata like the Manu Samhitā goes so far as to promulgate the doctrine of passive resistance. The state of anarchy which results from cessation of regal authority is described in some of the Purānas and in detail in the Bhāgavata Purāna.

The duties of the king are laid down by the *Purānas* These may be summarised as follows —

- 1 Maintenence of the social and moral order
- 2 Protection of the kingdom from foreign enemies, protection of life and property at home and the impartial administration of justice according to law
- 3 The patronage of Brahmins and ascetics, devotion to religion, performance of sacrifices, and the maintenance of widows, orphans and the sick
- 4 Performance of acts of charity and devotion to the material progress of subjects

king's Duties—The king according to all the Purānas, especially the Agni Puiāna (which devotes a great part of its attention to polity) is the central figure in the body politic, the chief of the traditional seven elements of a state, and the fountain-head of authority and justice. He is to hold office for the public good. He should regard his life as a great vow and should hold on a dedicated existence Protection is his highest duty and failure in his duties brings sin and a future life in hell for him. Through pro-

tection he obtains one sixth of the merits of his subjects and through failure a sixth part of their sin. He is to have a daily routine of work would look to business of every department should hear the complaints of all administer justice and hold his daily durbar Free from vices and dissipations he should make it a point to win over the good will of his subjects. He should punish the wicked without mercy safeguard his subjects from the oppression of his officers should grant patronage to Brahmins and ascetics build temples and endow divine worship. Last of all, he should feed the aged the imbecile the widow and the or phan He should encourage agriculture and industry and see that under his government every one got an opportunity of living peacefully and earning his own livelihood mins should be respected freed from taxes and should be They should be also freed from corporal punishment amply rewarded The Agni Purana goes so far es to say that 1 of th revenue of the state should be distributed among the Brahmins

Government according to the 1gm Purāna—Almost all the Purānas devote chapters on the art of government but of those the Agm Purāna enters into details in the form of a dialogue between Agm and Vasistha. The king according to it is to regard his life as a continuous and unceasing vow for the welfare of subjects (Ch. 218)

As his existence is vital to the body politic the throne shall never remain vacant and on the demise of a king his successor should be immediately announced without any reference to auspicious or inauspicious moments or the has of tanca. He is to be the central or basic element in the

state with its seven limbs and his business should be the rule of virtue and the regime of justice By ruling righteously he becomes entitled to a sixth part of the religious merit of his subjects and the failure to do justice or rule righteously condemns him to hell The king is to be a source of pleasure to subjects and his greatest wealth arises from out of the loyalty of his subjects (cf Kau अनुरागे सार्वगुरायम्) Protection and maintenance of subjects is his only sacrifice He is to live for his subjects like a pregnant woman who takes food for the nourishment of the child in the womb (Chs 223, 225) While extolling the king's services, the Purāna harps on the parallelism between the duties of the king and those of the gods (Ch 226) The king is to learn the sciences which are the same as in the Aithaśāstia Agni Purāna, like the Arthaśāstra, gives us a daily routine of the king and advises him to appoint advisers and minis-The Agni Purāna mentions among these, the Purohita, the Amātya, the Pratīhāra, the Sāndhivigiahika, the Dhanādhyaksa, the Durgādhyaksa, the Astrādhyaksa and other officials in charge of various departments, after ascertaining their qualities and weakness He should mentain an efficient and powerful aimy, should guaid his frontiers, appoint officers over single villages, groups of 10 and 100 villages and employ numerous spies in various garbs He should take care always to guard his person (Ch 241)

He should be on the alert to save his people from the oppression of enemies of peace, as well as from high-handed officials, especially the Kāyasthas He should also make arrangements for the administration of justice both civil and criminal (Chs. 227, 253) The Purāna mentions the

eighteen heads of law and the eight limbs of justice (aṣṭa nga) We have passages on the various heads of adjudica tion. We find rules of taking evidence and the mention of ordeals. Some passages bear upon the rights of labourers and the law of usuary (Ch 253) Lastly, the Purāna echoes the traditional idea that if the king failed to find out the thief, he was to make good the loss of his subjects caused by thieves from his own treasury (Ch 253-262) which is an echo of the view of the Arthasastia. In criminal law barbarous punishments are found mentioned in the work (Ch 227)

Discussing taxation the Purana extols the importance of Koşa or treasury and points out that everything depends upon money The items of taxation are mentioned but Brahmanas are exempted from all payments Duty on crticles of commerce was to be leived so as to keep some profits to merchants (Ch 223) Mines were not to be exhausted recklessly Laws to regulate the dealings of merchants and traders are found (Ch 258) The adultara tion of foodstuffs dishonesty in commercial dealings the use of false weights are to be severely punished. The regu lation of profits and prices is enjoined in strong terms and is regarded as one of the primary duties of the king Cornering or unduc raising of prices was to be sternly checked (Ch 258) All these clearly show the influence of the Arthusastra The Purant, then mentions the Vyasanas of a kingdom and like the Arthasastra it makes a distinc tion between Daira and Manusa Vyasi nas In connec tion with the first it mentions the catastrophes crused by fire water flood disease famine and pestilence. The chief

Vyasanas, according to the Purāna, are Rājyavyasana, Mantrivyasana, Sāmantavyasana, Kosavyasana, Dandavyasana, Rāstiavyasana, Durgavyasana and Balavyasana It calls upon kings to remedy evils of all kinds by their exertions

In regard to war and foreign policy, the Purāna contains some information. The army with its five sections (Maula, Bhrtaka, Śrenī, Suhrit, Ātavika) must be well-organised while various kinds of forts are to be built. The various kinds of Vyūhas, as well as the way of dealing with an enemy are mentioned in detail. In all these matters we find the influence of the Arthaśāstra and the later Nīti literature. Weapons are mentioned while much attention is devoted to signs, portents, mantras and magical rites to ensure victory. In all these we find a great influence of astrology and a belief in signs and portents.

The Purāna mentions the Mandala and gives us the traditional means of self-preservation and conquest (Ch 244) The four kinds of diplomatic emmisaries (e.g. Dūta, Nisrstārtha, Mitartha, Śāsanāharaka) are enumerated as well as sixteen kinds of treaties. It mentions the different aspects of state relations and gives directions as to the best ways of gaining success (Ch 244). There is nothing new in these matters

As in most works on the art of government, we find various other topics, namely, the building of towns and forts, notes on agriculture and manufing, dissertations on gems and metals, and other allied topics

Jain Purānas—Many of the cosmological ideas found in the Purānas find place in Jain Purānas modelled on their

Hindu counterparts The Jains postulate a number of creation cycles and presuppose an ideal state of nature in the beginning of creation. The earliest age was an age of plenty, virtue and immortality when all the wants of man kınd were supplied by the Kalpa Vrkşas In course of time according to the Adipulana these blessings became fewer and people elected Pratisruti as the first Kulakara or patri aich Gradually the Kalpa trees became fewer and men s troubles became greater and at last the trees of gift disappeared Social changes were introduced at the instance of successive patriarchs. Men's lives became artificial and instead of being above wants they had to exploit the earth Rsave deva the last patriarch divided men into three castes (Keatriyas Vaisyas and Sūdras) and established six occu Social life sprang up towns and villages were built and as society became more and more complex, the principle of chastisement for wrong doing was promulgated and Political existence came into being

In the Jain Puranas the theory of castes is rather different though modelled on that of the Purusa Sūkta Brāhmanas are admitted as forming a separate caste but the real Brāhmana was one endowed with the highest qualities of a Jina. In the Uttara Purāna, there is nothing new. The Harivensa ascribes everything to Rsabha deva. In the Laghu Arthaniti, the Jaina scholar Hemacandra inculcated upon the duties and obligation of kings. There is nothing new in it and only contemporary Hindu ideas find expression in it.

The Smrtis and Aibandhas - In the later Smrtis and Nibandhas we find practically a continuance of old ideals

Brhaspati has nothing new to say on the duties and obligations of kings, though his contributions to various branches of civil and commercial law, especially the law relating to corporations, guilds and joint-stock companies cannot be minimised

Kātyāyana, though devoting the greatest part of his treatise to Vyavahāra or civil law, has little to say on the art of government But a few of the verses attributed to him are of great importance. In these he eulogises the great service of kings to their subjects. The king was but the god Indra incarnating as a man for the good of humanity ( सुराध्यज्ञथ्यतः स्वर्गत् उपस्पेण तिष्ठति ).

His primary duties were, according to Kātyāyana, the protection of subjects and the chastisement of wrong-doers He was to maintain the widow, the orphan and the aged without means. According to the law-giver the king was the parens-patrae of his subjects, per excellence being the "home of the hemeless, the protector of those without protection, the son of the son-less and the father of the fatherless". Cf

त्र्यनाथस्य नृपो नायस्त्वगृहस्य नृपो गृहम् । त्र्यपुत्रस्य नृप पुत्रो ह्यपितु पार्थिव पिता ॥

In lieu of this great social service the king was entitled to the usufructus of a sixth part of the produce of his subjects' fields in addition to other cesses and dues. He who did his duties properly was entitled to all this in lieu of his protection, but a king who failed to discharge his duties properly was a sinner (Appendix I to Katyāyanamata-samgraha by the present author). Cf

भूस्तामी तु स्मृतो राजा नान्यद्रव्यस्य सर्वदा । वतःफलस्य हि पङ्मागं आन्तुयान्नान्ययैन तु ॥ भूतानां विन्तवासिसात् स्वामित्वं तेन कोर्तितम् । वत्रिक्वा वित्वपृद्धभागम् शुभाशुभनिमित्तमम् ॥ भ्रम्यायेन हि यो राष्ट्रात् करं ववड च पावितः । शस्यमार्गं च शुरुकं वाप्याददोतः स पापभावः॥

Narada gives us the traditional account of the origin of He harps on the evils gaining ground in the royalty world on account of the lapse of primeval Dharma and the eternal conflict of men After describing the evils of Matsya-nyaya, he points out that to save society from such troubles the king holds the rod of chastisement (Danda dhara) and he alone among men was the lord of himself (Asvatantra) The right of ruling his subjects was acquir ed by the king by his tapas (tapah Lritah praja rajāā) He represented the prerogatives of the five great gods ie Agni Indra Soma Yama and Dhanada Protection of subjects was his primary duty (tasua dharmah praja raksa) and this protection of subjects entitled him to exact taxes which were but his wages (baith sa tasya vihitah praja palana vetanam)

Paräsara—There are other legal treatises but unfortunately most of these books are fragmentary and they devote most of their attention to Acara and Präyascitta. The Paräsara Smrti has very little to say on the political ideals or the administrative system. It deals mainly with Acara Ascuca, the duties of castes and their privileges.

The works of Vyasa and Sankha Likhita are fragmentary. The views of these are quoted by Nibandha writers but there is very little information as to political life.

After these metrical Smrties we have a large number of legal commentaries and Nibandhas which continue the old tradition together with later modifications and changes which are justified and supported by quotations from old texts including many from the puranas and upa-puranas We have a large number of commentators on the Manu Samhitā of whom the more important are Govindarāja, Medhātithi and Kulluka Of the commentators of Yājñavalkya, the most important name is that of Vijñāneśvara whose Mitāksarā which has exeicised a very great influence upon the later course of Hindu civil law and its authority is recognised to-day almost over the whole of India by British courts The commentary of Apararka, a Konkan prince of the 12th century is also worthy of note The commentary Mitāksarā has in its turn been commented upon and the Bālambhatta Tıkā shows a great legal acumen. The commentary of Asahāya on tha Nārada Smriti is an old work while we have a commentary, the Varjayanti, on the Visnu Smrti, composed in the 17th century In course of time, many more such commentaries have been written

The Nibandhas were composed for the guidance of later princes, judges and administrators. Of these Nibandhas, the more important are the Parāśara Mādhavya attributed to Mādhavācārya of Vijayanagar (14th century), that of Jimūtabāhana whose Dāyabhāga is of great authority in Bengal, Smrticandrikā of Devana Bhattā, the Viramitrodaya, a huge encyclopedia, of which portions are devoted to law and politics, attributed to Mitramiśra, the volumes attributed to Candeśvara, Vācaspati Misra

and Raghunandana of Bengal as well as the Vyabahāra mayukha and the Nirnayasındhu have exercised a great influence upon the later law courts and judicial adminis tration In all these Nibandhas we have the old tradi tion in law and politics continued with some modifications Everywhere, we find the kings authority extolled and his duty of maintaining his subjects and administering justice impartially are repeatedly laid down authority was unquestioned and there were no checks to his absolutism But though everywhere we find the steriotyped political life yet, works like the Rajanitiprakasu attributed to Mitramiéra draw our attention to the tradi tions and practices on the Vedic and Brahmanic age Already something has been said about the views of Mitra misia on the accession and coronation of the king (See page 204 part II) He gives a prominent place to the king's coronation oath

Nibandhas as well as handbooks on the art of government continued to be composed during very late periods A minister of the Nizam shahi ruler of Ahmednagar wrote the Nrisinha prasada in the 16th century while as late as the 19th century a work the Vivadarnava setu was composed by ten pandits of the court of Maharaja Ranjii Singh of Lahore A prince of Panna patronised a pandit to publish a work of similar nature

Ι

## Political Decline and Fall

Having traced the different phases of social and political evolution in India, we now pass on to the history of the decline and fall of Hindu political life. Even to the last days of Hindu independence, the intellectual activity of the people remained undisturbed, but this could not arrest the impending political decay which ended with the conquest of India by the Mussalmans As we have already indicated, perpetual disunion, the decay of the genius of consolidation, contempt for political unity and the predominance of clan or dynastic interest weakened the political structure in India From the 7th century, the menace of victorious Islam became apparent, but still no great ruler appeared to unify the peoples of India under one sceptre The reign of Harsa saw the conquest of the Mekran coast and the first Arab raids western coast of India About half a century later, Siná passed to the Muslim invaders, welcomed and assisted by The progress of Islam was retarded the local Buddhists for a time by a number of causes and circumstances but within two centuries the Turks of Ghazni, established on the north-western frontier, took up the task of conquering India The genius of Mahmud annexed the Punjab and sent a thrill of horror throughout Hindustan by his lightning raids Further progress eastward was retarded for some time on account of the weakness of the Ghaznivi tes themselves but a century and a half later the task of conquering Hindustan was taken up by the sultans of Ghor Resisted by the Rajput rulers of Northern India for a time the Ghori succeeded in setting one Raiput prince against another, and when the Cahamana Prihviraja was slain at the second battle of Tarain the flood gates of Islamic conquest were opened for ever and the tide of conquest swept over the whole of northern India The Turki sultanate of Delhi was established and under these vigorous Turki rulers Islamic rule was consolidated practically all over northern India The Deccan and the south resisted for about a century but with Alauddin Khilji and Muhammad Tughlak all the rich vet enervated monnichies succumbed to the attacks of the Turki armies

## Political Downfall and its Causes

The causes of Indian downfall have been explored by many historians. Some have attributed it merely to the disintegrating influence of caste, some to the over-influence of religion and asceticism, some to the inherent weakness of the Hindu character as well as the enervation, both of body and mind arising out of a damp climate, some to the conflict of religions

The subject is a complicated one and requires a careful analysis Apparently, political disunion, savage internecine feuds and horrible reprisals on all sides had gone on for centuries and undermined the political frame of India But the ground for disunion had been prepared by various causes and circumstances From the earliest times. the desire for unification, social and political, and the establishment of homogeneity at all costs had been absolutely lacking The jar of racial differences, and the conflict of antagonistic social ideals had all but contributed to a temporary settlement of divergences by means of compromases The older type of imperialism aimed merely at hegemony and not the consolidation of one central political authority In social and religious matters the same spirit of compromise predominated Hence, there was an inherent looseness characterising both social and political fabric Later social complexities and religious upheavals had added or contributed to this From the 6th century B C the advent of strong imperialist statesmen and the teachers of the Arthaśastra school, contributed to the holding up of the

ideal of a strongly centralised secular state as well as the establishment of an all India empire The Mauryas succeeded in uniting the whole country under their sceptre but the repentance and the pacificism of Asoka undermined the fabric of the Imperial structure and his religious propa ganda all but annihilated it This brought about a foreign domination for three centuries and when there was a resuscitation of the Hindu powers the idea of an all India empire was never revived. As pointed out al ready. India came to be divided into a large number of political divisions each dominated by a strong suzerain power In course of time the number of such states multiplied and on the eve of the Mahomedan conquest the clannish patri otism of the Rajputs did more harm than good to the country Thus India lost her political unity and became a mere geographical expression'

The spirit of local separatism became stronger every day. The number of petty dynasties multiplied and a feudal organisation dominated all the principalities. As pointed out already, the people ceased to take an active part in politics and the history of the period was simply the history of short lived dynasties fighting for supremacy. Everything was left to the kings and to the masses were relegated the duty of producing the necessaries of life paying tribute to their masters and of obeying their commands implicitly. Whatever other activities they had were confined to their own co-operative undertakings in the village communities, the guilds and the municipalities. These liberties in their turn undermined the power and authority of the kings and the idea of political soft

darity practically disappeared from the country The demoralisation and apathy of the people is apparent from the narratives of Muslim historians who describe how the cavalry raids of Mahmud were absolutely unopposed and mark the apathy of the people in general The work of defence had been monopolised by kings and the people were not only apathetic but remained absolutely powerless to resist the march of an enemy either Indian or foreign Indian princes too, had become so devoid of moral and political sense that far from uniting against the common enemy, most of them thought it expedient to ensure their safety by forming alliances with extra-Indian powers whose main objective was to complete the subjugation of the country at the earliest opportunity \* Some princes indeed, like Visāladeva Cāhamāna or the Gāhadavāla Govinda made sporadic efforts to stem the tide of foreign invasion, but they never thought of making a common and united stand against the early Muslim invaders

Political downfall was hastened by intellectual decay as well as social and religious demoralisation. The vigour of the Indian intellect had long been undermined. The ramification of caste, the multiplication of sub-castes and the growth of mutual jealousies among caste-people destroyed the idea of a social whole which had been built up out of diverse ethnic elements. The idea of haimony was displaced by discord. Too much of a strong ban was laid on interdining and intermairiage. The Varnas ceased to exist and castes came to existence. Perhaps the narrow

<sup>\*</sup> The alliance of the Rüstrakütas with the Arabs and the possible alliance between the Rithors of Kanauj with the Ghori are worthy of note

communalism of the aboriginal tribes and class invaded the social ideas of the ruling element. Each caste again, was subjected to the minutest subdivision on the principle of difference in occupation, in religious belief and through difference in domicile and in course of time each one of these castes and sub-castes became an air tight compartment

There was a decay in religion and this was closely associated with intellectual demoralisation metaphysical principles or the real teachings underlying the ethical codes promulgated by host of religious teachers failed to impress the Indian mind which delighted only in concrete images or in the rigorous obedience to for The shadow came to be worshipped malities and rites while the substance was lost sight of Philosophy failed to impress the mass mind and ritualism obtained complete Philosophers in their turn came into conflict amongst themselves and in the midst of the polemics of words and the conflicts of ideas the first and fundamental principles were forgotten. The attempt at definition and interpretation gave rise to further divergencies umong the philosophers and thinkers themselves and these in their turn helped the rise of numerous sects which distinguished themselves by their animosity to each other that for ordinary people there remained no other alternative but to find pleasure in gorgeous rituals and meaningless observances transmitted to them by their force fathers and of which the meaning was neither known nor even regarded worthy of being enquired into

Symbolism also invaded religion and along with sym

bolism came in a host of newer deities, with newer rites and practices, some evolved out of those of old, while the rest were borrowed from the primitive peoples or even the foreigners with whom the people came into contact numerable deitics were conceived form the different forces and aspects of nature with newer modes of worshipping them Forms and images multiplied, everyday new rituals were invented and as these became more and more elaborate, religion lost its simplicity and faith its importance as the basic principle of religion Evergrowing eclecticism maintained, the spirit of toleration and harmony, but the spirit of outer concord could not dispel the discord within the minds of men Worship itself was invaded rites, and anthropomorphism carried with gorgeous to excess made room for ritualistic degradation and introduction of obscene practices The truth of these remarks is apparent from the history of Buddhism. The philosophy of Buddha was hardly understood and even in the First Buddhist Convention we find differences arising out of flimsy points of ritual Buddhism divided in time into innumerable schools and with the rise of Mahāyāna, the early tenets of Buddha were forgotten Buddha himself was transformed into a God and the Mahāyānists conceived the omnipotent Bodhisattvas These again were transformed into gods and innumerable deities male and temale came to receive the worship from the votaries of a religion which had originally no scope for image worship or the veneration of idols. The different schools fought with bitterness while the masses sank lower and lower down in idolatory and obscene religious practices.

The same was also true of Hinduism. The Bhakk cult inculcated the idea of a personal God to be appeased by the votary by means of worship. These gods again became many and each one of them gave rise to innumerable forms through diversities of conception in its various aspects. The worship of these became popular and held out hopes of the future to the devotees. But soon this elaborate pan theon and the maze of the more elaborate ritual killed the spirit out of man's minds. The religious sects split up into sub-sects and these again became numerous and hostile to each other.

Along with the rise of this new religion, the ethical codes were also modified The Smrtis inculcated the value of acara in human life and by means of Irthaiadas harped on the hopes and fears of mankind to have these codes rigidly obeyed Bodily purity became the key note to this ethical code and as such the minutest regulations originally unknown of food, touch and association were laid down The principle of rationality was masked by a faith in the rigid code of taboos and prohibitions Foreigners were looked down upon contact with them became an abomination and sea voyages were prohibited Puranas while they did much to enlighten the masses socially and intellectually became the repository of this reactionary legislation The sudra came to be denounced in opprobrious terms women were socially and intellectunlly degraded while the lowest eastes were relegated a position worse than that of animals or beasts of burden And this stands in strange contrast with the time honoured tradition of India 1 people which worshipped the delty

in the female form, denounced womanhood in opprobrious terms, and while pantheistic philosophy delighted in regarding everything animate as the incarnation and manifestation of the superb all-pervading *Brahman*, its votaries struggled hard to be conscious that men were degraded by their contact with their socially degraded fellowmen!

Such being the prevailing mentality of the day, the priesthood also sank low in the intellectual scale Brahmin ceased to be the philosopher and became the slave of society, the guardian and protector of a code of life divorced from reason and morality At the same time time, the Hindu mind delighted in feeding upon its own excellence and the depravity of the rest of the world Minutest regulations bound him down and these became obstacles to the continuance of a progressive life The people became averse to changes and worshipped the past The spirit of progress and nationalism was killed Life was characterised by the rigid standard of rigour and artificiality and extreme aversion to change Many of the religions of the later period emphasised those principles of life which weakened the physical frame and enervated the mind Pacifism killed the ardour for war or national resistance The extreme regard for life emphasised by Jainism made life almost impossible The  $Ahims\bar{a}$  and Dharma of Asoka had laid prostrate India at the feet of the Greeks, Parthians and other semi-savage foreign races The religious zeal of Harsa, the Neo-Aśoka of the seventh century, did practically the same thing Later Vaisnavism manifested the same tendencies and brought almost the same consequences introduced a pacfism which in course of time tended

towards masochism. Man entirely at the mercy of the deity lost sight of active duties and craved for dissolution which became that only goal of life. Decayed Buddhism with its commixture of Tantric rites displayed worse tendencies. The nihilism of Buddha, too high for ordinary men and offering no hopes for the future gave place to a meaningless maze of obscene ritual but lacking in faith or reason as its foundation. The meaningless monasticism at away the vitals of individual life and wrecked the morals of society. On many an occasion the monks displayed hostility to the political authority. Sometimes they made common cause with the foreign enemy and if we are to believe the testimony of foreign historians, they weakened the defence of the country by inviting foreign enemies.\*

According to Mislim in toriana Muhammal ibn haim was halped by the Buddhi ta of Sind in his expedition again the Dahir According to Tayanath the Buddhi talay da undar jart during the invasion of Manadha by the Muslim (Tayanath—Translated by Schlein rach NNNI The Buddhi to not are learned as the rue engar of the Turu has)

### III

## Muslim State System

Established in India the Mussalmans themselves became subject to the influence of the same forces which had influenced the Hindus Within a century and a half, Islamic India became a medley of independent sultanates fighting against each other. It is curious to note how some of these states practically occupied the same location and geographical position as their predecessors in Hindu India, during the age of disruption preceding Muslim conquest Thus, Gujrat which had remained under the Caulukyas, became a Muslim sultanate, similarly, Malwa of the Paramāras became an independent Muslim kingdom In the east, Bengal separated itself under a Muslim dynasty and in eastern Hindustan, the Sarki sultanate of Jaunpore, very nearly corresponded to the Gāhadavāla In the Deccan, the region occupied by the Cālukyas and the Rāstrakūtas became the seat of the Bahmani kingdom, while in the extreme south, a Hindu national resurrection laid the foundations of the Vijayanagar kingdom established over the region, once dominated by the Pallavas and the Colas

In the midst of an almost continuous war, the Hindus showed remarkable tenacity. For more than five centuries the onslaught of Islamic arms before which all other powerful monarchies had succumbed without a semblance of resistance failed to make a permanent impression upon the country. The Hindu resisted tenaciously during these

five centuries and even though subjugated, took the earliest opportunity of asserting himself politically. He succeed ed not only in preserving his hoary culture but also in sweeping back the tide of Islamic domination whenever opportunities presented themselves. The wonderful vita lity of the race and its unflinching tenacity to its own cul ture and tradition showed itself never more gloriously than during the period of struggle for existence. Throughout the whole of this period, we never find a continuous epoch of submission on the part of the conquered and no century passes without a movement for resurrection and political assertion in one part of the country or the other. The resis tance of the Hindu and his tenacity was wonderful like that of a modern entrenched camp which shows new front -when the first lines and outworks are battered In each century we find national wars of resurrection. In the 13th century the whole of central and southern India together with states like Orissa and scattered principalities in the north still maintained their independence. In the 14th within a few years of Muhammad Tughlak's conquests the princes of Vijayanagar had flung back the side of Turki conquest and had laid the foundations of a mights monarchy which checked further Islamic conquest in the south for more than two centuries. Similar was the case with Rajpufana where the rulers of Mewar had not only asserted then own independence but were successfully resisting and conquering the Muslim sultans of the neigh bourhood In the 16th century the Mewar Prince Sanga was bold enough to make a bid for the restoration of the Hindu empiro

The failure of Sanga and the weakness of the Turko-Afghans gave a chance to a new line of Turks under Babar to found a new Muslim dynasty. Devoid of bigotry\* and lacking the ferocity of the Turks of previous ages Babar brought with him the dream of a great empire. Unsuccessful though his son was to realise the ambition of his father, it was reserved for his grandson, the illustrious Akbar, to translate into action the dreams and ideals which had already manifested themselves in the activities of the early Mughals as well as of Sher Shah

<sup>\*</sup> Babar's recently discovered edict of toleration is worthy of note

### Hindu Muslim Rapprochement

The war for re-surrection was continued throughout the long centuries of Muhammadan domination and its last phase was attained during the 17th century and even the 18th which saw the decline of Mughal rule and the advent of the English later on destined to be the sole politi cal power in the country. But in the midst of these strug gles while the extreme champions of Islam were engaged in fighting the staunchest of votaries of Hindu social and political regeneration, a remarkable movement was going on for the establishment of a rapprochement between the two communities. In the course of time, the fcrocity of the Turki character which knew no mercy for the enemy even when he was a co religionist or a kinsman softened down and the influence of Indian climate as well as social teach ings made them almost Indianised Among Hindus too there appeared teachers and saints who wished to divert the at tention of men from the arena of political conflict to the path of peace amity and good will. The deity was one they said the Allah of the Muslims was none else than the Viana and Siva of the Hindus Salvation was obtainable through faith in the sole omnipotent Almighty whose children the Hindu and the Muslim were Bigotry stood in the path of man's prosperity in this life as well as bliss and beatitude in life after death. Taith was the real essence of religion and not a fanatical devotion to the rituals prescribed in the rival religious systems and emphasised by fanatical priests on both sides

From the 14th century, such teachers made their appearance in the country and preached their ideas. Among the Hindu teachers of note was Ramananda who scrupled not to preach his religion to the untouchable or to the Muslim. One of this disciples was Kabir, by birth a Julah and a staunch votary of Visnu. The next great figure was Baba Nanak who was acclaimed as a Guru of the Hindus as well as a Pin of the Mussalmans. The same tenets were disseminated by Sti-Caitanya, the Vaisnava teacher of Bengal. In the Decean and in the south, many more such teachers were multiplied and they did much to calm down the ferocity and fanaticism of the extremists of both the communities.

Among Muslims, there appeared a host of such teachers -bona fide Muslims, not Indian converts The verses of Sufis like Sanai of Ghazna, Nizami, Attar of Nisapur, of Jalaluddın Rumı, Sadı, Hafiz, Mır Dard of Delhı, of Amır Khasiu and of Ibiahim Jaisi became popular and are still sung by Hindus and Muslims alike Rasa Khan's Savaiyas are still chanted in Vaisnava temples The catholicity of Ghalib of Delhi who would bury the Hindu at Ka'ba and cremate the Muslim at Benares, reflected the same mentality of toleration, amity and good will To add to this, every student of Hindi literature is aware of the vast number of Muslim Vaisnava poets Among the Bengali Vaisnavas, the following names are remarkable—e g Nasır Mahmud, Murtaza, Alawal, Alı Raja, Shah Akbar and Said Sultan In Bengal, Muslims patronised Bengali literature, composed songs and verses in honour of the Divine Mother, and the process is still going on The process is not only remarkable but is characteristic of the mentality produced and fostered only in the soil of India

This spirit of toleration led to a full in the fighting and religious animosity was henceforth banished from the Muslim princes too became champions of tolera tion Even Alauddin Khilji, denounced as a ferocious tyrant by the contemporary Muslim historians, recognised that religion had nothing to do with the business of the state but was something which concerned the soul of the private The last line of Turki dynasties showed remarkable toleration, and Babar's grandson though he began and ended as a staunch Muslim went so far as to adopt Hindu manners and customs and devised the Din Ilahi the true religion intended for both the Hindu and the Musalman subjects. His son Jahangir followed the foot-steps of his father and there was calm in India for a considerable period. Then a number of causes and circum stances led to the renewal of the war of Hindu ressurrec tion in the first half of the seventeenth century and in the midst of this there were reprisals on both sides which led to the downfall of the great Mughal empire Even before the accession of Aurungzeb, denounced as a bigot by many historians the Sikhs in the Punjab led by Har Covind defeated Imperial armies while Shivaji raised the stand ard of revolt in the Decean In course of this war there were animosities and hatreds revived and during the period of conflict the tolerant spirit departed from the The whole of India remained in land for a while commotion for more than a century and in course of this a number of Hindu states asserted their independence

and showed once more the remarkable vitality of the Hindu race in politics.

The Hindus became active everywhere. The Rajputs resented the reimposition of the Jiziya and threw off the allegiance to the Mughals The Jats repeatedly devastated the region near the capital and ultimately founded a small principality of their own. In the Deccan, the illustrious Shivaji (inspired by the great Rāmdas) and his successors laid the foundations of a Hindu state (modelled on the directions of the writers on polity during the close of the Hindu period) in course of the first half of the 18th century The Marathas became powerful enough to think of a restored Hindu empire. But the weakness of the central authority, the separatist tendency of the feudatories and office-bearers and the lack of the spirit of consolidation led to the final break-up and the downfall of the so-called Maharatta confederacy, which in its hey-day stretched almost from the foot of the Himalayan hills to the  $Krishnar{a}$  and the  $Tungabhadrar{a}$ 

The Gurkhas became active in the region of the Himalayan hills but their further expansion was checked by the rising British power. In the Punjab, which had for nearly a century been converted into the battle ground of foreign invaders, the disciples of Guru Govind made a bid for the establishment of a theocratic commonwealth. Perhaps there was an atavy of the old republican tradition among the Jats and the local tribes which had remained submerged for so many centuries. But this theocratic tendency could not maintain itself for long and the Misl leaders fought

amongst themselves for personal supremacy. The genius of Ranjit Singh succeeded in welding these divergent elements into a strong monarchy in which communal hatred was almost eliminated, though feudal principles continued to work. With the death of this illustrious man the Sikh monarchy fell to the ground as a result of personal ambitions the lawlessness of the army and the intrigues of rival families. With the fall of the Marhatias and the Sikhs English supremacy was fully established

## Socio-Political Evolution of India

In course of a long period of evolution India came to be the centre of a distinct type of social and political life 'Communal freedom and harmony in the midst of diversity have been the marks of this civilization. In spite of racial divergences, linguistic differences and conflicting social and political ideals of the different sections of the community, a distinct cultural ideal came to be evolved and this gave a distinct stamp to the social and political life of India She became and still remains the home of a distinct civilisation Cultural harmony was the goal towards which all the conflicting ideas and ideal's converged The races were many, the languages were numerous, customs varied from province to province, consequently the social structure was a federated organisation in which there was a spirit of harmony which welded together these discordant elements There was a sort of fundamental unity in the midst of insuperable obstacles to homogeneity The seemingly heterogenous communities inhabiting the different corners of a big continent came to look upon themselves as members of a vast social fold. India was the homeland of this culture, and proved to be the geographical foundation of the civilization which stood by itself, self-continent and separated from other centres of culture The great mountains and rivers were held sacred by the Hindus of the different parts of the country Based on this sense

geographical unity, the people came to profess reli which though differing in ritualistic details had the same intellectual motif, the same of explanation regarding the universal system and almost the same method of approaching the deity with a view to obtain solace in this life and salvation in that beyond Thus in all the religious and philosophical systems we find the prime conception of the omniscient and omni potent Brahman, the acceptance of the doctrine of rebirth, the supreme importance of Karma, the excellence of Ahmsā and the recognition of Jilāna and Bhakti as the truest path of attaining salvation. In social life we had the acceptance of the federated organisation known as caste in spite of innumerable local differences and conflict of ideas In social matters, similarly, while local customs received the fullest recognition, the law givers coming from the remotest corners of the country all tended to accept a fundamental equitable principle through out the whole of the vast land In art aesthetics we find also the same conventions motifs and tendencies, though there existed local variations as well as provincial schools of building and architecture

In music also, there was the same thing The diverse melodies favoured by the peoples of the different provinces all came to be united into one system of harmony and music The names of ragas and raginis are suggestive

In art which was pre-emmently religious we have the same ideal at an and if In all the different school of archite ture the inlying idea at a list arrant ments are the same

Thus we have a large number of names derived from the different provinces of India.†

## Social Evolution

India being the centre of a distinct type of culture had her own social and political ideal evolved as a result of the influence of a peculiar environment together with the peculiarities of the social and political genius of her people

It has been the fashion with the western scholars to scoff at Indian political life, or to denounce the ideals which influenced her politics India had no political life nor was there any room for political speculation in the country,—has been the summing up of many western cri-Her life, according to them, was essentially spiritual and there was a supreme neglect of the material side of human existence. Such has been the view of the majority of the western historians, while Indian social organisation has received a greater amount of censure from They point out the existence of the caste system, themthe tyranny of the Brāhmanıc oligarchy, the subservience of the masses, the degradation of the womankind and last of all the existence of untouchability which deprives the lower classes of the status of manhood. This view is very often accepted without critical examination and the ave-

<sup>†</sup> Gandhara (from Gandhara) Mālava (from Malwā) Gurjara (from the Gurjara country), Kānāḍā (from Karnāta), Gauḍa (from Gauḍa), Jhijauti (from Jejākabhukti) Thus, while divergences remained pre-eminent a harmony in the midst of insuperable obstacles came to be evolved, and this has become the keynote and the soul of Indian life.

tage Hindu historian is compelled to swallow this ex parte judgment in good grace Obsessed as we are with the political supremacy of the west we hesitate to analyse this criticism at all and the average Hindu dares not raise his voice against the uncharitable criticism on the part of the western critic. More lamentable is another tendency which impels Indian scholars to glorify the past history of their country by making an attempt to read European institutions into our system During particular phases of Indian social and political evolution they are happy to find a parallelism and a similarity between the institu tions of India and those of the west but beyond that when the Indian scholar finds any dissimilarity or divergence he finds himself at a loss to explain it as the result of dif ferent forces and factors operating in his own country He straight on attempts to explain the diversities of Indian social and political life as something untoward and ab normal and hardly makes an attempt to explain their evolution as having been due to diversities in environment and the conflict of different racial elements. It has been the professed aim and objective of the writer to attempt a better and truer explanation of the diver sities we meet in India and to interpret them as the result of those peculiar factors which invariably modify the course of political and social life under different invironments. The value of environment as well as of the racial factor has received universal recognition to day Invironment moulds life and no one to day dare deny its proper place in social evolution. The racial factor has also been given ats proper place in life but while discussing

the political and social life in India these are entirely lost sight of and the judgment of the western critic comes first without an examination of the evidence at his disposal. Western ideas as well as western values guide us in our enquiry while out of fear and ridicule the true scientific method is entirely lost sight of

In India, social evolution proceeded on a line entirely different from that of Europe In the west, social life in its higher stage of development came to be associated with the idea of a social homogeneity based more or less on the principle of unity and equality within the communal structure Inequalities and diversities existed more or less in all centres of life These led to continual racial and social war within the fold of each community This war ended in the political superiority of one section of the population which either obliterated or socially assimilated the conquered people And even then there was no end to this racial war and the ideal of equality and homogenerty never became a reality In Rome, the Romans remained a privileged race of rulers from which subject peoples extorted Roman citizenship as a result of a series of sanguinary social wars Even at the end of these wars, the condition of the provincial was no more elevated than that of a slave In Greece, there was the fiction of equality and social homogeneity, yet in each city-state the ruling community was only a governing minority dominating a more numerous population of aliens, Metics and slaves Among the Jews, the chosen people of God there went on an eternal struggle with the Gentile and though for a time victorious Judaism attained a temporary ascendency 'the decline of the Jews reversed the whole state of The Jews themselves became a subject race while the hated Gentile and the foreigner became his master The lot of the Jew during the long centuries following the dispersal of the face is too well known to be repeated here Condemned to live in the Ghettos and hable to be plun dered and slaughtered at will the Jew has ever since continued a deplorable existence and his present persecution in central Europe gives the he to the European profession of justice and equality. In mediaeval and modern Europe social homogeneity came to be attained as a result of sanguinary wars and revolutions in course of which was evolved the doctrine of equality from sheer political necessity. The rise of the nation state, the value of the almost mechanised individual, solely guided by the interests of the state either for aggression or for self preservation, the importance attached to huge conscription armies where the uniform type of man easily combines his energies all contributed to favour the acceptance of the ideal of equality But political equality did not solve all the social questions and the true realisation of equality is vet to come as a result of further social evolution

Furthermore the profession of equality at home has not meant for the European peoples the grant of equality abroad. In their dealings with the coloured peoples and the aborigines in the African colonies we find an air of supremacy and a contempt for the conquered which is almost shocking. In almost all the extra European settlements of the white races the black brown or red have practically disappeared and where they still exist. They

are absolutely deprived of political rights and are allowed to live only in arid districts where they enjoy some quasicivic rights which have been conferred on them out of a sense of necessity

In India, on the contrary, we had from the beginning such an amount of diversity in the racial factor that the ideal of homogeneity became something out of the ques-The socio-ethnic difference between the Aryan and the Dravidian, between the Dravidian and the pre-Dravidian aborigines and between these aborigines and the paleolithic savages was so great that the idea of a homogeneus social structure could not be conceived at all. Race-prejudice which operated in the past and which operates so well even to-day in America, in South Africa, in recently conquered Abyssinia, and is so prominent in the dealings of the white peoples with the blacks, browns and yellows of the east and the south and which forms the key-note to the colonial policy of the white nations, asserted itself as one of the guiding factors in India war between the Arya and the Dasa took place in India as we know from the Vedic hymns. This continued for a considerable long period with terrible consequences for the defeated non-Aryans But gradually, a better understanding developed and humanistic principles, respect for human life, a policy of tolerance for the creed and customs of others which have only nominally made its but appearance in Europe during the past century and which have as yet failed to make any real impression, operated in India from early times As a result of this we find a tendency towards forming a social whole out of diverse and

conflicting elements The Hindu wanted harmony in the midst of conflicting elements and a federative social organisation was the only thing which could grow in the country and thereby put an end to the other alternative of race-war and the extermination of the conquered Such an organisation came into existence with hierarchical grades for diverse communities and with social duties and means of livelihood attached to each of them. In this way the principle of equality was sacrificed but in its place the lower orders received a guarantee for the protection of life and property and proper chances for the maintenance of This was in short the real explanation of what life Europeans call caste system the prejudices and idiosyn cracies associated with which call forth their sucer and perpetual ridicule

The so-called caste system thus came into existence as the result of a long social evolution extending over millenniums. It has undoubtedly its defects clusiveness of the communities at the top their tendency repel the lower orders and their hankering for political power together with the consequent disumon did great harm to the social fabric of India It stands even now in the way of that potent vet aggressive type of social organisation called nationalism. But with all these it was a practical and workable solution of a great problem which has gone on throughout history and is still going on all over the world namely the war of races and the sangur nary conflict of peoples always cuding with the obli teration of the weak and the uncivilised. It allowed the weaker races the right to live and to contribute to the

social whole of which they came to form a part, though it subordinated some of their interests to those of others . The ideal of equality has been the watch-word of European thinkers but, in practice, this profession of equality has failed to solve the fundamental problem The Hindu may be accused of prejudices and superstitions, of hatred and abhorence but he can never be arraigned on a charge of wilful extermination of the conquered aborigines, as has been the case in lands settled by the white races in course of the last three centuries \* And this is proved by the evidence of the history in India The most primitive races still survive here and still thrive with a vigorous and virile existence, whereas in the lands colonised by the white races they have all been wiped out of existence relics have found place in the museums, where they evoke merely an antiquarian interest and prove the truth of the law of survival of the fittest

In course of time the two higher castes, the Ksatriyas and the Brahmins became prominent in the sphere of social life. The Ksatriya attained power and position by his superiority in the exercise of arms with which he subjugated the rest of the community. The Brahmin gained the highest social position, by his intellectual superiority,

<sup>\*</sup> Such has been the case throughout the whole of the lands colonised by the white races in course of the last three centuries. America, North and South, was once densely populated by the Indian reds. But now the red race has been practically wiped out of existence in the north though several tribes survive in the south. The Australian Bushmen are disappearing fast, while the last surviving Tasman died a few years ago. The Maories of New Zeland have been reduced to a few thousands, while in Newfoundland and many of the Pacific Islands, the original races have all passed out of existence.

conflicting elements The Hindu wanted harmony in the midst of conflicting elements and a federative social organisation was the only thing which could grow in the country and thereby put an end to the other alternative of race war and the extermination of the conquered Such an organisation came into existence with hierarchical grades for diverse communities and with social duties and means of livelihood attached to each of them. In this way the principle of equality was sacrificed but in its place the lower orders received a guarantee for the protection of life and property and proper chances for the maintenance of life This was in short the real explanation of what Luiopeans call caste system the prejudices and idiosyn cracies associated with which call forth their sucer and nerpetual ridicule

The so-called caste system thus came into existence as the result of a long social evolution extending over millenniums. It has undoubtedly its defects. The exclusiveness of the communities at the top their tendency to repel the lower orders and their hankering for political power together with the consequent distinout did great harm to the social fabric of India. It stands even now in the way of that potent vet aggressive type of social organisation called nationalism. But with all these it was a practical and workable solution of a great problem which has gone on throughout history and is still going on all over the world namely the way of ruces and the sangulary conflict of peoples always ending with the obliteration of the weak and the uncivilised. It allowed the weaker races the right to live and to contribute to the

social whole of which they came to form a part, though it subordinated some of their interests to those of others The ideal of equality has been the watch-word of European thinkers but, in practice, this profession of equality has failed to solve the fundamental problem. The Hindu may be accused of prejudices and superstitions, of hatred and abhorence but he can never be arraigned on a charge of wilful extermination of the conquered aborigines, as has been the case in lands settled by the white races in course of the last three centuries ' And this is proved by the evidence of the history in India The most primitive races still survive here and still thrive with a vigorous and virile existence, whereas in the lands colonised by the white races they have all been wiped out of existence relics have found place in the museums, where they evoke merely an antiquarian interest and prove the truth of the law of survival of the fittest

In course of time the two higher castes, the Ksatriyas and the Brahmins became prominent in the sphere of social life. The Ksatriya attained power and position by his superiority in the exercise of arms with which he subjugated the rest of the community. The Brahmin gained the highest social position, by his intellectual superiority,

<sup>\*</sup> Such has been the case throughout the whole of the lands colonised by the white races in course of the last three centuries. America, North and South, was once densely populated by the Indian reds. But now the red race has been practically wiped out of existence in the north though several tribes survive in the south. The Australian Bushmen are disappearing fast, while the last surviving Tasman died a few years ago. The Maories of New Zeland have been reduced to a few thousands, while in Newfoundland and many of the Pacific Islands, the original races have all passed out of existence.

his mastery of the sciences and the arts as well as by his ministration to the spiritual needs of people. The rest of society was divided into two broad compartments one devoting itself to the production and distribution of the necessaries of life while the rest either engaged in production itself or made labour its chief means of live Social harmony and balance was attained by vesting with social pie eminence the Brühmana devoted to intellectual pursuits and wedded to a life of poverty Thus puting an end to the domination of the Ksatriya based on the successful exercise of physical force or of the Valsya deriving importance from his capitalist tyranny The evils of capitalism engaged the attention of the builders of society as well as of the law givers from very ealry times Even the Vedic hymns give us a picture of the evils arising out of unequal distribution and the tyranny of capitalists

Class War Averted —While this broad division into castes did much to solve the facial question the evils of class war were to some extent initigated by the creation of economic compartments within the caste groups and entrusting each one of these with a peculiar function and means of livelihood. Many of the castes and sub-castes were organised on the model of self-sufficient guilds in which the members enjoyed a position fairly compatible with their existence as individuals. Thus each caste group could maintain itself against the tyranny of others and at the same time maintain the economic prosperity of the country. Even to-day when the great revolution in industry has taken away the chance of existence from many

of the caste-groups they are still struggling against the modern conditions. Unemployment and destitution was checked and at the same time the guilds and unions within the caste groups protected themselves by their associations

The creation of a capitalistic aristocracy of optimates recruited from the rich men of all communities was also checked by allowing and preserving the accumulated wealth to remain in the different compartments. Hence a purely capitalistic domination which became a source of great social evil in most ancient communities was averted

Timocracy Checked - From time to time, adjustments and modifications were introduced with a view to putting a stop to the evils of unequal distribution or the evils arising out of capitalistic tyranny A denunciation of cappitalistic exploitation of the poor, unrestricted usury, or the cornering of food-stuffs soon made itself the key-note to the social policy of the lawgivers of the Dharmasūtra period, and it is also curious to note that unlike Greece, Rome and many other ancient societies, timocracy nevel became an accepted principle in Indian society. Never was the position of an individual determined in society or in political life by the amount of wealth possessed by him-On the contrary, as is well known to all students of Indian culture, the possession of wealth was the lowest of social criterion or value, the highest place being given to learning and intellectual eminence \*

<sup>\*</sup> Compare Manu Samhitā—II 136 वित्तं बन्धुर्वयः कर्म विद्या भवति पञ्चमी। एतानि मान्यस्थानानि गरीयो यदादुत्तरम्॥

### Caste organisation not rigid

The earliest social arrangements or the oldest assign ments of economic functions, did not last long but were modified in course of time. Invaders and emigrants from outside were admitted into the fold of the Hindu social system Even the aborrginal people as well as outcastes were gradually assigned a place in society and had their status elevated out of necessity The rules of endogamy or exogamy were not so rigid and thus there was an easy perio die self adjustment which satisfied the changing require ments of society Occupations were changed without diffi culty and the vigor of social life was not obstructed this did not last long and the epochs preceding the Muslim conquest as well as the period of Muslim domination saw the continuous working of these reactionary tendencies which culminated in the narrowing down of the intellectual outlook debasement of the spiritual ideal and the introduction of stagnation and rigidity in social matters. The conception of the semi rigid Varnas was displaced by that of air tight caste compartments which split up Indian society into a vast total of narrow communal groups existing only for themselves and utterly oblivious of the interests of that whole to which they belonged and to whose normal life they were to devote their energies. In the face of foreign invaders who menaced not only the political existence of the Indians but tried to subvert their social system the desire for self preservation, brought in a staunch belief in the past. The old flexibility disappeared and disintegration set in As stated already difference in occupation religion or domicile led to the ramification of this high total of caste

groups As the members of the different caste looked to their own narrow interests, this caste spirit well nightled to the disintegration of Indian society

# Absence of equality

In this type of social adjustment, the idea of equality was evidently absent or perhaps it was not a necessary factor at all, since there was the law of *Karma* which explained the causes of inequality—inequalities of birth, inequalities of social privilege, inequalities of economic prosperity and, last of all, in the amount of happiness enjoyed by different individuals. The belief in *Karma* and rebirth has been one of the psychological factors in the history of Indian culture. For, if personal ambitions, class hatred and other factors did not fail to contribute to social unrest, wars and revolutions, the masses as a whole remained content with their social lot and in the midst of the turmoils and vicissitudes which disturbed the peace of the country, such a contentment was a great boon to the people of India.

But it had its peculiar quota of evils Society in India tended towards a neutral equlibrium and socio-economic

<sup>\*</sup> Here something requires to be said bout the idea of equality in India Like Leibnitz, our Indian thinkers from the days of the Vedic hymns became more familiar with the absolute want of equality in nature, rather than with the contrary idea (which occasionally finds expression in the writings of a few religious writers). The Vedic seer clearly notes the inequality in nature and explains it rather beautifully—"the calves of the same mother differ in milk-bearing capacity—the fingers of a man's hand are not equal" (R V X 11). What impressed him most was that there existed a similarity in the desires and aspirations of men but as men or the circumstances in which they lived differed materially, their desires varied in quality and in quantity. So all Indian thinkers pleaded for equity, which was their watchword.

life to a sort of static sufficiency divested of movements or upheavals of classes. The result has been that in the midst of the vicissitudes of fortune. India while she retained her outward prosperity, lost to a great extent the impulse for progress. Consequently, she became weakened and during certain periods the spirit of advancement or progress was nullified altogether.

#### The Individual in Society -

As stated already the compartmental division of the community came to be strengthened by the assignment of social duties and means of livelihood munity or class with its peculiar duties assigned con tubuted to the normal working and welfare of the whole system, each functioning as the limbs of a living organism Society depended upon the co-operation of the classes and its happiness as well as that of each of these limbs depended upon the normal working of these latter. In a primitive but progressing society this type of organisation did much to prevent the growing class war and the domination of accumulated capital or the use of a capitalistic aristocracy. For the government and the proper working of the class limb regulative authority was vested partly in the individuels above him in the family and higher up in the class or the caste group. The customs and conventions of each received proper social

In burst the the to of equality pain decourt from patricular of the and from the fact that as it was did sile to more in the pot intuiting of more partial more in a fandar) for the oring pot into this was a rough technolog appraising the value of individual.

recognition and contributed to social solidarity. A certain amount of autonomy was thus vested in the different limbs of the social whole

Forming part of the autonomous limb, the individual was to devote his attention to his own self-realisation, consistent with the welfare of the whole of which he formed a part, namely, preservation of life, acquisition of the means for self-preservation and the advancement of the family interest, propagation of the family without detriment to the other members of the community, enjoyment of acquisitions and devotion to higher intellectual and spiritual pursuits. These aims, summed up as the Purusārthas or Caturvargas, defined the social and intel lectual limits of the individual The individual was looked upon by the law-givers as the primary unit and basis of social life, the foundation of material welfare and the soul of organised existence. As the well-being of society depended on his activity and co-operation, and the maintenance of the social order, the highest emphasis was laid upon it and the maintenance of this order was regarded or looked upon the primary function of the rulers of society

Subject to limitations, the individual enjoyed a requisite amount of freedom to mould his own destinies and to work out his salvation. But this freedom was not unrestricted and was far from the modern concept of liberty. The Hindu was obsessed with the idea of a 'natural' order and could not think of any material aberration from the accepted canon and conventions of life. In his eyes, the freedom enjoyed by the individuals was merely the free-

dom of movement compatible with the normal working of the social order and vested in him along with his social functions and duties

The greatest possible emphasis was laid upon the in dividual and in India the individual received a higher recognition than in any primitive or mediaeval society The concept of the individual and his rights was subjective and not objective. The individual in India was not a more means but an end in himself. The maker of his own destiny solely responsible for the ments and dements of his own in this life and in that beyond he was an end in himself. Almost all the great teachers made the greatest efforts to have the individuals perfected. The govern mental organisations guaranteed his life and promoted his earthly interests. Subject to the social regulations he was to make efforts for the fruition of his moral intellectual and spiritual aims Moral duties and spiritual obligations other than those enforced by the state were assigned to him He was to contribute his social moral and spiritual quoti to the well being of humanity in general by attaining men tal and moral discipline by procreating and maintaining a family and spiritually anying on the sacred studies

Beyond these dutic imposed on him by 11 was free No h " menstrate or th a sthesa sense ing dewie his i

h muching white where

and partly self inc he individual VOR ate or de nie hi

by lay

also assigned a high place to the spiritual element in life Such was the social outlook with regard to the individual, and this was rather peculiar to India

Women —In the peculiar socio-economic system, the position of women was very high—perhaps higher than that enjoyed by the fair sex elsewhere in the ancient and mediaeval world. In the Vedic age, women were equals of their bicthren, for we find them carrying on higher intellectual pursuits, participating equally in sacrifices along with their husbands and exercising supremacy in their households. India excepted, no other country in the ancient world assigned to women so high a place in social and intellectual life.

This continued uptil the latest days of the Vedic and Epic period and even during the age which saw the composition of the canonical literature of the Buddhists—But after that, there was a reaction which was ushered in by the premature mass movements of the succeding period and the evil effects as well as the unsocial tendencies of monachism, which well-nigh assailed the foundations of social existence or the peace and happiness of conjugal life.

The reaction led to a constant harping on the evils of women's freedom and the consequences arising out of it Women came to be looked down upon as naturally deficient in intellectual powers and also liable to be swayed by evil examples. Hence laws were made to retain them under tutelage and they lost many of their social rights—e.g. the freedom to carry on intellectual pursuits of the right to own property in their own right. Perhaps during the age of re-

dom of movement compatible with the normal working of the social order and vested in him along with his social functions and duties

The greatest possible emphasis was laid upon the in dividual and in India the individual received a higher recognition than in any primitive or medineval society The concept of the individual and his rights was subjective and not objective. The individual in India was not a mere means but an end in himself. The maker of his own destiny solely responsible for the ments and dements of his own in this life and in that beyond he was an end in Almost all the great teachers made the greatest efforts to have the individuals perfected. The govern mental organisations guaranteed his life and promoted his earthly interests. Subject to the social regulations he was to make efforts for the fruition of his moral intellectual and spiritual aims Moral duties and spiritual obligations other than those enforced by the state were assigned to him He was to contribute his social moral and spiritual quota to the well being of humanity in general by attaining men tal and moral discipline by procreating and maintaining a family and spiritually by carrying on the sacred studies

Beyond these duties partly self incurred and partly imposed on him by the social convention the individual was free. No king no state was to demarcate or demonstrate or dictate to him his mode of existence his aesthetic sense or the path of his spiritual progress by laying down his religious creel and forcing him to accept it by punishing its violation. And this is remarkable in a country where the people were not only religious but

also assigned a high place to the spiritual element in life Such was the social outlook with regard to the individual, and this was rather peculiar to India

Women —In the peculiar socio-economic system, the position of women was very high—perhaps higher than that enjoyed by the fair sex elsewhere in the ancient and mediaeval world. In the Vedic age, women were equals of their brethren, for we find them carrying on higher intellectual pursuits, participating equally in sacrifices along with their husbands and exercising supremacy in their households. India excepted, no other country in the ancient world assigned to women so high a place in social and intellectual life.

This continued uptil the latest days of the Vedic and Epic period and even during the age which saw the composition of the canonical literature of the Buddhists—But after that, there was a reaction which was ushered in by the premature mass movements of the succeeding period and the evil effects as well as the unsocial tendencies of monachism, which well-nigh assailed the foundations of social existence or the peace and happiness of conjugal life.

The reaction led to a constant harping on the evils of women's freedom and the consequences arising out of it Women came to be looked down upon as naturally deficient in intellectual powers and also hable to be swayed by evil examples. Hence laws were made to retain them under tutelage and they lost many of their social rights—e.g. the freedom to carry on intellectual pursuits or the right to own property in their own right. Perhaps during the age of re-

- ca-Roman ideal of perpetual tutelage of THE CARREST the social sentiments which are re = we pages of the Manava Dharmasastra and - \_\_\_ c adincations (See Supra II pp 129) ---- of the vestiges of their rights and privi Women continued to hold property in - -- and there was hardly any bar to their 1 In -gal office or the exercise of regal functions u un an have been pointed out already Same -Existing a de by side with this social LUI MILLERIANTE almost co-existent functions - . Lencing in Tall as regulating the energies of . - And the sea e organisation ्र अस्ति व एटेंग्रास्त्र of the state is lacking in - Com at a curilya seems to emphasise the ८ १४ १ ३ उस्सदि राज्ये स्पारमा गीवीन्यव कि तसीत") t at a 18 merent atom of in it. In their no sale into some a service habited by a com the said to suggest of mantament lite and property the state of the state of the control of man's male . There is the first concept of the state was rather , a way want t lacked the technical precision or is an imposed as undere writers. As the social out (1) - the confine private and except did not stand for in a three work dracture, the early concept of We are the part all out racing It lacked the nar a the sure of the object of the

state, as we have pointed out already, and as we shall discuss later on in detail, was primarily to pave the way for human self-realisation in the material or the socioeconomic sphere

One of the salient features of this Rāṭ was the erection of a disciplinary organisation vested with powers of chastisement so as to keep the individuals and communities free from aberrations within and disturbances from without. Its functions were primarily social and economic and secondarily political, if we are permitted to use that word.

This original Rat concept was later on masked by subsequent ideas and developments relating to the Rastra but it retained some of its underlying principles to the last

Economic Aspect Emphasised —The maintenance of the socio-economic fabric was the primary duty predominating in the concept of Rāt —The individual living in society was an end in himself and the object of the governmental organisation was primarily to guarantee a free scope for the fruition of his material desires and as this was dependent on the maintenance of order, the power of checking evils or punishing wrongs came to be associated with it—In the oldest hymns, the ruler is called upon not only to protect life and property or to encourage agriculture and the handicrafts which were the chief means for the gaining of livelihood on the part of the people but also to guarantee life and prosperity to them—As time went the political authority became more potent but these economic considerations received greater attention as is to be

action the Greco-Roman ideal of perpetual tutelage of women strengthened the social sentiments which are reflected in the pages of the Manava Dharmasastra and other later condifications (See Supra II pp. 129)

Yet many of the vestiges of their rights and privileges remained. Women continued to hold property in their own right and there was hardly any bar to their holding the regal office or the exercise of regal functions and duties as have been pointed out already.

The State —Existing side by side with this social organisation and exercising almost co-existant functions with it and absorbing as well as regulating the energies of the community came the state organisation

I comprehensive definition of the state is lacking in the older records but Kautilya seems to emphasise the bunnan element in it ( 'पुरुपवदि राज्यं प्रमुख्या गीर्ब-प्यम हि तुहात ) and following him all Hindu lawgivers assign the great est importance to this personal element in it. In their eves the state comprised a territory inhabited by a community with the object of maintaining life and property with a view to pave the way for the fruition of man's mate rial objectives. The Hindu concept of the state was rather very wide though it lacked the technical precision or definition imposed by modern writers. As the social out lool was very comprehensive and society did not stand for in irrow and homogeneous structure, the early concept of the Rat was wide and all embracing. It lacked the narrownes of the city state or the limitations of religion and on tom and over-topped from the beginning the limits of a conquerm, tribe or a victorious clan. The object of the

state, as we have pointed out already, and as we shall discuss later on in detail, was primarily to pave the way for human self-realisation in the material or the socio-economic sphere

One of the salient features of this Rāt was the erection of a disciplinary organisation vested with powers of chastisement so as to keep the individuals and communities free from aberrations within and disturbances from without. Its functions were primarily social and economic and secondarily political, if we are permited to use that word

This original Rat concept was later on masked by subsequent ideas and developments relating to the Rastra but it retained some of its underlying principles to the last

the socio-economic fabric was the primary duty predominating in the concept of Rāt. The individual living in society was an end in himself and the object of the governmental organisation was primarily to guarantee a free scope for the fruition of his material desires and as this was dependent on the maintenance of order, the power of checking evils or punishing wrongs came to be associated with it. In the oldest hymns, the ruler is called upon not only to protect life and property or to encourage agriculture and the handicrafts which were the chief means for the gaining of livelihood on the part of the people but also to guarantee life and prosperity to them. As time went the political authority became more potent but these economic considerations received greater attention as is to be

thing beyond that which is absolutely necessary for him \* Almost ultra socialistic as these passages appear to be, they may not be taken very seriously. But this type of idealism influenced the codes which were in acceptance in the country and we have more than one passage that a man committing theft of foodstuffs for the preservation of his life was not to be regarded as a wrongdoer at all t

Many of the ideas which were evolved in more an cient times found expression in the writings of Kautilya, the greatest exponent of the Hindu theory of government. His socio-economic aim have been discussed by many modern writers. He stands for an economically self-sufficient state capable of maintaining its population and governed by a ruler who by his ownership of the great national sources of wealth was to confer the maximum of material benefits upon his subjects. Many of the items included

lunumerable are such passage in the smritts and luranas. We quote a low of them-

यावद्भियत जटर सावत् श्वस्यं हि दहिनाम् । प्राधिष्टं याऽभिनन्यत् य स्तना दगुण्मदति ॥

The idea are repoid. The meaning of he is stoody is agrithent. I were sood unless to a to other will eat away the household it would lighted it as he is a substitute which the passage in easy different and in the passage is an easy of anyther as he will also out the passage is anyther at \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes are \$150 minutes and \$150 minutes are \$150 m

t ~~ Manu VII-Jil

्रियाः वर्णः सामग्रीतद्वादि हु द च मृत्यस् । ज्ञादः । नः सास्प्रवादः न टर्णः शतुम्रदृति ॥

among the duties of the king show clearly the extent of welfare which the people expected of their ruler. The Arthaśāstra code gives the lie to the modern writers who denounce the weakness of the Indian in his political genius and show the author of the Arthaśāstra to have been a man of universal genius, who could think for all times and ages and for all stages of society and who could anticipate the problems which are before the statesmen and rulers of our times. His plea for social solidarity was remarkable for he did not confine himself to the hide-bound traditions of an unprogressive social existence. He admitted many sections of the aborigines into the folds of Hindu society and went so far as to break the chain of the slave while his great contemporary in the Hellenic world was justifying slavery as a divine institution.

# The Political Machinary

The perennial social conflict as well as the ever increasing complexities of social life contributed to the strengthening of the authority of the chief who was entrusted with the duty of dispelling foreign enemies, of maintaining order within the community and who became later on the most important factor in the working of social life. At one time as stated already, he represented only the solidarity of the tribe and the unity of the body politic Perpetual war and an alliance with the priesthood gradually elevated him to a position higher than that of the ordinary tribal leader. With the enlargement of the tribal territory and with the gradual elimination of the rivalry of his own kinsmen, the king's authority became

supreme and unquestioned With the acceptance of the principle of hereditary succession, security of tenure was brought in And as time went on the idea of sovereignty. universal and indivisible came to be evolved. The primi tive Rat, became identified with the Rajan and the king be came the universal ruler of the tribe and the master of its territories as well as natural resourses subject only to the customs and conventions which were deemed sacred and of which the moral guardianship came to be vested in the Purohita-the Kings alter ego -and the priesthood who preserved and transmitted from father to son the tradi tions and ideals of the tribe As time went on, the regal authority was consolidated though occasional instances of irresponsibility continued to be checked by tyrannicide or social ostracism. The identification of the Rat or the the Rastri with the sovereign authority of the Rajar led to the formation and the elaboration of the political con cept of the state

Monarchy extolled —This monarchical state which was evolved in the Kuiu Paūcala region became the ideal of Hindu political thinkers. All other forms of Government namely republican tribal states democratic games as well as objectic confederations gradually disappeared. The wider Rasfra idea undermined the narrow basis of clain rule and monarchy which put in end to class war or easte conflict and which paved the way to a lasting social adjustment in the midst of disords was welcomed on account of its maintenance of a stable social life not easily disturbed by class uphericals or classicalities.

The evolution of the idea of state in India was the result of a long and continuous process and its relation to the social structure was peculiar. While the social organisation busied itself with the maintenance of the social structure the formulation of the social will and the elaboration of the moral ideal, the political organisation devoted itself to the protection of society from outside attacks and the elimination of the conflict of classes or the violation of the social rule on the part of the individual,—elements which were deterimental to man's safety and progress.

Theories of the origin of Society and Government --

Almost all Indian accounts agree in attributing the origin of sovereignty or government to a contract. Man dictated by instinct or natural law must live in society in order to ensure his personal safety. Once society is established, conventions come into existence and the conduct of men are to be subjected to a regulative authority. For the observance of these, the necessity of a coercive power is felt as due to aberrations in human conduct, which, owing to the influences of desire or greed, make individuals or classes go against the common weal. Aberrations are produced by the obliteration of *Dharma* which, according to the Indian conception, is an objective reflection emanating from the *Rita* or primordial principle of moral order running through and through the universal system and evolving the right line of conduct in the individual man

At one time this Dharma, according to most accounts, guided the actions of men, but as men became influenced by greed and vice, society was on the decay. To regulate

the normal working of the right principle Dandaniti or the code of coercion was evolered. It regulated human conduit by awarding punishment for violation of the social canon and by conferring rewards upon the virtuous. It thus became the external bond which in the absence of Dharma went to ensure the existence and progress of men in civil society. The right to award punish ments was naturally vested in the state which guided the external relations of men

The basic idea in the promulgation of Dandamii (or regulated violence) was primarily the maintenance of order and not the elaboration of freedom as with the modern Western thinkers. The working of this law meant an equitable opportunity granted to each member of the state by defining and safeguarding him and his relation to the whole. This concept of order was based on that which was supposed to run through the universal system.

### Scope of State 1ction -

The realisation of this order meant that the individual must have a free scope for the fruition of the aims of his life and that his life must be guaranteed and at the same time opportunities must be furnished so that he can bring his life to perfection. In the words of Fichit - to from the carbiest times the live and let live became motto of the state Hence tin cope of the state from the material point of bacama fully comprehensive and it included active help and encouragement to industries and the efforts of the individo it by which he was to maintain him elf. The regulation

of the arts of life, agriculture, trade and commerce all came within the sphere of the state action and this was from a very early period. Such ideas are present even in the inaugural hymns of the Vedic period and we have practical illustrations of this in the Jātakas, the Epics and the Purānas.

The state thus became something more than a police organisation. Its chief aim was the realisation on the part of its members of all possible benefit as far as the material aspect of life was concerned. The normal working of the whole social organism with its diverse elements came under its superintendence. Consequently, its activities was not confined to the bestowal of benefits on a particular class or section. It was conceived as a true commonwealth which stood for the happiness of all. Its government transcended all considerations of class rule or monopoly for a dominant majority as with thinkers of the modern age.

# The State and morality —

The intimate connection of the state with law and order give it a clear and close association with moral ideas. But there, too the relation which subsisted was a peculiar one. The Hindus conceived of morality as something higher than a set of rules laid down by the political organisation guiding the external conduct of men and thereby ensuring their success in this world Rather than this, they took into account the finer elements of consciousness in the individual discriminating between right and wrong and which exist apart from progress or

the normal working of the right principle Dandaniticode of coercion was evolerd. It regulated condult by awarding punishment for violations of canon and by conferring rewards upon those it thus became the external bond which absence of Dharma went to ensure the existence gress of men in civil society. The right to award ments was naturally vested in the state which go external relations of men.

The basic idea in the promulgation of Dami regulated violence) was primarily the maintenant and not the elaboration of freedom as with the Western thinkers. The working of this law mean table opportunity granted to each member of the defining and safeguarding him and his relativistic. This concept of order was based on was supposed to run through the universal sys-

### Scope of State Iction -

The realisation of this order meant that il must have a free scope for the fruition of the life and that his life must be guaranteed same time opportunities must be furnished a bring his life to perfection. In the words a live and let live became from the cirls motto of the state. Hence the scope of them, became from the material por fully comprehensive and it included active curving entern to industries and the efforts dual by which he was to maintain him elf.

existence Everything was merged into it,—the citizen's lite, his social existence, and his political activity

In India the state of affairs took a different turn 'The Indian philosopher, like his Western brethren started with the individual, and it was to give him the highest amount of benefit that the state was conceived. But, the concept of life, as well as that of the individual was different from the beginning. In a society dominated by the idea of kaima and rebirth, the lite of the individual, was regarded as something more than an existence in the realistic world. It was intimately connected with something transcendental. It was nothing more than a mere phase in a greater and higher existence. Neither enjoyment nor sorrow in this lite was its end. It had a higher spiritual purpose.

In man were detected elements of higher consciousness apart from his ordinary desires, his worldly needs and aspirations, the longings of his animal instincts and the finities of his flesh. Such an analysis led to the concept of the Caturvarya (or the Purusarthas or the desires of the individuals) namely, Dharma, Artha, Kāma and Moksa For the fruition of the first three which comprised the material objectives of human life a peculiar social and The conceived indiviarrangement was regulative duals' life in society was regarded as a bundle of duties and To perfect this life, a disciplinary training aspirations was given in its four stages and this was independent of At the same time, the material aspect was also For his life, the propagation of taken into consideration his race, and the attainment of his desires man must be

deterioration in this life. It was thus something which depended on the development of the inner man. The state could but control external actions and could hardly establish a real moral standard.

But moral self realisation was possible only in a state of freedom from the engrossing influence of the materialistic world. The state by maintaining order simply ensured the individual's freedom to realise it. Consequently, the state was the means which paved the way for the development of morality rather than the supreme expression of morality or order as was the prevailing idea of the Greeks or as some of our Western idealists like Hegel would have it

#### The State Not In En. But I Means -

The most important point for us thus is to note that the Indians regarded the state solely as a means and never looked upon it as an end in itself. In this connection divergences existed in the past and exists even to day between the Indian and the Western outlook aesthetic concept of life constantly Greek with his thought of realising his ideals in an organisation which could not only solve his ethical problems but also help him in realising his highest goal. The centre of the Greek culture was man. Yet not min unqualified but the noble man-man aesthetically considered the individual and the state stood in the close topo sible The state was the individual magnified while the individual was the state in miniature alcal state was the summum bonum of Grek tlu

existence Everything was merged into it,—the citizen's life, his social existence, and his political activity.

In India the state of affairs took a different turn. The Indian philosopher, like his Western brethren started with. the individual, and it was to give him the highest amount of benefit that the state was conceived. But, the concept of life, as well as that of the individual was different from the beginning In a society dominated by the idea of karma and rebirth, the life of the individual, was regarded as something more than an existence in the realistic world. intimately connected with something transcen-It was It was nothing more than a mere phase in a dental greater and higher existence Neither enjoyment nor sorrow in this life was its end It had a higher spiritual purpose

In man were detected elements of higher consciousness apart from his ordinary desires, his worldly needs and aspirations, the longings of his animal instincts and the frailties of his flesh Such an analysis led to the concept of the Caturvarga. (or the Purusarthas or the desires of the ındıvıduals) namely, Dharma, Artha, Kāma and Moksa. For the fruition of the first three which comprised the material objectives of human life a peculiar social and regulative arrangement was conceived The duals' life in society was regarded as a bundle of duties and To perfect this life, a disciplinary training was given in its four stages and this was independent of At the same time, the material aspect was also taken into consideration For his life, the propagation of his race, and the attainment of his desires man must be

intimately related to the material world. The furtherence of this object became the aim of the political organisation

The state thus was not, and cannot be regarded from the Indian standpoint as an end in itself but was a means to a greater end—namely man's self realisation and his attainment of salvation

### Forces in the evolution of the state and religion -

The influence of the transcendental idea and the principle of morality in Indian life makes the average Western observer think that the Indian state ideal has been moulded entirely by the religious ideas of the people Outwardly religion seems to have exercised an overwhelming influence. A closer examination however reveals that with the exception of the early Vedic and the Brahmanic period the influence of religion on the development of the Indian state has been very small. In that early age the influence of religion was immense the Purolita acted as the alter ego of the king. He was regarded as the Rustra Gopa The king too offered oblations on behalf of the community Later on however, religion did not play an active part. Its service was entirely passive

Even this statement may appear paradoxical especially when we meet with the maze of rituals and the vast ar ay of ecremonials the mass of formulae the continuance of the Purchites office and the preponderance of the Brahman in the council of the large

Act circful enquiry bears out tho truth of the remark. Nowhere in the history of Indian culture we find

a similar conception of religion as is to be found in the west or in the Semitic countries. We in India never had nor still have, a religion in the sense in which it is used in the west We have only our social system which holds together different communities professing their belief in one common moral standard and in some common philo-This social system was at once too sophical tenets narrow in many points and too catholic The supposed preponderating influence of religion appears to be almost The Indian mind freed itself early from the shackles No attempt was ever made to set down hard and fast rules for the religious observances of the people. Philosophic toleration came in along with the ever-increasing insight into ethical and moral considerations gion lost very early its primitive character as a bond of Higher speculations as regards the cosmical world as well as the quality of the soul undermined a fanatical partisanship of dogma and ceremonial The state too lost its real connection with religion even at the earliest phases of its growth What remained was but an outer garb of ceremonial and it was allowed to exist, partly because we have in the Indian mind a veneration for the past and a love for the traditional customs of our forefathers

The state never became a theocracy—Owing to this lack of an intimate relation between religion and the state, the latter could never take a theocratic turn. It was never thought that the state should come forward and prescribe rules for the religious instruction of the people A man's religion or his belief was not taken into consideration in determining his place in the body-politic There was hard

ly any 100m for that, since the Risis themselves differed in their philosophical tenets and the great philosophical systems manifested divergences on vital points All this emancipated the state from the influence of religion  $\Gamma$  (clesiastical supremacy as conceived in the West was denied to the head of the state. As a result of this we have in India hardly any wars about religion no crusades, no inquisitions—no religious animosity no feeling of hatred for followers of other religion and India became a refuge for men whose religion had led them to be persecuted in their own lands

Nature and Limits of the functions of the state —
So much for the characteristics of the state. We may
now make up for the deficiency caused by the lack of definition of the state. In our view the state may be regarded
is the highest political organisation for the well being of

Conflict of Ideals. The above onexit of the tate was the product of outliet Ad aper enguly would consince us that not only there was no office of juni no lue to diff ren co in viewing the jr bl m. I lite from liff rit a set but that two id als -and those of two rac -a re me offict en the id 1 the Brahmin au I that of the h africa the two racof rate n and along their order hills mucht end otherario a rich f Clark no tal the two rated learners at 14 th alice of lulia The later a lived time a and space u-st free elegates to be t nativily. The crothe alter the car unity a wall of the direct the livel 1 The exalte 11 tolog the there is belief if it erround there its a new than beth out the tore tra was that the term was those far that the I Katterya r e r r l f r b . . the state of the s \* \* 1 1 17 12 11 1 1

the community, so far as the material aspect of life was The Indian mind, so prolific and original in concerned many directions, displayed its originality in its conception of the state That institution never came to signify the highest form of existence or the most perfect machinery for the mental and moral elevation of man The aim and object of Indian culture was to evolve the highest types of humanity and to enable the individual to attain his own namely the fruition of the four objectives  ${
m K\bar{a}ma}$  $\operatorname{and}$ Moksa They Artha, circumscribe the scope of its action, nor limit the exercise of its sovereign powers simly to police work, nor did they invest the state with powers too extensive to deal with the individual as it liked They saw clearly the sphere to which its actions mights safely be delegated, without circumscribing the scope of action of man's superior nature, and in this the state was allowed a free exercise of its authority. In all other spheres, the activity of the state was circumscribed In one sphere they allowed the state free activity, while in the other the individual was allowed free play A clear distinction was made between the two Man was regarded both as a means and also an end In the first instance, man must look to the well-being of society, would help others and be helped in helping himself. Herein he came under the full scope of the state activity. His maintenance, his opportunity for self-realisation, protection of his life and property—everything was delegated to the care of the state but beyond this, the jurisdiction of the state came to In matters of higher development, the state had

had nothing to do The individual was fully emancipated. The rights of the state were again conceived as being far from absolute. They were limited and thought to be merely arising out of contract. Political idealism did not carry its concept to that logical fineness which we find in the state concept of the Westerners, both ancient and modern. To the westerner, the state remains even to this day the high est institution which the genius of a man could devise—a thing which would bestow the highest benefit on man. But to the Indian the state has never signified this idea. It was as we have seen a means to a great end. It never became with them the highest God on earth.

Influence of Social and Sp mitual instincts of the Race

Thus we see that in the development of the state, the peculiar ideals of India spritual and secular contributed their quota. The safety of the individual and his material prosperity were its chief concern. In conceiving the state moreover, they pre-supposed the existence of fundamental institutions and organic laws and these could not be disturbed. The social ideal too was regarded as sacred the state could not meddle with these and society was left with a cert in amount of autonomy to evolve its own working. I ach section or group worled for its own. Absolute equality never became a political necessity. The soli aim of life was never identified with the desire for the settle ment of equal benefits in the material sphere.

This latter circumstance has indeed stood in the path of progress in the modern sense of the word. But pulped by effects the state as conceived by Indians had many redecming features. Of these the most important were its wide scope of action and the absence of rigidity.

The Indian state had a scope of action which was not narrow. It would admit within itself men of all castes and creeds irrespective or their origin, customs or religion Foreign elements with diverse religious and social ideas came and settled in India and thus added to her strength. In the days of India's political greatness the state presented to the world this high and noble ideal.

# Greek Ideal Contrasted

Herein it bears a great contrast with the Greek ideal of state. The fine idealism of Greek culture confined the state within the limits of the city—nay—to the governing element of that small community. The ideal was rigid—it could not expand. Greece for ever remained divided into narrow and isolated communities, the ideals of humanity were to her confined to the city and hardly had any room for expansion. Such an ideal continued to exist till the last days of her existence and when the genius of the semi-barbarian Macedonian attempted the expansion of the Hellenes, the Helleneic ideal lost itself in the midst of the barbarians whom it had vanquished and felled to the ground.

The only redeeming feature of this narrow ideal was its tendency towards the strengthening of the bonds of solidarity among the members of this small community. In India, such a solidarity was indeed lacking. The widest possible divergences were allowed to exist among the communities, mutual rivalries too, existed but there was

political independence occasioned by the Muslim conquest of India

The autonomy granted to society and its quasi in dependent existence did not stand in the way of progressive evolution or retard the adaptability of the Indian people to changed circumstances Conservation and self preservation was attained partly through the agency of religion and the aristocratic social organisation. Violent changes could not be introduced all on a sudden and the will of the multitude was never recognised as being the most pre eminent social force as in the Western countries This had its drawbacks but the non recognition of this popular will as the potent force in all social movements did much to preserve the individuality and the culture of the race Compared and contrasted with the political theories which gained ground in Europe in the last two centuries there was much that stood in the way of the in dividual and his supposed political rights. Whether this was worthy of universal condemnation is yet to be seen Political experiments in the west have not yet ended and new economic factors introduced by scientific inventions to man's power of exploiting nature and to the potentialities of the individual are still operating Democracy today is an accepted principle but democracies have now been found to be incapable of solving all the problems of man. The conception of man's primary rights is being seriously challanged everywhere the individual which was the war ery in all revolutions is proving to be nothing more than a mith. Everywhere democracy is giving place to dictatorship and dictators

while professing to be the agents of popular will are doing their best to make themselves more autocratic than the autocrats whose authority they have subverted

# Germs of Nationalism:-

Nationalism in its modern sense did not exist in India nor in the rest of the world. But we have vague ideas of a common socio-political group deriving strength and solidarity from the unity of the race and the adoption of the same language, manners and customs. These ideas are found first in the Arthaśāstra but owing to the weakness of the political power, the constant changes of allegiance, the ever-varying boundaries of the state—they failed to take root in the soil. But as pointed out already, the different provinces in India tended towards becoming quasi-national units (Supra II pp 181-3). The muslim conquest brought a new consciousness in opposition to the invaders

In course of the war against the Muslim rulers national sentiments and consciousness arose in the different parts of India, namely, in Mahārāstrā, in the Punjab, in the South and in Rājputāna, and this has already been pointed out

Under British rule the horizon of political aspirations has cleared and national consciousness has grown in all the parts of India This militates to some extent against the old Pan-Indian idea, but still it is a force which will go a long way to the political regeneration of India



# **Epilogue**

Thus far the author has attempted a brief survey of the political life and aspriations of a race which has in the midst of many vicissitudes managed to preserve its individuality and lives yet to bridge the vast gulf between that hoary antiquity which saw the dawn of its culture and the modern age of science and progress that has revolutionised the very outlook of human existence and thoroughly reshuffled the social life of mankind

Of all the ancient civilisations, that of India still subsists and with all her political deterioration she can offer still to the new world the Gospel of social peace, religious toleration and political harmony in the midst of almost insuperable differences. In the domain of politics proper she can still offer the ideal of a paternal state, looking to the material welfare of all classes of its subjects and extending its protection to peoples of different creed or culture—a state which looks to the adjustment of the claims of labour in opposition to the exploitation of capital, rising high above the conflict of classes or the arrogance of party groups

The culture of India is very old but its prolonged existence has not exhausted her intellectual vitality, her energy or productivity in the material sphere of life. Even to-day India is producing some of the finest specimens of humanity taking their rank with the best representatives of the West in the domain of science, philosophy, literature, law

and politics. This shows that neither the race nor its genius is exhausted

India has yet a furture and with a little reshuffling of her social structure and a reorganisation of her rightful forces she will be ere long on the way to gain her rightful place in the society of nations

For the present her social and political outlook is not so clear as any believer in her destiny would expect Suffering from the evil consequences of economic ruin social disintegration and the conflict of classes there are very few signs of her ever increasing social solidarity. To add to these there are disruptive tendencies within the fold of her social life heightened by the outbreak of communal conflicts between the great communities inhabiting her. This last has been the result of the nullification of the rapprochement between the two great communities in India as well as of the forcing of the religious question into the domain of politics.

But let us hope that all these disrupting tendencies will cease to operate and that the present conflicts will end in a closer understanding and that those prejudices and vagaries characteristic of our present day rural life giving rise to political narrowness and social intoler ince will cease to exist. Then the vision of a greater and re united India will come before the eyes of her people

With a view to regenerate India the different ections of her people must give up their narriow angle of vi ion and unite for a common national purpo e. In solving her problems they must be actuated by the dynamic we tern ideal of progress and ocial expansion. But we must not

entirey loose sight of the principles which had in the past contributed much to the evolution of India's social and political life. Mere imitation of the West will not solve her problems but will bring instead the catastrophe of a communal war and perennial racial hatred. But a policy of harmony and social co-operation evolved out of the best traditions of the past will lead us to the path of consolidation and progress.

In the midst of conflicts and turmoils, there is still hope. Perhaps the long expected federation of the peoples and provinces of India into a great commonwealth will be a reality, though for the present under the aegis of the suzerain power.

Once united in a common purpose, India will march ahead and throw off the shackles of past prejudices and present impediments. She will take her place in the front rank of nations and contribute her quota to the peace and progress of humanity.

### INDEX TO PART II

A Abhiras, 103 Administra-Adhyaksas of Mauiya, tion, 29-32 Agiahāra, 193, 218, 227 Agrahārika, 219 Ahımsā, 329, 379 Akkā (a female governoi), 254 Amātyas, 25, 110 Andhras, 102-4, 109-12, 298 Angabhoga, 193, 254 Antapāla, 23 Antarvamáika, 27 Ārjunāyanas, 119 Army, 309-15 -divisions, 309 -maintenance of Army, 311 -special crops, 311-12 -Arms and weapons, 312-14 -Army command, 315 A1 yadeva, 143-4 Arthaśāstia (of Kautilya) 21, 23, 24-93, 134, 138, 295-97, 325 Aśoka, 14, 15, 17, 48-50, 61-4, 168, 374 Aspasioi, 5 Assakenoi, 5 Assessors, 322 Astādaša-tīrthas, 27-9 Asura-vijaya, 16, 89, 318 Aśvaghosa, 143 Aśvaka (a Mahāmātya), 215 Audumvaras, 119

 $\mathbf{B}$ 

Bahadadeva (a Mahāmātya); 215 Balādhiki ta, 221, 227, 238

Ayuktaka, 218

Balı, 115, 293 Basileus Basileuon, 107 Bhāgavata religion, 95, 113 Bhāga, 115 Bhandı (a mınıster), 213 Bhīmagupta (a Kashmır kıng), 209 Bhoga, 224, 235, 237, 240 Bhogika, 223, 224, 240 Bhoja of Malwa, 161 Bhuktı, 222, 225, 227, 232, 233, 235, 241Bilhana (Poet and Minister), 215 Bimbisāra, 1 Brahmadeya, 295-6 Brhaspati Sūtra, 336 Budget, 307-8 Buddhist Political Thought, 143-4 Buddhists, of Sind, 152

 $\mathbf{C}$ 

Caste, 127-9, 143, 398 ff Cāhamānas, 161, 169, 263 Cakravarman (a Kashmir King), 209 Cālukyas, 148-9, 150, 156, 163 f n Caulukya Administration of Gujrat, 236, 257, 262 Cālukya-Rāşti akūta Administration of the Deccan, 240-42 Cānakya-Sūtras, 336-37 Candella, 162, 302 Candiagupta Maurya, 12, 13, 14, 17, 22 Candiagupta II, 147, 200, 349 Candrāpīda of Kashmir, 209 Cankuna (a Kashmii ministei), 213

Cedi Administration of Gujrat), 236

Chivalric Anarchy 161 -ladara **--**\S-9 Colas 157 165 303 -Tamil 1-032 Cola Administration 21, 9 -Gurjara Pratibara feudatories Coronation Ceremonial 204-6 261 2 -Guirat foudatories 202-3 D -Candella 263 Dadaka (a keeper of Scals) 215 ~Cedi -63 Dan Japala 28 -Gāhadavala \_63 Dindika 220 - Cihamana 263 Darbhapāni (a Pāla minister) \_11 -Paramira 261 217 beudatories rights and privil Les of Devanam priya lo 15 f n 17 f n, 01-18 48 fp .0 62 Feudal knights-types 208-0 Foudal gradation 2 1 71 Devaputra, 108 Devaraja (a Kakatiya minuter) 217 Day 22 22 22 Giha jaralas 163 263 30% Dharma vijaya 16 .0 62-1 89112 1 Gahadarala Administration of Kanaul 237 Dharmadhyaksa 212 233 Gana rajas, l Dharma maharaja 101 157 Gardabhilas 103 Dharma mahamatra 10 Garca (a Pala minuter) Dhruvadhikaranika 21 Garu las (special life guard ) 311 1-Did la of ka hmir '00 1, Gaulmika \_18 Diplomace 8 4 31 -9 Gautamiputra Satakarni 103 De in Right Monarchy lofn 30 Gona 3. 52 96 103-9 Htt 180 Ha 31J Gonala-el eted king of Bonal, los Dirira ~0 Gott ""

Grama 227 227 227 "10 220

Grāmika 32, 31 2) 1

Durgapala -8

Drauvarika, 2.

 $\Pi$ 

Halāyudha (a minister), 214 Harisena, 214, 225 Harsa of Thanesvar, 151, 168 -administration, 227-8 Harsa of Kashmir, 209, 218 Hastibhoji (a Vākāṭaka ministoi), 211 Hemidri (a scholar and minister), 211 Heri-Sändhivigrahika, 215, 216 Hoysālas, 161, 170 Hoysāla Administration, 243 Hindu-Muslim Rapprochement 381-8 Hindu Political Decline, 371-2, 373ff -Its causes, 383 83 Hinduisation of Foreigners, 114-6 Hūnas, 118

I

Imperialism, Kautilya on, 89-90

J

Janapada, 57, 120, 287 Jayaswal (K.P ), 70, 141 Justice and Judiciary, 33, 319-24 Jyestha-Kāyastha, 230

### K

Kadambas, 103 Kaisar (Kazar), 108 Kalaśa (a Kashmir King), 209 Kalınga, 15, 101, 165f n, 234 Kāmandaka-nītisāra, 145, 334-6 Kantakaśodhana, 34 Kara, 116 Karmāntas, 115 Karmāntika, 28 Karma-sacıva, 114-5 Kashmir, 151 -Its history -lts tyrants

—Its political institutions

Kathaioi (Kathas), 6, 9, 10 Kauţılya, 12, 16, 20-93 Kautilya Arthasastra—its date, 68-76 Kautilya, Rehabilitation of, 90 3 Kautilyan Ethics, 58 61, 79-80 Kautilyan Kingship, 58 61, 80-4 Kautilya, Political Theory of, 52-93 Kāyastha, 118,218, 220, 230, 231, 234, 238, 242, 287, 303 Kedőramisra (a Pala minister), 214 Kerala Brahmanas, 172 Ketaladevi (a female governor), 251 Khankha (a Kashmir minister), 213 Khāravela, 101, 113 Ksūyathiya, 107, 118 King of Kings, 107-8 Kingship (Mediaeval), 184-210 -Prerogatives, 186-7 -Private Income, 191 Kotțama, 246, 248 Kaatrapas, 107-8, 298 Kumārāmātyas, 224-5, 232, 234 Kumāragupta, 147 Kusānas, 100, 108 Kuttam, 251

L

Laksmidhara (a minister), 214 Lobhavijaya 16, 89, 318 Local Government, 278-92

—Institutions in Eastern India, 278-9 Western India, 279 the Deccan, 279

> Kanarese territory " 280

-Real Polity, 280-6

-Town Government, 286-92

### $\mathbf{M}$

Machiavelli and Kautilya, 59fn, 92 Madhusūdana (a Baghela mīnīstei), 215 Madhyama, 316

Mahabhundagarika 212, 236 Mahabhojas (Mahūrathis) 100-10 Mahadan landyaka 221 22, 220 233 Mahadharmädhikarın 219 Mahaksapatalika 212 233 236 238 Mahakumurimatya 229 Mahamatras 48 Mahopradhāna .l.-7 Mahapratihara 211 271 220 233 Mahasandhivigrahika, 511 216 291 Mahasenāpati 211 223 Mahattara 219 Mahumahattara 230 Mailaladori (a femalo governor) 201 Mandala (as a concept in public admi nistration) CEH ELH 216 148 Mandala (as a concept in diploma) 8,-8 101 310 Mantrin - 27 211-8

Montri parisat 24-3 °8 49 211 260 54 Mintri parisadadhyaksa 28 Manu samhita Loodo

-It dat 1

-It ractionary tone Lab

-lt social id al. 15-3

-lt social id al. 15-3

-Its once tof king hip 130ff

-it it mad res que 13

—It mila a e 136

Materiary 1115

-Taxation and Revenue 3"-40

-Character of Administration 40-1?

-- Economic Considerations 42-4 -- State Socialism 41-0

-State Socialism 41-0 -Legal and Political do

- 1-pects of Monarchy 16-7

-Law of Treason 17-8

-Ajokan System 18-00

-Republicanism 50-2

Megasthenes 21 69 /1 2

Mimanus 130

Mallot (Malayas) 7 9 10 11 165 119

Monopolies 39 301-6 Margianaka (Benevolinee) 302 Mudradhyakso 11-Muslim State-system 341-3

Naju 18-90 Najar 180-1 Najarottaras 17 Najarostjohalaka 56 Nandas I 3 4, 8 1 13 Narasahana (a kashmir minister) 113 Nationali m 1-Najaka 3 Najana sakha 110 40 Nibandha 316-1 CC ( 30-0) Păla Administration, 228-32 Pallavas, 101, 107, 146f n., 157t.n., 157, 303 Pallara Administration, 216-7 Pāndya-Kerala Administration, 219-50 Paramāras, 162 Paramāra Administratīve System, 237 Parisā (Parisat), 49, 115 Parama-bhāgavata, 117 Paramabhattāraka-Cakravartins, 226, 272, 273 Paramamāhesvara, 117 Paramasaugata, 117 Parthians, 98, 107 Patala, 8, 10, 11 Paţta, Paţtikā, 225 Paura, 28, 287 Perumal, 172, 270 Peshwas, 20f n Petha, 225 Phālguna (a Kashmir minister), 213, 213 Pilgrim Taxes, 305 Political Theories on the eve of Hindu Decline, 333-72 Political Theories in the Puranas, 360-6 Police, 32, 325-7 Post-Gupta Administrative Systems in Northern India, 227-38 Pradestā, 28 Pradesika, 49 Prajāpati-Nandin (a Pāla minister), 214Pranaya, 116, 297, 348 Prasāstā, 27 Prthvīrāja Cauhān, 165 (Mediaeval). Provincial Government 252-78 -Governors, 252-6

-Female Governors, 254

-Royal Governors, 252-3 -Feudal Rulers, 256-71 -Rajput Foudalism, 271-8 -Local Government, 278-22 Pulakesin II, 150 f n Purohita, 27 Pustapāla, 220 Pusyamitia 18, 19

### Q

Queens (esp. Mediaeval), 192-5 Queens Regnant, 204

Rahasyādhikrta, 243, 247

### $\mathbf{R}$

Rājakam khotam, 110 Rajakrta-samvit, 288 Rajputs, 153-6, 274-8, 372 ff Rājput Feudalism, 274-8 Rājarājānaka, 228, 229, 233 Rājasthānīya, 221, 227, 230, 232, 238, 333 Rājānaka, 49 Rāma-Punyavallabha (a Deccan minister), 215 Rāstra, 57, 222, 223, 228 Rāstrakūtas, 156, 158, 253, 375 Ratna (a Kashmir minister), 213 Republican States 5ff, 105, 118-20 Republicanism, 50-2, 65-7, 120-3, 171-4 Revenue and Taxation, 292-309 -Vedic Age, 293-4

—Dharma Sūtras, 294-5

-Arthasāstra, 295-7

-Manu-Samhitā, 133

-Sukranīti, 346

-Andhras, 298

-Ksatrapas, 298

-Guptas, 299-300

-Vākātakas, 299-300

-- \ alabhia 209-300 Slavery 43 61 80 121 197 129 f n -Pālas 301 130 f n -Candellas 302 Smrtu (later) 366 ff -Gāha Jaralas 302 Socio-ethnic antagonism in India and -Pallaras 303-5 the West 390-8 -Colas 303-1 Somalera . \itirākvamrta 33"-9 -Kashmir 303 Somesvaramisra (a Pala minister) 214 -Monopolies 300 Sreni 287 -Exemptions 366-7 State Socialism 41-8 Items of Expenditure 30, S Strategos 10" Royal Governors 48 -52-4 Stri mahimatras 49 Rudradaman 10, 114-5 298 348 Südraka bis political views 1 to Rudraditya (a Malwa minister) 215 Sugandha (Oueen of Kashmir) 209 SukraniticJra 311 14 Sulka 11a Sabarasyumin 139-41 bungas 18 Sabhas 21 24 Sura (a hashmir minister) -13 bhaonano-Shao 103 Saints (Mediaeval) 381-6 Sakas 98-100 10" 108 Talarataka - 0 1-Samularta \_7 133 31 Tamil Administrative System of Lol Samühaketa sameit 38 Tantrins In 19 Samudragupta 117 117 f n 200 319 Tărăpila 200 San Jika 🚙 Taxes Saincha 51 28 -See under Rerenue Sannidh ta ad a31 Territorial nationalism 181-3 Saukaravarman (a kashmir king) Thanestara House of 145 200 -13 Town Covernm at ... 6.7. Pariata (a ha hmir mini t r) -13 Transm Law of 1 3 Sarradhiak a F1 Turu kadan la 30. basanka (king of W. Bengal) 149 Tyrant Wy 10 Saulkika -14 Savagery in war in tauces 1 6-5 t rena of the all lul Edd in Stat 310 the the mation that durant Lumattanauti in ha hinir hio. THE HALL PE 13 Phala of Kabul I a lolf a lo ات ليم بطالعانا 5 to 110 Latalita II Prate . is tacal lla taini t e) t systems it i Lt al ta ha Luir minister) 13 فلكا التهاولة وا

### 1.

Vandvadera, (i. Pala minister) 214
Vikajakas, 104, 146m, 257, 266
Valablus, 148
Valablus, 148
Valablus Administration, 225
Varta, 79
Vataraja (i. minister), 214
Victora (Maurya), 45
Viji da Kalachurya, 26
Village Communities 280-6
—Bengal, 2534
—South, 2556
Varisena (Gupta minister), 214
Visaya, 2224, 2324, 244

Vi avapati, 223, 236 Visnu Smrti, 148 Vigti, 110, 297 Vj. ni, 110, 20 Vyavaharika, 28

### γ,

Y id xvas, 163 Y id xva Admin, tration, 142-3 Yajñavalky i-Smytt, 137/8 Y coodharman, 148 Yandhev (c. 8, 105, 115/9, 121 Yuvarāja, 27, 197

For the preparation of this index, I im indebted to two of my pupils Sriput Minindra Nath Bigchi M. A., and Nirmal Chindra Sinha M. A., and I think them for the service they have rendered me.

# BIBLIOGRAPHY-WITH ABBREVIATIONS.

In this a list of the more important books eited or referred to in the work is given. Abbreviations of the names of books repeatedly referred to are also given

The Rig-veda—(R V) The Atharva veda-(A V) Vājasaneyī Samhītā—(Vaj-Sam) Yajurveda—(Yaj -Sam) The Mahā-parınıvbbāna sūtta—Trans Rhys Davids, Dialogues of the Buddha London The Dhammapada-P. T S (D P) The Milinda-panha-(Trenckner, (London) The Mahā bodhi Vamsa. P T S Mahavamsa (Geiger, London) Turnour Divyāvadāna. (Cowell, Cambridge) The Jatakas (Jat)—Fausboll, Trans Ed Cowell The Jātakamālā —Trans Speyer Aśvaghosa's Buddhacarita (Luders) Saundarānanda (A S B Bib Indica) Catuhśatikā of Aryadeva -A S Bengal Bihadaranyaka Upanisad (Anandāśrama, Poona) Apastamba Dharmasūtra. (Bom SS) Vasistha Dhaimasūtra (Va Dh Su) Bom S S) Gautama Dharmasūtra (Mysore S S) The Mahābhārata (M B) Bengal Edition. Arthāśāstra of Kautilya (Mysore Edition, Dr Shamasastry  $\mathbf{Do}$ Translation by Same)

Vātsyāyana Kāmasūtīa. (Text Bombay Edition). Tho Kāmandaka Nītisāra (Travancoro, Ed Ganapati Sastri) Somadeva's Nītīvākyāmī ta (Granthamāla, Bombay) The Yukti-kalpataru of Bhoja (Calcutta Edition, Ed Dr N Law) The Rajaniti Prakāša. (Benares Edition) The Manu Samhitā. (Ed. Jolly) Yājñavalkya Samhitā Bombay, N S. Edition Visnu Smiti-Asiatic Society of Bengal, (Trans Jolly, S B E) Närada Smiti (Jolly A.S.B. Calcutta) Bihaspati Smrti. (Trns. S B E) Anandāsiama S S Poona Kātyāyana-mata sangraha. (By the author, Cal University) Sukra Nīti (Bengal Ed. J. Vidyāsagaia) Viramitrodaya (Benaies S S Edition) Vivāda-iatnākaia (A S Bengal) Smrti-candrika (Mysoie Edition) Mıtāksarā by Vijñāneśvaia. Bombay Edition Harsa-carita by Bāna N Sangai Edition Bombay Trans Thomas and Cowell Kādamvarī by Bāna Bom SS, Trans Redding London, Works of Kālidasa, Bengal and Bombay Editions

Bhasa-(Travadrum Ganapati Sastri) Periplus of the Erytherean Sea The Kirstliriunyam of Bharavi (J \idyusagar Calcutta) Mr cchakatika of Südraka (Calcuta & N S Edition Bombay) Mudra rakusa-B Goswami Calcutta hatha sarit sagara By Somdera Bombay \ S Edition k. emendra s Brhat kathā madiari Do Bhārata mañiari and 1)0 Ramävana mafijari N S Press Bombay The Canakya-sütras-(Text in hau \r 84stra-Edition II ) The Brhaspati Sütras (Ed Thomas Luniab 5 S) The Pancatantra-Bom The Tantrakhavika-bal Hertal The Hitomadesa-B S S also Cal Fd The Luranas (especially Vi nu Vayu Matsya Kurma and Bhlgarata)-Bangal Editions The Rajatarangini of Kalhana Text and Trans by Stein (R. T) l vasarda ao - Ed Horrni Nicasas ali Sutra l ttaradbyana būtra Flitton-Carpenti r Trans Jacobi - 4 II F Dyna ti of the half Ag (larget r) Larly Ht tory of India (V Smith) Inka (1 Smith) Hinly I of ty (h. 1 Jayassal) Early Het ry of the Dexan (F. H. D) (rie R G Ubaufarhar) Herrical Skith of America Decision ty 5 T to ar the at India to Dr. hr. his warn tipaca r Ich a Maile 1 In modificat to Me and a Bugste at la tuff negle e Acre by

(Schoff) History of the Doccan (Jouveau Dubreuil) History of the Pallavas (Gopalan) Dynastics of the Kanarese District. (J F Fleet D K D) Mysore and hoorg (Rice) Gurinra Pratiharas Dr R C Majumder History of Bengal (Dr R C Majunder) (Daeca) Rajasthan-Col Todd India Old and Now-W Hopkins Local Gort in Ancient India -Dr R & Mookerice I olitical History of Ancient India Dr H C Rai-chaudhuri Calcutta Hindu Revenue Administration -Dr U N Ghosal Mediacral Hindu India-(M H I) -C \ \aidya Land Laws of Bengal-Late Justi o Sarada Ch Mitra M V B L. ( atalogue of Gupta Coms- Allan Indian Intiquary (Ind Int) Foigraphia Indica (F. 1.) Journal of the Bihar an I Orisaa Re arch Society (J. B. O. R. b) Journal of the Royal Asiatic wil ty (J R \ \ \) ( upta Ins rigtions by Fle t (G I ) Journal of the Royal & latic bad ty Bou bay Branch (J. H. H. R. 8.5) It surspite in of Heat, al -> G 3(a) m1 r In lian Hirt eual Quart ely (I II Q) muth Indian lowers to c (+ 1 1) If the L hillorn later bearists tale lated buttle a

# ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS

It is unfortunate that a large number of micprints especially in connection with discritical marks has crept into the book. So, this list of important errors is here appended. Some additional informations and notes also find place in this list. For some of the corrections in the notes added to pages 150-162. I am indeedted to Dr. Dinesh Chandra Sarkai M.A. Ph.D. of the P.G. staff.

- P 9, Line, 20 The Sophytes—was the name of a king or a nomaich ruling over a tribe of people east of the Jhelum Greek writers like Curtius speak of the wisdom and the peculiar institutions of the people The Sophytes coins bear the head of a king and the figure of a cock on the reverse. The late Di Jayaswal was inclined to take the Sophytes "as a republican area with a republican institutions." (Hindu Polity pp 65-66) The author regards them as a monarchical state Perhaps the political condition of the Sophytes was in a state of transition
- P 13, L. 17 Read-Aria in place of Asia.
- P 16, bottom There is an unfortunate omission of the words "uplift of the people were"
- P 17 That Northern India was split up after the decline of the Manryas into a large number of monarchical or tribal states is proved by the evidence of the numerous coins which were issued by the local authorities in various parts of Northern India. Some of these might have been issued by the Sungas who were the most powerful dynasty after the Mauryas. But there can be no doubt from the numismatic data that the idea of paramountcy declined after the downfall of the Mauryas. The all-India character of the punch-marked coins would justify the attribution of many of of them to the Mauryas. The author's notice has been drawn to this by Mr Jitendra Nath Banerji M A, of the Post-graduate Teaching Staff.
- P. 97, L 4 Read—divisions of spheres in place of the word littorals—which is mappropriate here
- P 103, N 2 Mr Harit Krishna Dev, M A, has tried to prove that the tradition of the Vikrama Era being founded by a King Vikrama of Vikramādītya of Malwa is borne out by ephigraphic testimony. The era was founded by the Sātavāhāna King Gautamiputra Sātakaini who, according to the author was the original of the traditional Vikramādītya. The Nasik eulogy

contains the word Nara-vahana vikrama. For H. K. Dev spaper see-/eitschrift für Indologie und Iranistik Leipzig. 1022 pp °00 ff

- 1 118 Foot Note In connection with the Kayasthas (about which the views of Kumar Asim Krisna Dev Bahadur has been quoted) it i significant to note that Citragupta the traditional ancister of the Kayasthas is described as wearing flowing, robe and boots (after the persian model?) For this the author is indebted to his colleague Mr. Jitendra Nath Bancrice M V of the lot graduate Teaching staff
- 1 117 N 1 Pulakesi II ruled from C 611-612 A D and not upto 633 A D
- I 151 N 15 Dr Vincent Smith & not Sir Vincent Smith
- 1 18 \ 14 The date of the capture of Herat by lakub-1 Lat the "affarid is \ 11 \_00 or about 8 0 \ D
- I 101 \ 27 Bhoja's late is 830-88. \ D and Mahendra pala s 800-0" \ D North Bengal was probably included in the kingdom of the Pratibiras at the time of Mah ndra pala I as is known from the recordly discovered labarour Inscription
- 1 1 st N 30 The capital city of the Chalukyas namely Kulyani was founded by Somewara I-(101, 1065 VD)
- 1 1 2 N 2 The khajuraho Inscription of Dhanga datel 20.1 r fers to Vinavaka palaca hi overlord. V later Candella r corl show that Dhanga defeated the Lartibara king luring the latery are of his reign and obtain d same wa
- 1 101 No. The last prince of the bound of Sultan Mahmud namely kilu ru II reigned till 1150 fm 1101 he was sent to Chor and jut to d ath about 1000
- 1 161 N D Treb r ja Chaham na wa def at 1 by Shahabaffin Chora ii 11 ( N D
- 1 10 N 31. The Khairha grant of Yasah kar a dated to the Kalacura Y ar 23 (A D 10 3) prove that Karna much have helber r that late.
- 1 10 N 31 The Mathit hahar in right nod Jaya sanira in Hirro andra at I the Jickhiara fluorists nod a (sed tar in the Chalifit had at land no Poddill nod AD) provide to the Lindburg had a king rise was not in the Lindburg had been also been also
- 1 1 1 N 1 Nitall | 1 HI w | r w | 1 a 31 t Jan 20 H 2 V D
- figh to the stage of the second of the secon
- 11 N A real able that rel V to real to

tion belongs to his 72nd year while another is dated in his 731d year (S 1069 and 1970) He therefore ruled upto the year 1147 A D

P 117 L 5-6 For the sack of Kanauj by Indra III see the Cambay plates of Govinda IV (E I vol VII pp 36)

P 186 L 11 also Read Kalacüiya in place of Kalacuiya P 192

P 190 The Sena emblem was the figure of Sadā-siva

P 192 Read in the footnote the verse from the Bhoja-Piabandha

स्नाता तिष्टति कुन्तलेश्वरसुना वारोऽङ्गराजखसु ।

य ूतैर्जिता कमलया देवीप्रसाद्याधुना ॥

इसन्तःपुरसुन्दरीजनगने न्यायाधिकंध्यायता ।

देवेनाप्रतिपत्ति मूढमनसा द्विला स्थितं नाडिका ॥

Vātsyāyana speaks of the functions of the Vāsaka-pālī and of Vāsaka-sajjā

P 196 L 27 Read within blacket R T V verses 432-435 and not pp.

P 198 L 7 Prof D R Bhandarkai's paper on Chandragupta II and Rāmagupta has been published in the Malavya Commemoration Volume

P 202 L 9 and Read Kotā Devi in place of Kotadevī P 203

P 202 ,, 27 The reference regarding the Kashmii king Bihaspati is wrong It should be R T IV 672-687

,, ,, 28 The reference should be R T IV 710-711

,, ,, 29 Read cankuna in place of camkuma.

P 201 It is warthy of note that the Hindu lawgivers laid down the maxim that the throne should never remain vacant

P 208 L 26 Read Kuvalayā-pīḍa and not Kuvalayādītya

P 209 L 27 Reference should be R T V, 266-277

P 212 L 7 Read Mudrādhyaksa

P 215 L 20-23 Read the pannaya tax, also read Melvatteya Vaddaravelu, also read perjunka in place of peajunka See Fleet D, K D pp 419-151)

P 216 L 11 Read Bahattara always

P 218 L 1 For Phalguna's recall see R T VI 198-214

L 2 Vijja was oxiled and his brothers and friends imprisoned. King Harsa put two of his father's ministers to death

P 219 L 18 Read Agrahārika in place of Agrahārika-

P 220 L 1 Read Dandika in place of Dandika

P. 130 L 4. Read National in place of rightful

#### SOME OPINIONS AND REVIEWS OF PART 1

#### Dr A B Keith-Edinburgh

The effort to connect the development of polity with the evolution of theory is valuable and important, and you have collected and set out lucidly a large number of interesting facts. There is no doubt that even in its incomplete shape the appearance of your book is fully justified and that it presents something not included even in the many useful books on Hindu Polity which we already have

#### Dr E J Rapson-Cambridge

You have collected and arranged the available evidence with great care and your di cussion of the bearing of this evidence is fair and well informed. I shall find your book most useful for reference.

#### Dr L Finot-Toulon, France

I appreciate particulalarly in your treatment of the matter the excellent election of texts and the sound appreciation of their meaning and value. It is cetainly an excellent contribution to the study of a topic beset with difficulties.

#### Dr F O Schrader-Cormany

On opening your book I was struck by the solerne sof your method and having peru ed a few chapters I may say already that the book is an extraordinary and admirable one

#### Dr L D. Barnett-London.

I have read your book with interest and care. There is much in it with which I fully agree and ... I fully approxiate the merit of your 1 ok

# Dr. F. W. Thomas-Oxford.

Clearly, Mr. Banerjee is dealing with the subject in a comprehensive way and presents the evidence in its full amplitude. He does not fail to show that he has views of his own for which he is prepared to contend. Hope that the subsequent parts of the treatise will be equally well-done.

# Dr. Julius Jolly-Wurzburg.

The author shows himself learned both in Sanskrit literature and the views of modern scholars—His criticisms are well substantiated and his style is clear and lucid

# Dr. Sten Konow-Oslo, Norway.

1 hvae read your book with interest and I much appreciate your perspicuous and elegent style and your clear argumentation.

# Dr. R. K. Mookerjee-Lucknow.

I have gone through Mr Narayan Chandra Banerjee's 'Development of Hindu Polity and Political Theories' and found it to represent the same level of scolarship as marks his others works. His acquaintance with the source in its original gives a freshness and fidelity which is not found in other works. His work marks Mr. Banerjee out as one of best interpreters of early Indian institutions.

# Dr. Ganga Nath Jha-Allahabad.

your books are judiciously planned and carefully executed. Please accept my hearty congratulations on your handling of a subject, the study of which is still in its infancy.

# Forward.

Without exaggeration, it can be said that the book is one of the best on the subject. The author develops his arguments point by point with a happy sense of discrimination. His knowledge of world-history enables him to draw fitting parallels from extra-Indian sources. Written in a lucid style, free alike from pedantry and from cheap popular clap-trap, the book should please-the from extra-der and satisfy the technical scholar.

#### Journal of Indian History

Professor Banerjee is a good sanskrit scholar and is the author of a number of interesting works. His work is full of interest and will profitably pay persual

#### The Asiatic Review-London.

The author has done his work with great care and his frequent quotations from the classics will assist the scholar and the student in verifying his arguments

#### Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society-London

The work is one of distinct ment. Mr Bauerjee has handled his difficult themes with an ability and sobriety that deserve recognition (Barnett)

#### The Mind-London

The author has done an important service in empha i fug the transcendental ideal as influencing political thought and is probably the first to do so in this field. He has also rightly combated the theory held by many writers that in India king hip was regarded as a divine sinstitution. On these points the book suggests a new line of investigation and clears away many misconceptions. The writer is well acquainted with Sanskii and can handle texts properly. We hope Mr. Binery, will carry his investigations further in the proposed second volume.